ontemporary eview

22nd YEAR OF PUBLICATION

050
'008

JULY 1988

FRANCE: CIVIL LIBERTIES ON THE AGENDA
James G. Shields

BRITAIN AND THE BIRTH OF ISRAEL
Avi Shlaim

THE ALTON ABORTION BILL
Hugh V. McLachlan

THE NEW SOUND OF BRITISH LYRIC POETRY: KATHLEEN NORCROSS, DAVID HOPKINSON, SIMON CURTIS
Park Honan

and other articles together with a twelve-page Literary Supplement.

£1.30

Contemporary Review

incorporating The Fortnightly

July 1988 Vol. 253 No. 1470 Founded 1866

Contents

		Page
France: Civil Liberties on the Agenda	James G. Shields	1
Britain and the Birth of Israel	Avi Shlaim	7
The Return of Islam to Andalusia	Habeeb Salloum	14
Action for Cities	Mike Campbell and Nigel Healey	18
The Alton Abortion Bill	Hugh V. McLachlan	23
The World of Television	P. G. Macdonald	28
Cinema: A Quarterly Review	David Shipman	35
The New Sound of British Lyric Poetry: Kathleen Norcross, David Hopkinson, Simon Curtis	Park Honan	39
Correspondence: Another Europe	John Papworth	44
LITERARY SUPPLEMENT		
Quarterly Fiction Review	Rosalind Wade	45
Non-fiction Reviews John Biggs-Davison, Esmond Wright, James Munson, Richard Whittington-Egan, Molly Tibbs, Betty Abel		49
SHORTER REVIEWS		56

P 4178

Editor:
ROSALIND WADE, O.B.E.

Associate Editor:
BETTY ABEL

Editorial Advisers:
PROFESSOR ESMOND WRIGHT
PROFESSOR PAUL WILKINSON

Fine Arts Correspondent:
ERNLE MONEY

Music Correspondent:
DAVID FINGLETON

Finance Director:
LEONARD SKIPP

© 1988. Published monthly by the Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG, England, and printed in England by Mandeville Press, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ. U.S. Mailing Agent: Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Second Class postage paid at Rahway N.J. Annual subscription (including postage); U.K. £18.50, U.S.A. and Canada $65.00. Rates for all other countries on application. Copies can be sent by airmail outside U.S. and Canada: extra costs given on request. U.S. Postmaster: please send all address corrections to 'Contemporary Review', c/o Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Contemporary Review. (ISSN/0010/7565)

008

Contemporary Review

Founded 1866 **incorporating The Fortnightly**

July 1988 **Vol. 253** **No. 1470**

Editor
ROSALIND WADE, O B E.

Associate Editor
BETTY ABEL

Editorial Advisers
PROFESSOR ESMOND WRIGHT
PROFESSOR PAUL WILKINSON

Fine Arts Correspondent.
ERNLE MONEY

Music Correspondent
DAVID FINGLETON

Finance Director
LEONARD SKIPP

FRANCE: CIVIL LIBERTIES ON THE AGENDA

by James G. Shields

FOR a nation which lays claim to a patent on civil liberties, France is passing through a soul-searching period François Mitterrand's resuscitation, at the launch of his campaign for re-election to the presidency, of the time-honoured debate over a vote for immigrants in local elections brought the issue of civil rights for France's four million-plus immigrants sharply into focus Mitterrand's call for the extension of a partial suffrage to the immigrant community challenged the spirit of measures drawn up by the conservative government of Jacques Chirac in 1986 to revise the French Nationality Code and exclude second generation immigrants from automatic accession to citizenship Such measures, however, constitute but one aspect of a new radical strain in French political debate which has crystallised in the emergence of a powerful extreme right party under Jean-Marie Le Pen

Building a strong electoral base on the issues of law and order and immigration, the Front National has, since its rise to national prominence in 1984, imposed new imperatives on the political establishment, forcing the neo-Gaullist *Rassemblement pour la République* (RPR) and the centre-right *Union pour la Démocratie Française* (UDF) to adopt a tougher stance on the questions around which Le Pen has established his electoral appeal The strong-arm response to law and order which has been in force since 1986, while it has been denounced as repressive from a number of quarters (left-wing politicians, human rights organisations, the immigrant community), has found favour with a substantial section of the French population, alarmed at what is perceived as a widespread and growing law and order problem This new-found popular support for policies (in matters of public order, justice and immigration) which would

have been deemed immoderate, not to say extremist, only a few years ago raises far-reaching questions about the current direction of the French political consensus on civil liberties and related issues

When the Socialist government came to power in 1981, civil liberties had a privileged place on the political agenda Among the first reforms implemented by the new left-wing administration were the abolition of the death penalty and the dismantling of the Court of State Security, a special tribunal — comprising both civilian and military judges — which had been created by de Gaulle in the early 1960s to deal with state security offences in the wake of the terrorism unleashed by the Algerian crisis. A number of controversial public order laws that had been enacted by previous conservative administrations were also repealed Police powers of search were made subject to new and stringent guidelines; so too the amount of time during which suspects could be held without being charged or placed on remand Such reforms were part of an attempt to curb the intrusion of police powers upon the citizen and to shift the long-term emphasis from a punitive to a preventive philosophy A presidential amnesty was extended to a large number of prisoners, rights of political asylum were reaffirmed, the legal aid system was improved, and measures were introduced to halt discrimination against certain marginalised groups such as homosexuals.

Nowhere, however, was the new liberalising spirit which informed the early period of Socialist government more evident than in the series of reforms which were effected to improve the lot of France's immigrant community. In an attempt to redress the perceived excesses of previous legislation, the government of Pierre Mauroy placed tight new restrictions on the criteria for the expulsion of immigrants and abolished the scheme of financial incentives which the conservative regime of Valéry Giscard d'Estaing had introduced in a bid to encourage voluntary repatriation. The right of association was granted, an amnesty was offered to a large number of illegal immigrants, and conditions governing residence and work permits were made more flexible Most potentially significant of all was the pledge, which was featured in Mitterrand's presidential manifesto, to grant voting rights in municipal elections to immigrants who had been resident in France for five years or more

Since 1981, however, there has been a marked change in the French political climate. The new importance accorded to the question of public security has led to much tougher policies on law and order and provoked a hardening of attitudes towards the immigrant community. While France had right-wing governments which were perceived as being responsive to the issues of crime and immigration, the political message of the far Right fell on deaf ears The accession to power of a left-wing government, which was promptly accused of irresolution in the fight against crime and of pursuing an excessively liberal policy towards foreigners in France at a time of economic recession, opened the way for the emergence of an extreme right-wing party which has consistently polled between 8% and 11% nationally since 1984. While Le Pen delivers the most hard-hitting

pronouncements on law and order and immigration, the other party leaders became engaged in a rhetorical contest which moved the debate rightwards and forced even the Socialists to revise their original stance

A succession of violent crimes and terrorist offences in the early 1980s caused the Socialist government to delay and, in the end, revise its proposals for dismantling a number of public order measures set in place by the preceding administration Having insisted initially on the link between *insécurité* and economic recession, the Socialists were soon obliged to address the former as a problem in itself and to adopt a posture which, by its own former standards, would have been considered excessively authoritarian Identity controls and special judicial procedures, while they were denounced in principle, were retained as a practical option by a government which found itself attempting to strike a precarious balance between the liberalism of its convictions and the political imperative of combating — and of being *seen* to combat — crime and terrorism In the months following the Left's heavy defeat in the European elections of June 1984, the government of the new Prime Minister, Laurent Fabius, set increasing store by the need to bolster law and order and to reassure French public opinion. Such indeed was the new will with which the Socialists came to address the issue of public security that, in summer 1985, the Fabius government found itself pushing through a costly overhaul of the police force, at a time of comprehensive cutbacks in public spending and against opposition from the conservatives in the National Assembly, who feared that they would be left to pick up the bill after the parliamentary elections of March 1986.

On the immigration issue, the rightward swing in Socialist policy has been even more dramatic The mobilisation of the immigrant issue by the Right and extreme Right alike in the municipal elections of 1983 prompted a revision by the Socialist government of a number of the policies which it had implemented some two years earlier. The launch of a tough new campaign to combat illegal immigration was accompanied, in 1984, by the reintroduction of financial incentives to encourage the repatriation of regular immigrants Border security was tightened and the rate of expulsions substantially increased. Stiff new penalties were imposed on the employers of illegal immigrants, whilst the conditions on which families could join immigrant workers in France were made much more stringent

Two instances in particular served to dramatise the ambivalence of the governing Socialists vis à-vis an immigration issue which had taken on a wholly new political complexion since the emergence of the Front National The first involved the then Minister of the Interior, Gaston Defferre, who, in a decidedly frank interview, published in *Les Temps Modernes* in spring 1984, condemned the rise in racist sentiment in France, then proceeded to depict the Muslim community as a seedbed of Islamic fundamentalism and a potential logistical haven for international terrorists In tones that might have been borrowed from the discourse of Jean-Marie Le Pen himself, Defferre suggested that France had become

the focus for an illegal immigration that threatened the very fabric of French society and the values on which it was founded The second dramatisation of the Socialists' ambivalence came in a televised interview with the new Prime Minister, Laurent Fabius, in September 1984. In a glancing allusion to Le Pen and his party, Fabius declared that the latter were giving 'the wrong answers to the right questions' Whatever criticism of Le Pen the remark was intended to convey, the net effect was to endorse the latter's tireless harping on the problems of immigration and public order, and to suggest that the Socialists had been dilatory in addressing what, it was now conceded, were indeed pressing issues

Such has been the deviation of Socialist discourse and policy since 1981. Through the pledge to grant immigrants a vote in local elections continues to feature in Mitterrand's personal repertoire, it has become a mute point in the Socialist Party agenda Deference to a French public opinion which is overwhelmingly opposed to any such enfranchisement of the immigrant community is too clear to be mistaken, leaving France's immigrants further than ever from the right to vote which they were promised at the outset of Mitterrand's presidential mandate

What is striking about the measures introduced by successive Socialist governments in 1983 and 1984 is not just that they represented a major rethink of policy; it is rather that they resembled so closely, in spirit and letter both, the Giscardian reforms which the Socialists had been at such pains to abrogate. While the latter are prompt to denounce the Right's more radical proposals, there are points of the immigration debate upon which the Socialist Left and the conservative Right have, in the course of the 1980s, moved so close as to have become almost indistinguishable This fact was never better illustrated than in October 1985, when the Prime Minister, Laurent Fabius, and the then leader of the opposition, Jacques Chirac, met in a televised debate On that occasion, the Socialist Fabius struck an almost identical note to that of his Gaullist counterpart on the question of immigration As evidence of his government's resolve in responding to the mounting public concern over what he termed an 'incontestable problem', Fabius found himself citing the numbers of immigrants who had been deported or who had taken up the offer of subsidised repatriation The conspicuous lack of any reference to egalitarian values or civil liberties served to demonstrate the extent to which the French Left has relinquished ground over which it formerly boasted an unchallenged ideological ascendancy.

The return to power of the Right in 1986 gave new impetus to the rightward swing of the political balance on issues relating to civil liberties Confident that its policies would be endorsed by French public opinion, the RPR-UDF coalition government of Jacques Chirac set about implementing a programme in which the social accent lay squarely on strong-arm law and order The appointment of the uncompromising Charles Pasqua as Minister of the Interior, and the creation of a special minister with responsibility for public security, signalled the style in which Chirac intended to tackle the immigration and public order issues Police identity

controls, curbed as a widespread practice and made subject to strict guidelines under the Socialists, were brought back as an essential weapon in the fight against crime While random police checks and searches have become newly enshrined in legality, broader powers have been made available for the surveillance and detention of suspected criminals and terrorists. The application of legal penalties has been stiffened, and special tribunals without juries have been set up to try terrorist offences. Controls on non-EEC foreigners entering France have been substantially tightened, as have the conditions governing political asylum and extradition Police have been given powers to deal directly with illegal immigrants, whose expulsion can now be effected as an administrative rather than a judicial matter.

In one of the most highly contentious steps taken by the Chirac administration, a Bill was drawn up to reform the Nationality Code The purpose of the Bill was to tighten the procedures whereby immigrants can acquire French citizenship The Bill was based on the principle, articulated in the joint RPR-UDF 'Platform for Government' of 1986, that French citizenship should no longer be accorded automatically to second generation immigrants, but should be actively sought through the legal process and should presuppose an undertaking on the part of the candidate to abide by the laws of the Fifth Republic Political opposition to the proposals, and the fear that they might provoke renewed disturbance in the wake of the violent student demonstrations of winter 1986, caused the Chirac government to retract the Bill, while a commission was set up to consider its constitutionality

The issue, however, remains unresolved and will continue to hang over an immigrant community which can take little heart from the events of the past few years and can expect no speedy return to the liberalising climate of 1981 The Chirac government did stop short of enacting an RPR proposal to limit to French households alone the introduction of a special allowance for families with three or more children The fact, however, that proposals such as this should now feature openly in the programme of France's main conservative party illustrates the extent to which policies that were previously considered hardline are finding a new currency in mainstream political debate

The vicissitudes of the French immigrant community in the 1980s have given rise to a new political consciousness, most notably in the ranks of the young The right of association granted by the Socialist government in 1981 opened the way for the formation of a number of organisations which have sought to harness public sympathy and to foster solidarity among the immigrant community as a whole. One of the Chirac government's most vocal critics has been Harlem Désir, director of the anti-racist organisation SOS-Racisme His principal objective is to combat the growing sentiment of xenophobia that is most evident in attitudes towards immigrants of North African descent, whose integration into French society is much more difficult than that of migrants from neighbouring European countries. Movements such as SOS-Racisme, however, while they have been instrumental in appealing to an important cross-section of

public opinion, lack the political dimension required to provide an adequate counterweight to the rightward drift of the political debate on immigration Harlem Désir's decision not to stand as a candidate in the recent presidential election is a recognition of the strict limits within which such a movement must operate, given that such a large proportion of its support resides in a disenfranchised immigrant population

All of this raises serious questions for French society as a new presidential term gets underway. The legacy of the 1981 reforms has been substantially eroded, first by the Socialists' revision of policy in government, then by the return to power of the Right in 1986 Some seven years after the Left came to power with the promise of a 'new citizenship', France is being forced to redefine her perception of civil liberties and social justice In a country where the Declaration of the Rights of Man and Citizen provides a touchstone of the political conscience, the 1980s have witnessed a remarkable evolution in attitudes Mitterrand's rhetorical championing of the immigrant cause, his calls for a newly embracive egalitarianism, is tinged with the realism of seven years in power and the awareness that the political consensus has shifted its ground considerably since the heady days of 1981 While opinion polls now show immigration and public order to be among the foremost concerns of a substantial section of the French voting public, a number of notable successes in the fight against terrorism and a drop in the domestic crime rate have provided something of a vindication for the Chirac government's muscular tactics These factors have, in the short term at least, greatly damaged the power of the Left to dictate the terms of the political debate on civil liberties and to reverse the current trend of public opinion on the issues of law and order and immigration As the French prepare to celebrate the bicentenary of their Revolution, they might well reflect on how Liberty, Equality and Fraternity are faring in the France of the late 1980s

---

[James G Shields will contribute a second article on the political situation in France See also his 'A New Factor in the French Political Equation', *Contemporary Review* No 1464, Vol 242.]

BRITAIN AND THE BIRTH OF ISRAEL

by Avi Shlaim

ON 29 November 1947 the United Nations passed its famous resolution calling for the partition of Palestine into two States, one Jewish and one Arab On 14 May 1948 the British High Commissioner and his staff left Palestine, bringing to an end twenty-eight years of British responsibility for running the country British policy in the intervening period has been the subject of intense controversy, with numerous charges being levelled against the Labour Government of Clement Attlee and more specifically against Ernest Bevin, the Foreign Secretary. The most serious of these charges is that Britain refused to carry out an orderly transfer of power and deliberately engineered a state of chaos in an attempt to abort the birth of a Jewish state. This charge will be examined here in the light of the evidence that has become available with the opening of the Israeli as well as the British archives.

The Jews of Palestine had accepted the UN partition resolution with great alacrity but, as the British mandate approached its unhappy end, they became increasingly troubled by the thought that the British were not really resigned to partition and were plotting to prevent the establishment of an independent Jewish state There was a widespread fear that the British were not going to carry out a complete withdrawal or, alternatively, that they would leave but seek re-entry in the wake of an Arab victory which would reduce the Jews to begging for British protection.

In Jewish political circles it was seriously believed that Britain was conspiring with the Arab rulers, and particularly with her client, King Abdullah of Jordan, to invade Palestine and impose a settlement along the lines of the Morrison-Grady plan, giving the Jews an autonomous area along the coast, the rest of the country to the Arabs and bases with secure lines of communication to the British Empire. David Ben-Gurion, the Chairman of the Jewish Agency, was convinced that Britain's cynical ploy was to permit the neighbouring Arab countries to send surreptitiously into Palestine armed forces in sufficient quantity to destroy the Jewish community and to capture the country after the termination of the mandate.[1]

These suspicions of sinister British imperial machinations are faithfully reproduced by subsequent Zionist historians. Some had explicitly charged that during the twilight of British rule in Palestine, the objective which dominated British policy or, perhaps more accurately, the objective of those whom the Cabinet entrusted with the execution of its policy — the Foreign Office, the Chiefs of Staff and the Palestine Administration — was to see the Jewish National Home physically destroyed 'These men were determined', alleges Jon Kimche 'if the British had to leave Palestine, to put no obstacles in the way of the Arabs driving the Jews into the sea'.[2]

But Zionist historiography seriously misrepresents the reasons and motives behind the surrender of the British mandate. Far from wanting

to cling at any cost to their position as the ruler of Palestine the makers of British foreign policy longed to get out and give up the thankless task of trying to reconcile Jews with Arabs There is very little evidence in the official British archives to support the Machiavellian view of British policy during the final phase of the mandate Most of the evidence points in the opposite direction It supports the view that 'the long history of rebellion and terrorism had exhausted the patience and disillusioned the British ministers to such a point that their one desire was to divest themselves of all future responsibility for what might happen in that troublesome country'.[3]

To be sure, there were many officials in the Foreign Office who did not welcome the retreat from Empire and hoped for a much weaker and smaller Jewish state than that laid down by the United Nations, just as there were many anti-Jewish officials in the Palestine Administration who implemented policy on an everyday basis in a manner calculated to hurt the Jewish community But the basic thrust of British official policy was not to prevent the establishment of a Jewish state by force On March 23, 1948, the Cabinet decided to accelerate the pace of withdrawal from Palestine and do nothing to oppose either an attempt by the Jews to set up a Jewish state before the 15th of May or by the armed forces of Jordan to enter Palestine before that date.[4]

Bevin and his colleagues had to see the Palestine problem in a wider context than the Jews They had to consider the need for peace in the Middle East, the need to keep an eye on Russia, the need to keep the friendship of the Arabs and not to alienate the Muslims in the British Empire They also wanted to involve the United States in sharing responsibility for a Palestinian settlement that would safeguard Western interests Arthur Creech Jones, the Colonial Secretary who played a major role in the surrender of the Palestine mandate, rebuts the charge that Bevin's policy was inspired by anti-Semitic prejudice Although he was angered by the Jews, Bevin, according to Creech Jones, never allowed personal feelings to dominate his judgement He refused to forget the wider implications of any Palestine settlement as he thought Truman did Equally emphatic was Creech Jones' rejection of the charges made by the Labour Party critics, such as Harold Laski, that the British Government deliberately tried to create confusion and let things go in the months before withdrawal [5]

The fiercest critic of Bevin's Palestine policy to emerge from within the ranks of the Labour Party was Richard Crossman Where others blamed the Attlee government for abdicating its responsibility and failing to carry out an orderly transfer of power, Crossman attributed to Bevin personally a vindictive and purposeful policy designed to cut the Jewish state down to size·

> Once it had been decided to end the mandate, Bevin's aim, apparently was to ensure that Abdullah's Arab Legion should over-run most of Palestine, leaving a rump Jewish State, so weak that it would have to throw itself on the mercy of the British Government This aim was so shameful that it was never revealed to the Cabinet and so could not be expressed in clear directives to the men on

> the spot Hence the dreadful impression of weakness and indecision, combined with malignant anti-Jewish prejudice which characterised British policy throughout [6]

Crossman's conspiracy theory was grist to the mill of all those who sought to portray Bevin as a prejudiced, callous and brutal enemy of the Jewish state, but the factual evidence on which it was constructed is exceedingly flimsy It is true that Bevin gave the green light to the Arab Legion to enter Palestine at his secret meeting with Tawfiq Abul Huda, the Jordanian Prime Minister, in London on 7 February 1948. But the initiative came from the Jordanian side and Bevin gave his consent only on condition that the Legion stopped at the border of the Jewish state.[7] What this stand clearly implied was that far from being driven by blind anti-Semitic prejudice to unleash the Arab Legion against the Jews, as Zionist spokesmen have repeatedly charged, Bevin had in fact pragmatically resigned himself to the emergence of a Jewish state and urged moderation on the potential Arab attackers of this state

The part of the UN partition resolution that Bevin had never accepted was that which called for the creation of a separate Arab state It was his strongly held belief that if Palestine had to be partitioned, the Arab area should not be left to stand on its own but should be united with Jordan. British hostility to the leader of the Palestinian Arabs, Hajj Amin al-Husayni, the former Mufti of Jerusalem who had collaborated with the Nazis during World War II, and to the idea of an independent Palestinian state under his leadership, was in fact a constant and important feature of British policy during the period 1947-49

By April 1948 the British saw that the indigenous Palestinian society was rapidly disintegrating and that it was in no position to form a government This only strengthened them in their view that the best solution would be for Jordan to take over the Arab part At that stage they still had some hope that Abdullah would simply 'inherit' the Arab part without any large-scale hostilities and bloodshed A smooth partition of the country between Abdullah and the Jews was, from a British point of view, a highly desirable outcome Creech Jones was one of the principal advocates of a Jordanian-Jewish understanding But he was not the only one It was the general policy of the Labour Ministers to encourage Abdullah to reach an understanding with the Jews for partitioning Palestine peacefully between them

The British also tried to use what little influence they had with the Jewish side in order to foster such an understanding Colonel Oskar Norman, the intelligence chief of the Palestine Administration and one of the few British officers who remained sympathetic to the Jewish side, told Vivian (Chaim) Herzog, the head of the Jewish Agency's Security Department and a future President of the State of Israel, that he could not see a way out of the war unless the Jews were sensible enough to get together and come to some agreement with Abdullah [8]

Glubb Pasha, the renowned British commander of the British-trained and British-financed Arab Legion was also anxious to avoid a war In an effort to avert a head-on collision between his tiny force and the Haganah

(the pre-independence Jewish army), Glubb sent one of his senior British officers, Colonel Desmond Goldie, on a clandestine mission to liaise with the Haganah. At the meeting with General Shlomo Shamir, only two weeks before the end of the Mandate, Goldie explained that the British did not want to clash with the Haganah but that they could not afford to appear to be blocking or betraying the Arab side and he proposed the establishment of a regular channel of communication to enable the two armies to co-ordinate their military moves.[9]

Considerable importance was attached to this meeting in London It was thought to mark the beginning of military co-ordination at the operational level between Abdullah and the Jews In fact, despite the elaborate arrangements made for future contact, no further meeting of this kind took place

Yet there was a growing number of signals that the British government was reconciled to the establishment of a Jewish state. On May 1, Arthur Creech Jones went up to Moshe Sharett, the head of the Jewish Agency's Political Department, in the delegates' lounge at Lake Success, and said he knew the Jews thought the British were full of sinister designs and were inciting the Arab states to swoop down on the Jews after the termination of the mandate He wanted to assure Sharett that they had in mind nothing of the sort but, on the contrary, were exerting their influence in the Arab capitals to the utmost to prevent anything of the kind happening.

Creech Jones claimed that he and his colleagues, including Bevin, were anxious to localize the trouble and prevent it spreading into a major conflagration and that is why they were anxious to keep the Arab states out of the fray As for Abdullah, the Colonial Secretary was sure that notwithstanding his grandiloquent statements he actually intended to get hold of the Arab part of Palestine and it was no part of his design to attack the Jews. Sharett did not take all these assurances at their face value but the coincidence between what Goldie told Shamir and what Creech Jones told him seemed to him significant [10] Ben-Gurion, on the other hand, remained intensely suspicious and was unwilling to base his strategy on these vague British assurances

The sentiments conveyed by Goldie at the operational level and Creech Jones at the political level were widely shared within the Palestine Administration which had to contend with the incursion into Palestine of irregular forces led by Fawzi al-Qawukji General Gordon MacMillan, the officer commanding the British troops in Palestine, preferred a regular army to occupy the Arab areas during a truce in place of 'Qawukji's filthy rabble'. He also asked for secret meetings with the Haganah to discuss evacuation plans [11] MacMillan referred to Abdullah as 'a sly old fox' who made warlike declarations on the one hand to frighten the Jews and on the other to satisfy the Arab world which was urging him to act The General thought it not unlikely that Jordanian troops would move into the Arab areas of Palestine with fanfare after the mandate ended but that Abdullah would be 'jolly careful' not to risk his army in battle with the

Jews.[12]

MacMillan's head of intelligence, Colonel Norman, thoughtfully offered British assistance in arranging a meeting between the Jewish Agency and Abdullah on learning that physical difficulties stood in the way. Norman told Vivian Herzog that Abdullah was unhappy about the invasion because he stood to lose his position if his forces were defeated, and he was not over-enthusiastic about the gamble. Herzog pointed out that the Jews would not bother him if he merely sat down in Nablus and kept quiet but they would have to resist any attempt to encroach on Jewish state territory. Norman replied that of course Abdullah would not dream of attacking Tel Aviv or Haifa but he had to show something for himself to satisfy public opinion in the Arab world.[13]

The prospect of a 'behind the barn' deal between Abdullah and the Jews largely explains Britain's lukewarm response to the American proposal, issued in the first week in May, for an unconditional cease-fire and an extension of the Mandate by ten days to permit on the spot negotiations between Jewish and Palestinian representatives. To find out what lay behind the British position Dr Nahum Goldman, the moderate American Zionist leader, went to see Hector McNeil, the Minister of State at the Foreign Office with responsibility for Palestine, on May 11 McNeil told Goldmann that he was convinced that Abdullah would not attack the Jews and that if he did, Britain would withdraw all her officers who were serving in the Arab Legion. McNeil thought that if Abdullah stopped at the border or returned to the border after some token forays, there would be a possibility of a truce between the Jews and Abdullah The principal objective, said McNeil, was to work out an arrangement which would permit Britain to develop relations with both sides. The meeting confirmed Goldman's impression that the British attitude was not as hostile as his colleagues in Palestine seemed to think. Not only did the British agree to a Jewish state but they showed themselves to be very friendly and did good work in curbing Arab militancy [14]

When Arab and Jewish rejection sealed the fate of the American truce proposal, Britain took the initiative in putting forward a proposal for a ceasefire in Jerusalem which was to be placed under an international regime according to the UN partition resolution The British thought that all the ingredients for a cease-fire in Jerusalem between the Jews and the local Arabs were in existence before launching their proposal But the Jews started advancing their line as the Arab resistance in Jerusalem collapsed They lost interest in negotiations and they seemed determined not to have any British-made agreement.[15]

The Zionist resentment of Britain during the last phase of the Mandate was partly the result of faulty intelligence The intelligence experts working with very inadequate sources of information about policy-making in Whitehall, perpetuated the mistrust felt by the political echelon towards Britain. Ben-Gurion's great mistake, sustained by an obsessive hatred of Bevin, was in believing for so long that Britain was the main enemy. All the signals pointing to Britain's acceptance of a Jewish state, notably

those conveyed by the Creech Jones and Colonel Goldie, and, indeed, the desire that the Jews should co-ordinate their strategy with Abdullah, left Ben-Gurion unmoved. Glubb too was perceived by Ben-Gurion as an implacable enemy and hence a willing accomplice in Bevin's machinations to frustrate the establishment of a Jewish state All these fears, suspicions and misconceptions not only poisoned Zionist-British relations but rendered difficult in the extreme the task of preserving the accord with King Abdullah

The real indictment of British policy was that in the twilight of the mandate it refused to hand over authority in Palestine to the United Nations and to effect an orderly transfer of power This was, as Sir Alex Kirkbride was later to admit, inexcusable [16] Bevin bore a large share of the blame for the elephantine clumsiness which characterised the British withdrawal from Palestine and which left such an unpleasant taste in the mouth of Arabs as well as Jews He was personally guilty of duplicity in pretending to favour the last minute American efforts to secure a truce while working for partition and the enlargement of Transjordan at the expense of the Palestinian Arabs. But there is precious little evidence in the official British documents of this period to support the Zionist charge that Britain deliberately engineered disorder and chaos in order to frustrate partition and permit the Arabs to crush the Jews upon withdrawal of the British forces Arthur Creech Jones, who as Colonial Secretary had worked very closely with Ernest Bevin over Palestine, insisted most emphatically that 'we had absolutely no desire to create chaos in Palestine on our withdrawal in the hope that the Arabs would win the struggle. It is an evil suspicion on the part of those who have made it' [17] Indeed, whatever the faults of the manner in which Britain surrendered the mandate, and they are many, the historian who examines the documentary record is bound to conclude that the theory of an officially-instigated 'Operations Chaos' remains unproven

Equally untenable is the theory that Ernest Bevin was the evil spirit behind the alleged plots to frustrate the emergence of a Jewish state Not only was Bevin resigned to the establishment of a Jewish state but, ironically, he did what he could to ensure that it would not be attacked by Jordan. Far from plotting to unleash the Arab Legion against the Jewish state, Bevin took some pains to ensure that hostilities would not break out Bevin's motives for deciding to keep the British officers at their posts and allowing them to accompany their units into the Arab parts of Palestine were in fact the exact reverse of the motives attributed to him by his Zionist and pro-Zionist detractors It was not in order to lead the Jordanian forces into battle that Bevin needed the British officers but in order to restrain them and, more particularly, in order to reach and enforce an accord with the Haganah If there was no follow up to Colonel Goldie's approach to the Haganah, it was not due to lack of interest on the part of Bevin but to ineptitude or indifference on the part of the Jewish leaders

The Zionist charge that Bevin deliberately instigated hostilities in

Palestine in 1948 and that he gave encouragement and arms to the Arabs in the hope that they would crush the Jewish state at birth thus represents almost the exact opposite of the historical truth as it emerges from the Israeli as well as British archives The charge is without substance and may be safely discarded as no more than a myth — one of the many myths that have come to surround the creation of the State of Israel.

NOTES

1 Ben Gurion's diary, 11 March 1948 The Ben Gurion Archive, Sde Boker, and High Commissioner for Palestine to Secretary of State, 11 March 1948 Box III, File 2, Papers of Sir Alan Cunningham, St Antony's College, Oxford
2 Jon Kimche, *Seven Fallen Pillars* (London Secker and Warburg, 1950) p 199
3 Sir Alec Kirkbride, *From the Wings· Amman Memoirs, 1947-1951* (London Frank Cass, 1976), p 26
4. Cabinet 24 (48) minute 6, 22 March 1948, Public Record Office (PRO) London, and Secretary of State to the High Commissioner for Palestine, 24 March 1948, Box III, File 2, Cunningham Papers
5. Elizabeth Monroe's interview with Arthur Creech Jones, 29 October 1958, Papers of Elizabeth Monroe, St Antony's College, Oxford
6 Richard Crossman in *New Statesman*, 23 July 1960
7 Bevin to Kirkbride, 9 February 1948, FO 371/68836, PRO
8 Vivian Herzog, Notes of a conversation with Colonel Norman, 5 April 1948, S25/5634, Central Zionist Archives (CZA), Jerusalem
9 'Report on a Meeting with Representatives of the Arab Legion', 3 May 1948, 130 11/2413/2, Israel State Archives (ISA), Jerusalem, and Bevin to Secretary of Defence, 13 May 1948, FO 800/477, PRO
10 Israel State Archives and Zionist Central Archives, *Political and Diplomatic Documents, December 1947-May 1948* (Jerusalem, 1979), pp 712 and 758-59.
11 Herzog to Shertok, 4 May 1948, ibid, p 722
12 Wasson to Marshall, 2 May 1948, the Rusk Papers, National Archives (NA) Washington DC
13. Herzog to Meyerson, 7 May 1948, in *Documents*, pp 755-57
14 2031 from London, 12 May 1948, in 867N 01/5-1248, box 6764, NA, *and Documents*, pp 780-81
15 The diary of Sir Henry Gurney, St Antony's College, Oxford, 10 and 11 May, 1948
16 Elizabeth Monroe interview with Kirkbride, September 1959, Monroe Papers
17 Creech Jones to Elizabeth Monroe, 23 October 1961, Creech Jones Papers, Box 32, File 6, Rhodes House, Oxford

---

[Avi Shlaim is the Alastair Buchan Reader in International Relations and a Fellow of St. Antony's College, Oxford This article is derived from his book, *Collusion Across the Jordan King Abdullah, the Zionist Movement, and the Partition of Palestine*, published by Oxford University Press on 12 May 1988]

THE RETURN OF ISLAM TO ANDALUSIA

by Habeeb Salloum

MY heart tingled with emotion and excitement as I stepped into the fabled Mosque of Cordova. Three times I had journeyed to the once proud capital of western Islam to visit what is now known as the Mezquita-Catedral. Yet its magic had not diminished with the passing years. Rather, its enchanting aura seemed to increase with every visit. Each time I entered this crowning glory of the medieval world, I felt moved and inspired

This time, as I walked through the forest of over 800 columns, there appeared to be something quite different The darkness which had on previous visits hidden from sight the inside beauty of the mosque was being penetrated by rays of light. Parts of the renovated ceiling, the splendid *mihrāb* and the majestic arches, could be clearly distinguished. It was as if this ancient relic from the Muslim past was awakening from centuries of slumber

When the Spaniards of the north in the 13th century occupied Cordova, they converted the mosque into a Christian place of worship. In the process, they cemented most of the doors and archways and along the inside of the wall built dozens of chapels Later, the centre of the mosque, along with about 400 columns, was removed and in its place a cathedral was erected. Also, the minaret was partly dismantled and a belltower constructed on its base Hence, the building became truly a mosque-cathedral — the name it carries today

In the last decade, due to the lessening of intolerance and the thousands of tourists attracted by the mosque, the original character of this former jewel of Islam has been partly restored Some of the chapels have been removed, sections of the ceiling renewed with hand-carved cedar and the cement from a number of the front archways replaced with tinted glass. Now, when one looks through these renovated arches, the magnificent *mihrāb,* as was the case in the Muslim age, can be seen dazzling majestically in the distance.

Strolling through the narrow streets of the old Arab quarter surrounding the mosque, I reminisced in silence about the days when Arab Cordova was the leading metropolis in the world The flower-filled courtyards embraced by attractive white homes helped to intensify nostalgia for that bygone era.

Turning a corner, I stopped, amazed. A green and white flag with the Arab words *lā ilāha illā Allāh* (there is no deity but God) embossed on its centre was flying in the breeze. A plaque by the open courtyard's doorway announced that we were standing by a building which was a mosque and eating place called *Yama'a islamica de Al-Andalus* (the Association of Andalusian Muslims) After hundreds of years of persecution, were there still Muslims in Spain?

A few years before my visit I had read a piece about some Andalusians

who had been reconverted to their former religion However, I had dismissed the article as a fantasy in some enthusiastic writer's mind. Now that I saw it with my own eyes, I could still scarcely believe that it was true

In the open doorway was a sign which informed the passerby that the centre incorporated a *halāl* cafe-restaurant where lunch and dinner were served, but it was late afternoon and the place was closed. A young lady leaving the centre told me to return in the early evening when the place would be humming with activity.

The hours of waiting dragged by I was so excited and agitated by the prospect of meeting the descendants of the romantic Moors. It was as though I had a rendezvous with history

That evening, before the meal, I relaxed by a whitewashed, Moorish courtyard, enthralled by the gripping voice of the Arab singer Umm Kalthūm The surroundings and her voice created an atmosphere of the 10th century in the epoch of 'Abd al-Raḥman III when Muslim Spain was the epitome of intellect and splendour The arrival of the food rudely awakened me from a pleasant daydream.

'Hay una persona que habla arabe o inglés?' I asked the gentleman who was serving a delicious meal, cooked Muslim style without pork or wine — a rarity in the Spain of today *'Si'*, the handsome lad, who had been converted to Islam a week before and taken on the name Al-Manṣūr, smiled enigmatically. In a few minutes he returned with a tall, slender youth who in perfect Arabic offered a greeting in the warm, traditional way of the Arabs

My new found friend Muhammad hailed from Melilla, a Spanish enclave on the Moroccan coast. He explained that he did not consider himself an Arab but an Andalusian of Berber origin His home was the Islamic Centre where he taught Arabic and the Muslim religion to the newly converted. Speaking about the Andalusians returning to the Islamic fold, he indicated that like himself they did not consider themselves Arabs, but Andalusian Muslims who had in the past been forced to abandon their Arabic tongue and become Christians. Their reconversion to Islam and their studying of the Arabic language was only a natural return to their origin.

When we began to discuss the history of Andalusia, he became agitated and angry. 'Ours is the only province in Spain whose inhabitants, besides being forced to convert to Christianity, were also compelled to abandon their language' He went on to say that the Catalonians, Basques, Castillians and others were allowed to keep their provincial tongues but Arabic, which was once the national idiom of Andalusia, had been erased. 'You know, the northerners in Spain do not believe that we are truly Spaniards. Industry has been kept away from our province and for centuries our people were shipped to the Americas to establish Spanish colonies The time has come to return to our origin and abandon our role as hewers of wood and drawers of water for the remainder of Spain'. Muhammad appeared to believe every word he spoke. Was he over-dramatising the

harsh treatment of the Andalusians? Strong beliefs have a strange way of becoming historical facts.

After the meal, Muhammad suggested a tour of the centre. The complex consisted of living quarters, a large drop-in room where the young men and women of the neighbourhood came to drink mint tea, coffee, fruit juices and generally socialise, a cafe-restaurant and a mosque with an attached school. The whole building was whitewashed and kept immaculately clean — no doubt a continuation of the cleanliness the Moors practised in Spain

As we walked, Muḥammad continued to stress the subject of the oppression of the Moors after their defeat, how the converted Muslims were forced to change their names and how their former Arabic names cross-referenced with the new Christian names, were kept for a time by the churches However, fearing a revival of Islam, these registries were subsequently destroyed, some as late as 1908.

'Even their former dress and food were banned These new Christians, now labelled Moriscos, were forced to eat pork in public. Every Sunday the priest would come around with lard and bread Like taking communion, everyone had to partake of the fat in front of their homes'

Like many others in Spain, Muḥammad despised Franco and his regime. His face reddened every time the dictator's name was mentioned. 'He was no different from the Crusaders of the Middle Ages He tried to erase the last remaining vistages of the Moors from the Iberian Peninsula It was only in his last years, when Spain desperately needed money and Arabia overflowed with wealth, that he allowed a number of statues to be built commemorating the Arab intellectual giants of Cordova. The new government is much better. It has given the Muslims freedom At present, the Andalusians could, if they wished, return to Islam, organise politically and ask for Arabic as the provincial idiom During the past few years at least 3,000 Andalusians have come back into the world of Islam'.

Interestingly, Muhammad explained that the Andalusian Muslims were disillusioned with the Islamic world which had not offered them any assistance. The Muslim countries wanted Spain as a friend and hence this new community had no help from outside and had to struggle and survive on its own resources Yet he was confident that Andalusia would, in the future, become an Islamic state

Next day, I met a dozen Muslim Andalusians. They were all studying Arabic — a number even had a good command of the language. The ones we met were without exception creative in their thinking, believing that Islam must evolve to suit life in the modern world. The Muslim religion to them was not just a world of prayer and fasting but a way of life for the future In the same fashion as the faith of their forefathers had once made Andalusia the world's leading nation, they believe that, guided by the same religion, they could once again recreate the glorious world of the past.

That evening I met their leader, Abderraman Medina, whose name before his conversion to Islam was Antonio Medina Molero. An energetic

young man full of magnetism and enthusiasm, he radiated the aura of leadership A historian, he had written before his return to Islam *The History of Andalusia* which in the ensuing years had been widely applauded However, after he became a Muslim, or, as he explained, returned to the religion of his fathers, no publishing house in Spain would put out a new edition of his work The land of El-Cid might have democracy but the Crusaders with their bigotry seemingly are still alive and well.

On leaving, I was handed a copy of an article written in one of the leading magazines in Spain, rather uncomplimentary to the association, under the heading *retorno del Islam,* and the *manifiesto de la liberacion Andaluza* which laid out the principles of their movement. Some of the most important of these are that

1 The Treaty of Capitulation of Granada in which Andalusia was given autonomy within the Spanish state be amended and put into effect
2 All the inhabitants will have religious freedom and be judged under their own laws
3 Arabic, the language of Andalusia, be respected and promoted
4 All descendants of Andalusians expelled from Andalusia be allowed to return within three years with the full rights and privileges of the Andalusians living in Andalusia.
5. The Andalusians be allowed to be judged by their own laws under the *Sharī'ah, Sunnah, Qur'an* and *qādīs*
6. There be no limitation on the relationship of the Andalusians with the Muslim world
7 The entire population of Andalusia be allowed to carry defensive weapons
8 Because of the centuries of subjugation and oppression, mosques and religious schools are to be subsidised by the Spanish state.
9 All land in Andalusia will be returned to the Andalusians.
10 No foreigners will be allowed to rule over Andalusians
11 No Andalusian will be forced to do anything against his or her will.
12 The Andalusians be allowed freedom in international trade
13 The Andalusians will not pay taxes to the Spanish state except the old tithe
14 The Andalusians will not be called to military service or forced into any war and all military bases be removed from Andalusia.

It is an ambitious programme which tries to amalgamate the past, present and future Is it realistic? Only the future has the answer After all, the last Muslims were expelled from Spain less than 400 years ago!

[Habeeb Salloum lectures and writes extensively on travel and the foods of the Middle-East, North Africa, Central and South America, specialising in the history of Arab Spain]

ACTION FOR CITIES

by Mike Campbell and Nigel Healey

ON the night of her 1987 General Election success, the Prime Minister publicly pledged herself to making the assault on inner city problems a major objective of her third term Shortly afterwards, the Government began laying plans for a major new programme of urban regeneration which would directly involve six Departments of State The Prime Minister herself chaired a special, ad hoc Cabinet committee on the inner city issue and Mr. Kenneth Clark was appointed minister with overall responsibility for co-ordinating the work of the different departments

In March 1988, the Government finally announced the results of its deliberations in a document entitled *Action for Cities* Disappointingly, and despite strong ministerial protestations to the contrary, *Action for Cities* does little more than bring together, co-ordinate and in some cases extend the coverage of the various urban development initiatives already in existence There is almost no additional new expenditure, with the bulk of the 'extra' funds simply having been reallocated from other programme areas

Just as seriously, *Action for Cities* confirms a disturbing, and already well-established, trend in the Government's approach to urban problems, which involves increasingly bypassing the local authorities and relying on private developers Indeed, as Mrs. Thatcher herself declared at the time the 'new' measures were unveiled 'we believe in getting private enterprise to help solve the problems. It is private enterprise that creates jobs'

This article argues that the current thrust of Government policy towards the inner cities is profoundly misdirected It begins by briefly examining the nature and causes of the inner city problem, before reviewing the proposals outlined in *Action for Cities* It goes on to argue that the Government has been gradually squeezing the local authorities out of the urban development process and that the latter could — if the centrally-imposed financial and legislative constraints which now bind them were loosened — make a major contribution towards revitalising Britain's decaying inner cities.

The 'inner city problem' is a phrase which in fact subsumes a number of inter-related problems — structural economic decline, poverty, physical decay and social disorder To a large extent, the familiar spiral of urban decline feeds on itself Deserting industries and commerce leave sites and buildings derelict and job opportunities scarce. The resulting high levels of unemployment drive out the younger, more upwardly-mobile residents, leaving a declining population disproportionately composed of disadvantaged people (the elderly, unskilled, single parent families and ethnic minority groups) The housing stock becomes dilapidated, with private landlords unwilling to renovate properties and councils concentrating their most 'difficult' tenants in unpopular inner city flats And growing poverty

chokes off the demand for (and so the supply of) shops and recreational facilities, so making employment opportunities scarcer still.

The force which primarily initiates this downward spiral, namely the loss of large inner city employers, is closely bound up with the wider problem of 'de-industrialisation'. Manufacturing industry in the UK is in long term retreat Output today is 10% lower than in 1973, with manufacturing's share of gross domestic product slipping from a third to a quarter over the last nine years. Employment in manufacturing has fallen even more sharply, as firms have desperately shed jobs in their efforts to remain competitive. Since 1979, two million manufacturing jobs have been lost (25% of its 1979 workforce), a figure which almost exactly mirrors the rise in unemployment over the same period

De-industrialisation has hit Britain's inner cities disproportionately hard. The vast, labour-intensive industries which originally drove the process of urbanisation in the last century, as people were sucked into the cities to work in the booming mills and factories, are precisely those that are now suffering the sharpest contraction. And as the spiral of urban decline has become established, the jobs lost are not being replaced by jobs in the new growth sectors, which instead favour rural, 'greenfield sites' where costs are lower, communications better and the environment altogether more pleasant

Whether the scourge of de-industrialisation can (or should) be arrested is a source of some controversy Its causes are complex and not well understood The changing 'international division of labour', whereby traditional manufacturing industries are relocating in the labour-cheap, newly-industrialising countries of the third world, provides part of the explanation; inappropriate government policy, militant trades unions and weak, risk-averse management are also popular scapegoats What is clear, however, is that if this trend continues, the only hope for the inner cities lies in breaking out of the vicious cycle of decline and making these areas attractive to the new, 'sunrise' firms The Government's view, as set out in *Action for Cities,* is that employers can best be enticed back into the inner cities by offering fiscal carrots (e g grants and tax 'holidays') and restoring the basic physical infrastructure companies need to operate (e g. roads, railways, etc)

At the heart of its strategy lie the Urban Development Corporations (UDCs), publicly-funded 'quangos' (quasi-autonomous, non-governmental organisations), set up by Whitehall with staff seconded from the public and private sectors. Their role is to attract private developers and businesses to inner city areas by offering grants and subsidies and by undertaking land clearance and commercial infrastructure development. The best-known of the UDCs, the London Docklands Development Corporation (LDDC), was established as long ago as 1981 and in the intervening years another nine have been created The most recent, for Sheffield, was announced in the *Action for Cities* document.

An even more long-running programme which has been absorbed into the *Action for Cities* initiative is the 'Urban Programme', which was

established by the previous Labour administration in 1978 The Urban Programme was originally intended to be a joint central government-local government enterprise, in which sixty-three 'Urban Priority Area' authorities were empowered to make proposals to Whitehall for infrastructure projects. Central government then provided financial assistance in the form of 'Urban Development Grants', which the local authorities supplemented broadly pound for pound from their own resources

The Government has been disenchanted with this inherited *modus operandi* for some time In 1986, it accordingly set up new quangos in a number of Urban Priority Areas to negotiate directly with, and allocate new 'Urban Regeneration Grants' to, private development companies. These organisations, with a budget of £21m for 1988-89, are headed by civil servants and fall into two categories, 'Task Forces' and 'City Action Teams' (CATs). As well as increasing the numbers of both types of quango to sixteen and seven respectively, *Action for Cities* shifted the emphasis further away from the original spirit of the Urban Programme by abolishing the Urban Development and Urban Regeneration Grants and replacing them both with a new 'City Grant', which will also be payable direct to private developers rather than to the Urban Priority Area authorities.

With *Action for Cities*, the Government has thus spelled out its agenda for urban redevelopment and made quite clear the two planks upon which this strategy is based, namely greater involvement of the private sector (encouraged and co-ordinated by the UDCs, Task Forces and CATs) and a much reduced role for the local authorities This raises several issues Is almost exclusive reliance on private sector investment the best way of breaking the cycle of inner city decline? Are locally-unaccountable quangos a better way of stimulating and supervising this investment than elected local authorities? And are local authority employment and development initiatives a waste of public money, with nothing to contribute to the process of urban regeneration?

On the efficacy of private enterprise, the evidence is extremely mixed. Although impressive results are claimd for the Government's 'show' UDC, the LDDC, it is not at all clear that this 'success' can be emulated in other inner city areas. Ministers point out, for example, that each pound of public money invested in the London Docklands project has been matched by nearly £7 from the private sector. This 'leverage ratio' of 7 1 is used to justify its view that the growing phalanx of inner city quangos will be able to achieve similar results with small-scale but carefully targeted pump-priming injections of government funds Although figures for the newer UDCs, Task Forces and CATs are not yet available, the obvious objection to this optimist prediction is that there are no other derelict sites located a mile from the financial centre of Europe nor in areas where nearby house and land prices are rising by over 30% pa.

Furthermore, experience to date suggests that the private sector jobs created with such assistance are rarely filled by the unemployed residents in the area, who typically lack the skills demanded by employers in the

new, expanding sunrise sectors. Instead, the new employees are mainly recruited from outside and tend not to move into the area, nor even to spend much of their income there

The proposition that local authorities are hostile to private enterprise, so that Government-controlled quangos are the only way of providing a fertile seedbed in which new businesses can flourish, also appears hollow on closer inspection. All major local authorities have economic development departments or units, whose primary function is to court and assist private investors Indeed, that local authorities have not done more in this area is in large part due to the increasingly severe financial squeeze imposed by the Government since 1979.

The 1980 'Local Government Planning and Land Act', for example, introduced the 'Block Grant' system by which the Government provides finance to local authorities to supplement their rates income. The new arrangements have been used to reduce these grants progressively from 61% of local authority spending in 1979-80 to only 46.5% in 1987-88, so dramatically reducing their capacity to fund inner city development. In real terms, the Urban Priority Area authorities have suffered cumulative cuts in Block Grants over this period, approaching £1bn at today's prices

As urban authorities sought to maintain spending, other measures have been introduced. The 1982 'Local Government Finance Act' ended local authorities' powers to levy supplementary rates, while the 1984 'Rates Act' introduced 'Rate Capping', the mechanism by which central government can prevent local authorities from raising more than a certain amount of rates revenue to finance expenditure Finally, the new 'Local Government Finance Bill' will have even more far-reaching effects on the ability of local authorities to finance inner city initiatives The new 'Uniform Business Rate' will be set by Whitehall and distributed to authorities on a per capita basis, so depriving councils of control over two-thirds of their present rates income. This means that extra revenue needed for economic development will have to come, pound for pound, from the new 'Community Charge' on adult residents — a burden which the inner city poor and unemployed will be quite unable to shoulder [1]

It is thus somewhat disingenuous for the Government to claim that local authorities have failed to tackle the problem of inner city decline and that their role should accordingly be surrendered to its new quangos Were not authorities so hamstrung by financial constraints, there is considerable evidence that they could actually achieve important results at comparatively little cost Obviously, this would not just involve an expansion of their collaborative ventures with the private sector, but also the direct creation of jobs within the local authorities themselves. The latter option, of course, is exactly what the Government fears Yet it is arguably by increasing local authority employment that the most significant contribution to the inner city problem could be made [2]

As a means of revitalising inner city areas, direct local authority employment programmes have two crucial advantages over the Government's present strategy. In marked contrast to the projects funded by

P 4478

the UDCs and their ilk, local authorities provide jobs which do not require the technical, high-level skills which normally disqualify most unemployed, inner city residents Public service jobs such as home-helps, park attendants, gardeners, security staff and cleaners call for skills which are either widely possessed by the unemployed or can be easily acquired 'on the job' or with the help of local authority training departments

Secondly, and just as importantly, the jobs themselves can be used to attack the cycle of urban decay directly, since they can be channelled into areas of greatest social need, for example, the renovation of housing and school buildings and greater tenant security [3] In so doing, the infrastructure and social conditions which currently contribute to the inner city problem can be improved directly, rather than relying on the questionable presumption that greater prosperity for those brought into work will automatically 'trickle down' to those who are less fortunate.

Compared to the potential contribution that local authorities could make to the inner city problem, the present thrust of Government policy appears seriously misguided at worst and very one-sided at best. It is difficult to avoid the conclusion that the Government's deep-rooted hostility to local authorities is leading it to devise a second-best 'solution', which may actually prove counter-productive in the longer term.

Urban decline is a complex problem. It demands pragmatism rather than dogmatism, consensus and co-operation rather than political rhetoric and conflict. The inner cities need businesses and commercial investment, but they also need better social infrastructure if they are once again to become places where people want to live and work Until the Government rediscovers the local authorities, *Action for Cities* is likely to remain a glossy promise of things to come.

NOTES

1 See N Healey, 'The Reform of Local Government Finance Just Another "Little Local Difficulty"?', *Contemporary Review*, 252· 1469, June 1988, for a more detailed review of the changing face of local government finance

2 See M Campbell et al, *Economic Sense Local Jobs Plans — A National Perspective*, Centre for Local Economic Strategies, 1987 for a thorough evaluation of the economics of direct local authority employment programmes.

3 See M Campbell et al, *Meeting Real Needs — Creating Real Jobs*, Centre for Economic Strategies, 1988 for a further development of the argument that expanding local authority services provide the best way of breaking the cycle of urban decline

---

[Mike Campbell is Principal Lecturer in the Department of Economics and Public Policy at Leeds Polytechnic and Director of the Policy Research Unit. Nigel M Healey is Senior Lecturer in the Department of Economics and Public Policy and Research Associate of the Policy Research Unit.]

THE ALTON ABORTION BILL

by Hugh V. McLachlan

AT present, it can be legal to have an abortion up until twenty-eight weeks after conception Recently, there was the second reading of David Alton's private member's Bill entitled 'Abortion (Amendment) Bill' which is aimed at altering this (see *Hansard*, 22 January 1988, 1434, pp 1229-1298) The Bill is neatly summarised by the Minister for Health, Mr Tony Newton '... the Bill before the House would make illegal all abortions after the 17th completed week after pregnancy, except in cases where it was necessary to save the life of the mother or if the life of the child could not be sustained' (*Hansard*, 1434, p 1267)

Much of the debate was focused on the moral status of abortion Is it right or wrong to have an abortion? Mr Terry Dicks, a proponent of the Bill, said 'By its very nature, abortion is wrong Abortion at any time is wrong I support the Alton Bill, if I can call it that, because he is making a move in the right direction . I am in favour of the Bill because I see it as a first step to no abortions whatsoever' (*Hansard*, 1434, pp 1285; 1284) Dr Lewis Moonie, MP, an opponent of the Bill, said· 'First, is abortion a moral or an ethical thing to do? If so, who should decide whether an abortion should be carried out? Thirdly, what constraints should society place on that decision — I believe that the sponsor of the Bill would like us to believe that that is the major concern of his Bill. I believe that abortion is both moral — that is, right for the individual woman to decide upon — and ethical — it is a correct procedure for a doctor to perform at a woman's request'. (*Hansard*, 1434, p.1249)

I think that this is the wrong approach to take when considering the appropriate legal status of abortion. The following questions are separate ones. Is abortion immoral? Should abortion be illegal? Some might argue that, although individual instances of abortion are not in themselves immoral, they should be illegal, say, because of some supposed general effect on 'respect for life'. Similarly, we might argue that, while it is not *inherently* immoral to drive a motor car on the right-hand side of the road, there are good reasons for making it illegal to do so. On the other hand, it could be argued that particular immoral acts should not be illegal. For instance, it is often immoral to tell lies and to commit adultery but few would argue that this is a case for saying that, in these instances, the activities should be crimes. Suppose I promise a friend that I will meet her in town at some specified time and place Suppose that, as the time of my tryst approaches, I realise that it would clash with 'Brookside' and that it is raining heavily If, on reflection upon these considerations, I decide to stay indoors, then, obviously, I would be acting badly but not, I think, committing an act that anyone would want to be criminalised.

Hence, the question of the moral status of abortion is not crucial to the question of whether abortion or any particular instances of abortion should be legal. I shall not address the question of whether or not any

particular abortions are immoral or morally justified. Rather, I want to argue that, whether or not it is immoral for a woman to have an abortion after 17 weeks of pregnancy, it should not be illegal for her to do so It seems to me reasonable to say that, if a woman chooses the social role of motherhood, then she should be subject to certain legal constraints, but unreasonable to say, in any circumstances, that she should be legally compelled to adopt the biological role of motherhood In that case, the Alton Bill should be rejected

The central proposition of the proponents of the Bill is that abortion is akin to murder In a sense, abortion can be seen as taking human life It might be considered as failure to promote a particular life We are neither morally nor legally required to do everything possible to promote any particular life or life in general In a sense, I might be thought to be taking or failing to promote human life by not sending all my life savings off to feed the starving in Africa or by failing to donate my income tax reduction to the National Health Service but, whether or not my action or inaction is immoral, I fail to see why it should be illegal By failing to copulate, the wife of my sterile neighbour and I might be thought to be precluding potential human lives, nonetheless we should not be legally required to do so It seems reasonable to say that, in general, people should refrain from killing others and that failure to do so should be illegal To me it does not seem reasonable to say that reluctant women should be legally compelled to endure pregnancy and become mothers, that those having abortions after seventeen weeks' pregnancy should be treated as criminals, far less as murderers Women should not be legally compelled to make what they consider to be an unreasonable sacrifice for the promotion of another's life

Perhaps the most eloquent expression of opposition to my view was presented in the debate by Miss Ann Widdecombe, MP She said

> 'We must decide when life is life and must be fully and absolutely respected, as hon Members respect each other's lives It has been widely accepted that babies survive at 24 weeks, although it would be conceded by my hon Friends that it is a massive struggle and only a minority survive, but they survive
>
> 'I find it deeply objectionable — I will not use a pejorative word such as obscene — that we have a law that permits two babies to leave their mother's womb at 24 weeks, one is cherished while its life is fought over, and all the medical resources in the country are poured into saving it and its parents desperately want it to live, while the other is wilfully destroyed, being taken from its mother's womb unnaturally at the same time. I find that impossible to accept as a mark of a civilised society' (*Hansard*, 1434, p 1280)

Presumably, here Miss Widdecombe is alluding to the notion that we have a natural right to life This would seem to involve the view that, if a person has such a right, then all others have a corresponding duty not to kill him or her and that, since it is a right shared by all, he or she has a duty not to kill other people First of all, insofar as we have such a negative right, it is far from clear that it is an absolute one Since, to my knowledge, Miss Widdecombe did not speak up against the sinking of the Belgrano or the sending of the Task Force to the South Atlantic, she might concede this point Secondly, there is a difference between talking about a right to life in this sense and talking about a right to be born or

a right to be nourished and medically cared for. In the case of the latter two imagined rights, who is the bearer of the corresponding duties? Consider, in the example, the baby who survived. The baby did not receive this treatment as a natural right, which is not to say that it was not good that it received it. Miss Widdecombe talks of MPs respecting each other's lives Now, we might agree that they all have a right to life in the sense that each can truly say that all other people have a duty not to kill him or her, and that he or she has a duty not to kill anyone else. However, suppose that, in order to survive, a particular MP would require to have a lung transplant, a heart transplant, a liver transplant and a kidney transplant It would seem to me not to be true to say that he or she had a right to expect that what medical resources were required to ensure his or her survival should be provided It would be absurd to say that all other MPs, far less all other people, had a duty to provide the necessary medical treatment If the treatment were not provided and the MP died, it seems to me that his or her natural right to life, if such there is, would not have been violated.

One of Mr. Alton's arguments for illegalising late abortions is that they are traumatic experiences for the women who undergo them He said 'We must show compassion for the woman and the child' (*Hansard*, 1434, p 1234) and 'Not only are there the physical effects of invasive surgery on perfectly healthy women but there are the psychological consequences of post-abortion trauma . A late abortion — when a woman has felt her child quicken, when its humanity can be in no doubt — is inevitably the most traumatic abortion of all' (*Hansard*, 1434, p 1233) There is a certain irony here in Mr. Alton's telling us how women must feel I am in in no doubt that, if *he* were a woman, he would find abortion traumatic, given his own Roman Catholicism and views on the ethics of abortion How women in general feel, I do not claim to know Nonetheless, one can readily accept and understand that an abortion and the decision to have one can be traumatic Indeed, it is largely because the decision whether or not to be a mother is such a serious one for the person concerned that the criminal law should not intervene in it Suppose that Mr Alton's Bill was passed and that some young girl had a late abortion after which she experienced much trauma. Mr Alton would want to say to this traumatised girl that she was a criminal and should face some unspecified punishment This seems to me a curious way of displaying compassion to women It might be said that Mr Alton does not want to punish women for having late abortions but that, by the threat of illegality, he wants to prevent them from having late abortions, partly in their own interests.

Life itself is traumatic To say that some activities can be traumatic is no good reason for saying that the activities should be illegal Mr Alton notes that. 'By 1987, many women and men had been emotionally and psychologically scarred and the demand for post-abortion counselling has been growing'. (*Hansard*, 1434, p 1232) Well, so what? One might say that many more people have been emotionally and psychologically scarred by marriage but that would hardly be a good basis for arguing that

marriage should be illegal In any case, although an abortion might be traumatic, will it cause more trauma than the experience and consequences of being legally compelled to continue a pregnancy that one does not want to continue?

People sometimes imagine that, if some particular activity is or is thought to be a problem, then the appropriate step to take is to criminalise it and, somehow, all will be well. The experience of prohibition, among others, should lead us to doubt the wisdom of such an approach. Suppose that the Alton Bill were to become law, what might be its effects? Might it merely lead to an increase in the number of illegal abortions? An obvious fear is that it would lead to a return of the notorious back-street abortionists of old Proponents of the Bill argue against this by claiming that, after seventeen weeks, abortion is a more complicated operation than could be performed by a non-specialist. It is claimed that, in the past, back-street abortionists aborted far earlier and were able to use crude tools such as knitting needles I am troubled by this argument for two reasons First of all, to say that a competent performance of the operation requires a qualified specialist is not to say that only qualified specialists will attempt it, with potentially horrific results. Secondly, might not qualified specialists perform the operation lucratively and illegally in private or illicit clinics? Suppose the introduction of the Bill were to reduce or eliminate abortions after seventeen weeks What would the consequences be? Would we have more unwanted and unhappy children?

Some people consider not merely that abortion is akin to murder, but that it *is* murder. For instance, in the debate on Mr. Alton's Bill, Sir Bernard Braine, MP, said. 'It follows then that the overwhelming proportion of late abortions are performed on babies which, if born, would have been normal healthy children. There is only one word for that in my book, and that is murder' (*Hansard*, 1434, p 1245) Presumably, Sir Bernard Braine wants to be interpreted literally What would follow from that? Would he further contend that women who have abortions should be treated as we treat normal murderers? Should we consider sentences such as life imprisonment? This would seem to me to be highly undesirable

Under Mr Alton's proposed Bill, women would be legally entitled to procure an abortion up until seventeen weeks after conception. There are problems with this suggested deadline First of all, it is an arbitrary one. Alton's rationale for choosing it is purely political His basic position is that he would like *all* abortions from conception onwards to be illegal but that he reckons he would have no chance of getting such a Bill through Parliament He pulls the figure of 17 weeks from the air in the hope that it might be acceptable to a sufficient number of MPs perhaps with a view to reducing the period at a later date Indeed, he is so keen to see a reduction in the abortion rate that he suggests that, in the Committee stage of the Bill, he might be prepared to compromise and accept a twenty-four week deadline, should the passage of his Bill prove to be tricky. Secondly, it is not clear how rigidly he intends to stick to the

deadline nor how strictly it should be specified. Does he envisage that abortion should be illegal after seventeen weeks and a day or seventeen weeks and an hour or seventeen weeks and a second after pregnancy? Thirdly, how can the courts or anyone else determine whether or not the seventeen-week period has expired?

Under this Bill, a woman might be legally entitled to an abortion and yet not realise that she has such an entitlement because she is not aware of when conception took place A woman might wrongly, yet reasonably, consider that she had such an entitlement and have an abortion after the seventeen-week period. What is to happen to the woman and the doctor in such circumstances? After all, at neither conception nor seventeen weeks thereafter, do bells ring nor any similar effects occur

Mr Alton's Bill passed its second reading and at the time of writing is being considered in Committee I hope that it does not become law and, if it does, that it will face a very early repeal During the debate, someone rightly said 'Men must, of course, approach the debate with humility and sensitivity We rarely have to suffer the practical day-to-day experience of an unwanted child. We rarely hear about unmarried fathers, only about unmarried mothers' (*Hansard*, 1434, p 1237) Ironically, it was Mr Alton who said it Ironically, it was the nearest I could find to a humble or sensitive remark from a proponent of the Bill Finally, would Mr. Alton prefer a situation where very few abortions occurred but they all occurred after seventeen weeks, or a situation where there was a great number of abortions, none of which occurred after seventeen weeks? My suspicion is that he would prefer the former situation.

NOTES

McLachlan, H V (1976) 'Moral Rights and Abortion', *Contemporary Review*, Vol. 228, No 1325, June

McLachlan, H V. (1977) 'Must We Accept Either the Conservative or the Liberal View on Abortion?', *Analysis*, Vol 37, No 4, June.

[Dr. Hugh V. McLachlan is Reader in Sociology at Glasgow College]

The August number of *Contemporary Review* includes *Hong Kong Discourse* by Andrew Hook, *Ulster Tragedy Dragging on Too Long* by John A. Oliver, *From Addiction to Liberation* by Mary Beasley and the Revd David McGough and *The Ripper Report A Centenary Stocktaking* by Richard Whittington-Egan.

THE WORLD OF TELEVISION

by P. G. Macdonald

OF all the things which have been invented in the 20th century, and they far outnumber the discoveries ever made before, it could be argued that television is the most significant The written word, the printed word, the constant exploration of science, have all enabled humanity to leap ahead, but in terms of the impact on daily life, on the creation of opinions and values, on the extent to which our waking hours are influenced by other people and other sights, television is of great importance in every continent, even in some of the remotest places which are otherwise virtually untouched by modern life. people who live in mud huts, squat on earth floors and gaze astounded at events which, to them, might as well be on another planet. Television is surely the greatest moulder of thought ever known, and the pace at which it has developed is astounding

In the early 1920s radios were the cat's whiskers; man's genius for invention had reached out into the atmosphere and 'wireless', conceived by Marconi more than twenty years before, was within the reach of many people in Europe and North America. Classical music entered humble living rooms, the famous became tangible people, listened to with wonder; news was received instantly instead of hours or days later Quite suddenly, and to most people quite inexplicably, the world was a smaller place And then, in the 1920s, a Scotsman by the name of Baird took things much further by using transmitted radio waves to produce a picture on a screen

Radio waves are in four bands, long, medium, short and ultra-short, so classified by the measurable distance between the successive waves of electric current. Ultra-short waves travel line-of-sight and cannot bend around the earth's curvature; to extend their range transmitters are erected on a tall mast on the highest available geographical feature Television signals are similar to radio waves but are of even shorter length, and they too can only travel in straight lines from the transmitter to the receiver Therefore, in order to provide coverage throughout a region masts have to be spaced about fifty miles apart or less, if the terrain is very hilly These masts receive the signal, amplify its strength and then re-transmit it on to the next mast or to television sets in the area.

When Baird, a poor and sickly man living in a small backroom in London, began his experiments colour television was not even dreamt of He had problems enough trying to establish the basic principles of black and white transmissions Doggedly, he worked on until, in 1926, he was able triumphantly to demonstrate his invention to the British Broadcasting Company (It had been created in 1922 but did not become a Corporation, established under government licence and Royal Charter, until 1927) By 1929 the BBC had begun to make experimental transmissions and by the middle of the 1930s was regularly broadcasting to a few viewers in the London area (In 1935 a radio critic said that in his

opinion not more than ten per cent of home owners would invest in a set, which would only be acceptable where there was more than one living room, few people in a family would want to watch) The Second World War temporarily put an end to the television service but on 7th June 1946 the BBC once again began to broadcast and by the early 1950s all the main centres of habitation in the United Kingdom, amounting to some eighty per cent of the population, were able to pick up the transmissions. (At this time television was also beginning to be developed overseas, especially in Europe and North America.) It was then, too, that many people in this country began to have serious misgivings about the fact that the BBC had an unchallenged monopoly over such a powerful medium for the dissemination of ideas and information.

The basic principle under which the BBC operates is that the state itself exercises only distant control. Thus the Corporation is independent of government in respect of its day to day work but the state can make specific recommendations and retains ultimate responsibility for policy The BBC is free to exercise the right of freedom of speech, the right to comment on all matters (including the conduct of the government of the day) but ultimately can be brought to account by the state if it misuses its power. To exercise control a Board of Governors is appointed by the government to safeguard the public interest, a responsibility which they have carried out with great distinction over the years. Nevertheless, after the war, to many people it seemed wrong that the BBC should continue to be the only body in the nation which was able to transmit radio and television broadcasts Not only were there the dangers of bias and self-interest inherent in a monopoly, there was also the feeling that healthy competition would bring about a better service for the public

In July 1946 the Attlee Government extended the BBC's charter for five years and in 1949 appointed a committee of enquiry under Lord Beveridge to determine what the future of broadcasting should be There had been three other committees of inquiry before but Beveridge's was by far the most comprehensive, holding sixty-two meetings in all and reading nearly four hundred memoranda from a great variety of people. For the first time the subject was thoroughly examined and the way ahead clarified Although the Beveridge report, published in January 1951, concluded by saying that the BBC monopoly should continue, an after-note added that the ban on advertising might be reconsidered.

The Labour government of the day did not announce its proposals until July 1951 and by the time the matter was being debated in the House of Commons, Attlee's administration was foundering In the General Election held in October, the Conservatives were elected To give themselves time to sort out their own policy the new government extended the BBC's charter for another six months, meanwhile setting up a Cabinet committee to examine the Beveridge Report The Labour Party were for maintaining the status quo but many Conservative MPs felt that the BBC was 'self-righteous and arrogant'. Clearly, there was a move towards a change in the system and it was these people who led it, demanding that,

as a start, because it would be easier to do, any changes should be concerned with television rather than with radio, which was strongly established as a familiar part of the nation's life.

In March 1952 Lord Woolton, who had been in Churchill's Wartime Cabinet, took over the chairmanship of the Broadcasting Policy Committee Its White Paper published in May included the sentence that *'in the expanding field of television provision should be made to permit some element of competition'*. Parliament would need to consider how a competitive system should operate but it was clear, the White Paper said, that a controlling body would be required, among other things, to safeguard against possible abuses of the system The man who picked up this small but heavy ball and ran with it was Norman Collins, one-time Controller of BBC television who worked behind the scenes to influence the influential towards the creation of an independent television service.

One of the major problems seemed to be the matter of sponsorship. In the USA this had speedily, in step with the startlingly quick growth of the industry, become the way in which commercial television was funded. A manufacturing company paid for air time and paid programme makers to produce items for transmission. The more they paid for air time, the better the viewing time at which it was screened; ie the peak hours in the evening when workers had come home and were tuned in. The more the makers were able to spend on the product the bigger the audience was likely to be, since money could attract big names So already in the States ratings were of enormous importance· the bigger the audience captured the more of their product the company would be able to sell. Thus quality — in the sense of creative effort, social value and the effect of programmes on the ethics of a nation's life — was sacrificed to money, earned most readily by that which could be easily absorbed by a large proportion of the population without mental effort and by that which surprised and shocked. To people in the United Kingdom, who were concerned with social responsibilities, this did not seem to be a satisfactory way to set about funding a new television service But somebody would have to pay for it. Who and how? A year later a solution was suggested — 'Spot' payments could be an alternative to sponsorship. Under such a system advertisers would pay for viewing time but programme-makers would be free to produce whatever they liked without any pressure from advertisers As to how standards could be maintained, guidelines could be published with which programme makers would have to comply.

In July 1952 the House of Commons again debated the future of the BBC. The Government, so it was said, was in earnest about breaking the monopoly and allowing sponsored television. However, competitors would have to wait until the BBC had completed its TV-station building programme and had made headway on developing VHF radio Furthermore, no definite provision had been made for funds with which to do either, there being more important things on which to spend national resources. Though the Labour Party responded by opposing any break in the monopoly, the Government's vague proposals were carried. The first big

public hurdle had been jumped. Now came the problem of reconciling those who wanted to make money from an attractive new undertaking and those who set themselves up as the guardians of the nation's cultural values writers, producers and performers, tycoons of entertainment and industrialists, all of whom would benefit from the extra work created and from advertising, versus the ideologues—politicians, educators and churchmen. (This is not to say, of course, that people were automatically on one side of the fence or the other if they happened to be in one profession or another Then, as now, people could still try to ensure that good standards were maintained while they made money, but then, as now, there were those who did not care about standards provided money was made)

In July 1953 it was announced that a White Paper would be published in the Autumn setting out the conditions under which competitive television would be allowed to operate This sparked off another spate of pro- and anti-lobbying and comment, with influential people and journals taking up the running on both sides A Popular Television Association was set up by Collins in conjunction with Lord Derby — who was appointed its chairman — and supporters who had well-known names Assisted by the Conservative Party, this association lobbied actively on the grounds that monopoly was dangerous and stultifying and that a British version of commercial television could, because it was British, be expected to be better than the American. To counter their point of view a National Television Council, which stood out for BBC and nothing but BBC argued that no good would come of trying to mix an increase of commercial profit with the advancement of culture

In November 1953 it was the turn of the House of Lords to discuss the issue once again. The atmosphere, so it is said, was one of near-hysterical moral indignation, while later, in the Commons, their debate was alleged to be one of the most important since the end of the war. On it would depend the future thinking of the British and their standard of culture. After much debate, the proposal that there should be an alternative service, and that it should be paid for out of advertising revenue, was carried. Now, civil servants had to put together all the ideas that had been aired into a form of words which could again be debated and eventually become law.

In March 1954 the Television Bill was published It referred to an organisation known as the Independent Television Authority but stipulated that contractors would supply the programmes, not the ITA Advertising interests and programme content would be kept strictly separate To supervise all this the members of the ITA would be people of proven merit from many backgrounds — industry, the arts, education and so on — and three of them would be there specifically to safeguard the interests of Wales, Northern Ireland and Scotland.

Eventually the Bill was passed and became an Act. It did not specify exactly how much advertising time there would be but hinted at six minutes maximum in the hour, a figure eventually adopted by the ITA when it came into being and ratified by the Postmaster General, who was the

Government Minister responsible for broadcasting. Five days after the Act was put in the Statute Book the ITA held its first meeting

One of the first things they put their minds to was how to create a system of competition between the programme companies They thought that there should be about fifty stations in the country, all competing, but as a start there would be three, to cover London, the Midlands and the North, which were the main centres of population. The next problem was whether they should operate horizontally or vertically Horizontally, meant that a company would produce all the morning programmes, another the afternoon and evening ones, yet others children's programmes and so on Vertically, meant that the companies would be responsible for everything during a whole day or a group of days In the event they chose a vertical system. One company (Associated Rediffusion) was allocated London from Mondays to Fridays and another (the Associated Broadcasting Development Company — ABDC) was to have it during the weekends That company was also to cater for the Midlands Mondays to Fridays while yet another (the Kemsley/Winnick Group) was to provide for weekends Whilst it covered Saturday and Sunday in the North, a fourth (Granada) would transmit during weekdays This resulted in there being six parts to the system which were allocated between four companies in such a way that each had roughly the same amount of time to provide for about the same number of potential viewers They were also encouraged to regard themselves as being able to sell 'horizontally' to each other In this way the ITA established the foundations of the network companies around which, as time passed, regional companies were added. Because of their size the big four became the main producers of viewing material, the so-called network companies, whose output was relayed by the smaller companies for most of the time with their own regional inputs added to ensure that their locality's special characteristics were aired

The ITA then directed its thoughts to the creation of a separate television news company, being much concerned that it should be balanced, impartial and accurate The four contractors agreed that bulletins and newsreels should be the responsibility of a special body created and paid for by them, with the ITA exercising some editorial control. Thus it came about that each company contributed a quarter share to the setting up of Independent Television News, with its Editor-in-Chief being subject to appointment only after consultation with the ITA, which would itself have a senior advisor to deal with ITN The new company came into existence on 4th May 1955 with Aidan Crawley as the Editor-in-Chief He was an ex Labour Member of Parliament who was already well known to the viewing public through his current affairs programmes on BBC.

The four programme companies managed to negotiate nine-year contracts, which was a longer term than had at first been envisaged by the ITA However, there were valid reasons for this: nobody knew how much advertising revenue was going to be forthcoming; the companies would have to spend a lot to acquire studios, equipment, technicians, office space

and administrators; financially, they were in an unproven situation and might take years to establish themselves To call them to account after only a short time would be unfair.

The companies had asked that the ITA should set up a Standing Consultative Committee to act as the principal forum for sorting out questions of policy between the two, and this was agreed It met for the first time in June 1955 They had already formed their own collective-bargaining committee, known as the Television Programme Contractors Association (now the Independent Television Companies Association, ITCA) in the April, and it was these two organisations which were to be the go-betweens in the years to come.

As to transmitters, the ITA would provide them, not the companies, and would charge rental to pay for their installation, upkeep and use. They hoped to put their aerial arrays on BBC masts but this proved to be impossible because the BBC masts could not take the extra weight. It was decided to erect new aerials in Upper Norwood to serve London, at Lichfield for the Midlands, and at Winter Hill near Bolton for the west side of the the North of England Because of the Pennines it was necessary to build a mast at Emley Moor near Huddersfield to serve the east side, but though it was an additional cost, as a bonus the extra mast was able to reach about two million more people than if there had been a single very tall high-powered mast on top of the Pennines.

A vexed question was how long each company would be able to use the masts each day Ever since the beginnings of the television service the BBC had been constrained to 35 hours maximum Monday to Friday, with a maximum of eight hours in any given day (In fact it averaged about five hours a day) Broadcasts had to be between 9am and 11pm, except that between 6 and 7pm there was the so-called Toddlers Truce Time to enable Mums to get the kids off to bed. On Sundays, programmes were restricted to 15 hours all told, with a blank 'God Slot' between 6 15 and 7 30 so that people would not be tempted to miss Evensong Likewise between 2 and 4pm programmes were to be slanted towards adult viewing so as not to tempt children to miss Sunday School (These rules about broadcasting time were to last for another seventeen years, until 1972, when they were relaxed)

In January 1955 the Authority gained the services of an Advertising Advisory Committee, on which were representatives of the Ministry of Health, of the British Medical Association, the Retail Trading Standards Association and similar organisations This committee soon produced its statement of principles, which aimed to ensure that advertising was 'legal, clean, honest and truthful', not a bad aim and one which for the most part has been adhered to over the years As to workers' unions, with minor adjustments those which already existed to safeguard the interests of professional people in the cinema industry and the BBC, such as cameramen, lighting technicians and sound recordists, did the same for those employed in the new industry.

Independent Television broadcasting began at 7 15pm on Thursday the

22nd September 1955 by showing the arrival of five hundred eminent guests at a banquet in the Guildhall to celebrate the occasion For £5.00 a head, the cost of which was born by the two London companies (Associated Rediffusion and ATV) they were to have smoked salmon, turtle soup, lobster chablis, roast grouse or partridge, pear melba and a desert, all of it washed down with white Burgundy, punch, Madeira, Rhine wine, Champagne, claret, port and brandy! After some speeches — which were fortunately made before the meal and its wines were consumed — viewers were able to watch a variety show Then at 8.12pm came the first great milestone — a commercial for toothpaste. It was the beginning of a new phase of British national life

ITN started life with enthusiasm and with an ambition to outdo the BBC They also had a publication known as the *TV Times* which, by September, had produced 300,000 copies in London. A year later it was on a million copies a week in the main UK areas of transmission but meanwhile other, local, journals had come into existence, some of them making a lot of money but not doing much to enhance the image of independent television. It was to be twelve years before the *TV Times* smothered them all and became the only ITV magazine serving the country, with regional editions to give information about local variations

By the end of 1956 Associated Rediffusion and ATV were serving London, ATV and ABC were serving the Midlands, and ABC and Granada were looking after the North In 1957 Scottish Television began to broadcast and by 1958 the South and West of England and Wales were being catered for Tyne Tees started in January 1959 and Anglia in the October of that year, as did Ulster TV. By December 1962 there were fourteen ITA regions being served by fifteen programme companies, including one for the Channel Islands The BBC monopoly had been broken and, for all the criticisms, commercial television had done much to give the nation better programmes and a wider choice.

[P G Macdonald will contribute a second article on the contemporary scene in television in a later issue]

CINEMA: A QUARTERLY REVIEW

by David Shipman

LET'S start with *Cry Freedom,* because it's head and shoulders above any English-language films in years. You wouldn't know it from some people. I heard the 'distinguished' editor of *Sight & Sound* rubbish it because of its 'corny' climax — the escape of Donald Woods from house arrest Its narrative does have problems but chiefly in the first part, when John Briley's screenplay adopts a history lesson approach to the increasing interest of Woods, liberal newspaper editor, in the beliefs of Steve Biko (Denzel Washington), black activist. The film begins to kick in its portraits of a vicious police commissioner (Timothy West) and the duplicitous Minister for Police (John Thaw) By insisting on South African accents the piece makes no bones about who and what are being indicted, until Biko is dead and Woods cornered. Woods escaped not only for the safety of his family — though one of the many reasons I admire this movie is because it's clear that he left a beautiful country which he loved dearly — but because he believed that the world should know what happened to Biko

The escape works as a thriller device because it's not hyped and because Kline gives such a laid-back performance — and, incidentally, hands the piece over to Washington at every opportunity. The director, Richard Attenborough, constantly flashbacks to Biko, and in an increasingly telling manner, till concluding with the killings of Soweto, which had nothing to do with Woods or Biko And yet everything No one else has made a film on Apartheid, and let it be clear that director Attenborough now shows a command of his medium in terms of mood, tension and balance (the sort of thing admired in the days of Wyler and Capra): would that most of the films discussed in *Sight & Sound* were about anything at all, let alone something as important as this!

Its failure to win all the season's prizes, or even be nominated, I assume springs from the belief that you're not supposed to make a political film on a large budget with a big Hollywood studio behind you The British Film Academy preferred to give its award to *Jean de Florette,* a thoroughly old-fashioned and indeed academic retelling of one of Marcel Pagnol's rustic tales of mayhem As I've implied above, these are qualities which I can admire and do on this occasion. but *Jean de Florette,* for all its Provençal prettiness and its reality (oh, how wayward was le bon Dieu to make it so hard to make a living from the soil), is essentially artificial — a fact somewhat disguised by the performances of Gerard Depardieu in the title-role, Daniel Auteuil as his half-witted false friend, and above all Yves Montand as the primitive but evil force behind him, proving that he's now the heir to Raimu and Jouvet.

The American Academy, however, preferred *The Last Emperor,* and if you think these things important you could discuss it till the Ch'ing dynasty is restored. The collaboration of producer Jeremy Thomas,

director Bernardo Bertolucci and screenwriter Mark Peploe, an inevitable meeting of talents, was expected to result in a work of terminal pretentiousness instead, it is merely dreary The screenplay, when it isn't confused, humourless and uninformative, is literally unspeakable — so that Peter O'Toole (as the Emperor's British tutor) swops his customary exuberance for a zombie-like contempt, the direction, when it isn't uncertain — which is most of the time — is stilted, while the production recalls those ghastly epics of the 60s, when hundreds of extras running over spectacular sets propelled audiences only to demand their money back at the box-office. But even this trio can't entirely destroy a tale of such fascination, and the second half comes to life because of the facts — the way the pathetic, useless emperor becomes a puppet of the Japanese and therefore an enemy of the state It is still not without its sillinesses, notably the leather-clad siren who supplies the empress with opium and is allowed in return a spot of lesbian toe-sucking

The spectacle, also Chinese, is the best part of *Empire of the Sun,* directed by Steven Spielberg and written by Tom Stoppard from the autobiographical novel by J G Ballard The invasion of Shanghai impresses, and there is an appealing subject in a small boy sundered from his parents and learning survival first, and then, under tutelage, to become the smartest kid in the detention centre The young actor playing the boy convinces as a pampered kid but not thereafter; John Malkovivich can't make his street-smart wheeler-dealing raise the ghost of a smile. Spielberg claims his film is an anti-war story in the widest of terms, but there's no real grimness. It's all goo and glue blow on it and it falls apart — a big, noisy epic which moves stealthily from the uninvolving to the dead boring.

Some of the other much-discussed movies of the season have been better value *Fatal Attraction,* I'm told, bears some plot resemblances to *Play Misty for Me,* but I didn't spot them Its strong, central theme concerns a woman (Glenn Close) who won't give up The man (Michael Douglas), being married, shouldn't have allowed himself what we used to call a 'dirty weekend'. I was pursued for years by a woman who wouldn't take no, and I know how cunning they can be This one turns out to be neurotic, and I'm afraid I think Adrian Lyne's film would be even better if she hadn't also become homicidal The last sequence, an acknowledged lift from *Les Diaboliques,* is scarey but daft If they had kept the original ending — in which the woman commits suicide but contrives it so that the man looks guilty — they would have had a thriller as good as any to come out of Hollywood in years

Speaking of endings, *Moonstruck* doesn't have one The director, Norman Jewison, says that after seeing the film the screenwriter William Goldman telephoned him with a suggestion which he rejected — but which seemed fine to me, that mother's platonic admirer should come calling After all, we've seen the daughter (Cher) wildly wooed and won by her fiance's brother, we've learnt that dad has a piece on the side — and that the moon over Brooklyn even encourages the in-laws to go at something they hadn't done in years So this is something of a roundelay, *Marty*

thirty years on, warm, affectionate and funny All those Oscar nominations, though, and it's not as good as *Roxanne,* directed by Fred Schepisi and written by Steve Martin, from *Cyrano de Bergerac,* as a vehicle for himself Just once Martin has given himself the sort of line Woody Allen writes for himself, and you want to cheer because it's not Allen saying it One of the reasons for Allen's success is that he seems to be making literate, civilised entertainments at a time Hollywood comedy has got into a rut — pastiche, anything goes, crudity Martin has always shown indications of wanting to grow up, and with one bound he has done so. As a comic, you have to go back as far as Lloyd and Keaton to find a hero who can make us laugh by ingenuity, sleight-of-hand, by doing something supremely right. He doesn't hog the camera or the film; and he stays much closer to the source than you dare hope.

Richard Dreyfuss and Danny DeVito are equally good in Barry Levinson's *Tin Men,* rival salesmen for aluminium sidings (don't bother about what it is) in Baltimore in 1963 Yet the hardest role is that of Barbara Hershey, wife of the one and seduced by the other out of revenge — and then she finds that neither wants her The situation is poignant and superbly solved by this actress without being starry. The script is even thinner than *Moonstruck,* but the adjectives applied there will do for this occasion Debra Winger and Theresa Russell are also terrific in Bob Rafelson's hi-tech thriller, *Black Widow,* the latter in the title-role and the former as an insurance investigator on the trail to discover whether she has done away with a series of husbands When they meet up Winger's professional interest turns to obsession, but Rafelson, a greater intelligence than Bertolucci, allows it to remain an enigma — just one of many, all of them fitting seamlessly into a satisfying spiralling narrative It's been a good season for this genre — I wrote about *No Way Out* in my summary of the London festival — and *The Big Easy* is another worth catching. The title refers to New Orleans (also the setting of *Angel Heart,* some occult meanderings well but flashily done by Alan Parker, and missable despite the usually solid acting of Robert De Niro), where a series of gangland murders is being investigated by a cop (Dennis Quaid), himself the subject of enquiry by an assistant (Ellen Barkin) in the DAs office. Naturally, they bed down together and as naturally — as it turns out — the plot scarcely matters, subservient to a portrait of the milieu, cleverly handled by Jim McBride

The joker in the pack is *The Witches of Eastwick,* directed by George Miller from a novel by John Updike which was considerably more subtle than this Jack Nicholson turns up in a small New England town, over-age and over-weight, but the perfect lover and the devil in disguise (like De Niro in *Angel Heart*). He does not seduce; he assumes they're ready for the greatest affair of their lives What goes on in his mansion resembles one of the more outré Fellini extravaganzas with some *Exorcist*-like excrescences. The total effect is not winning Few actors would want to play the chief role, and Nicholson only adds some grotesqueries to the one he played in *The Shining,* the women's roles are also unattractive, which

may be why they are played by some second-rank actresses — Cher, Susan Sarandon and Michelle Pfeiffer — though the last named is a first-rate beauty

'Up your bum!' is an expression constantly on the lips of the teenage heroine (Emily Lloyd) of *Wish You Were Here,* directed and adapted by David Leland from the early life of Cynthia Payne, the subject of *Personal Services,* which he also scripted. The time is 1951 (though you'd never know it, from the hazy grasp of period artefacts) and Cynthia is sleeping with a friend (Tom Bell) of her father's, with whom she is mostly at loggerheads The result is half-honest, half-pandering, never perceptive, and as with the father-daughter scene in *Personal Services* there is no hurt, only a need to settle old scores Since Leland seems to have cornered the market in *Sex à l'Anglaise* — he also helped to write *Mona Lisa* — it's as well that his views on it have freshened a bit and are a bit more exact on that sad puritan era than *Hope and Glory.*

For an American movie of this same breed — teenagers discovering their 'bodies' in times past — try *Dirty Dancing,* which is not good but interesting In the old days when a plain Jane fell for the best-looking stud around she smartened up and got glamour. Now she can remain plain — but then oh goodness! how anxiously this movie wants its teeny-bopper audience to identify with it. It's no use making family films of the Mickey and Judy era if families no longer go to the movies Yet the plot here contains ingredients familiar to the readers of Mrs. Henry Wood — the misunderstood hero, the missing wallet, the unwilling alibi. Of course she (Jennifer Grey) sleeps with the stud (Patrick Swayze), dancing instructor at a Jewish resort in the Catskills. Otherwise, she has her daddy's old-fashioned values, but gee, the hero has them in the end — he even gives up sleeping with older women for money. I couldn't say whether director Emile has solved the dichotomy of setting the action in 1963 and yet filling it with the sort of music which appeals to today's kids I can say that the film looks exactly like all the adverts which preceded it — all selling glamour of various kinds, almost all filmed in recognisable American settings Almost all the men guzzling exotic drinks and driving fast autos were wearing braces — and this was before *Wall Street,* where they're as ubiquitous as the moralising of the script and the corruption of the characters, as co-written and directed by the talented Oliver Stone Anyway, so does Mr Swayze when he goes in for his dirty dancing. The last film from this company, Vestron, had its handsome young hero in sock suspenders There's hope for me yet.

THE NEW SOUND OF BRITISH LYRIC POETRY

Kathleen Norcross, David Hopkinson, Simon Curtis

by Park Honan

TWENTY-FIVE years ago Robert Lowell with American verse in mind said that any number of people might write 'a complicated poem that has a certain amount of symbolism in it and really difficult meaning, a wonderful poem to teach. Then you unwind it and you feel that the intelligence, the experience, whatever goes into it, is skin-deep' Not many British poets have erred in this way Our bad verse is much less academic — often a series of clear but precious images Or, at a better level, the poet talks to us in prose, eschewing rhyme, rhythm, or form of any kind. This I think has been a failure in much verse in the last three decades, since although prosiness may achieve a one-to-oneness with the reader (so long as the reader can be kept awake), the lyric that lacks an 'ear' fails to delight and to impart enough Philip Larkin's felicity was hard won, and for every Ted Hughes or Geoffrey Hill who masters the lyric, we have a hundred poets who do not attend to the sound properties of language.

But there is promise in the air I have no right to crow, since I am addicted to reading verse but am not a poetry-reviewer Still I take such pleasure in three poets that I sent them questions about their work (they all replied), and now I report on their volumes

Kathleen Norcross in *Grass in the Wall*[1] is a good raider. Born in 1928 at a woollen-mill town near Leeds, she failed and missed exams through illness but went on to Oxford to listen to Helen Gardner and then married a physician, an imaginative man, and gave birth to a daughter, Cathy, who figures often in these lyrics. Her own experience is so important to Norcross that she will seize and wring any device, almost naively, to make it subserve, as she makes rhyme subserve in 'Forvie Sands':

> On Forvie Sands I see you stand,
> Bright profile poised against the bands
> Of tawny, wave-turned granules,
> From your hands,
> Their facets glitter, fall to drifts,
> About your sandalled feet Careens
> A single seagull over dazzling strands.

The last sentence has the sheen of a photo, the artificiality of a loved memory Assonance does as well for her:

> Four days did Lazarus
> Bide in the tomb,
> To what strange country gone, but a stone's throw from home?

That raids Emily Dickinson. But Norcross appears as a housewife (of Birmingham) who is ready to put everyone and anything to use. If words run threadbare she will press them into repetitions and rhymes for an exact matching of mood:

> An April day, but dry, cold,
> Binbag litter, blowing, blowing,
> Fish and chip papers in bundles rolling,

The garden bleak, no daffodils showing,
One's face in the mirror looking old, old
All God's blessed saints stone-dead,
Crafty devils peeping, peeping,
Men and women preparing to be burned,
White seagulls over tenements sweeping,
Swooping to my flower-bed for bread, bread,
And my spirits leaping, leaping, leaping

Many of us shall be burned Her vision of that tatty ceremony as our bodies await the fire in a mute queue gives her verse sanity; in view of pain and our endings we know the present, or, indeed, the past as in 'Towton Field' about a battle fought in a snowstorm.

Towton was fought in a snowstorm
The last fling of winter outflanking them
The bright blood, flying like snow,
The snow, like blood, soft as kisses,
The blood, like snow, delicate as roses

It is strange to read a poet of hungry, almost spendthrift talent such as Norcross Landscapes and concrete situations evoke her best work. The burning of the Guy as he slumps 'akimbo' into flames on bonfire night suggests the Marian martyrs and our own deaths, and BBC news prompts a marvellous anecdote (which I won't reveal) in 'A Spider in the Salt' — in which rhyme and metre begin to give order to the news This disciplining of the daily anarchy of sensations begins very simply

A tidal wave has made a sudden snatch,
At children Flames leap up, and catch
Helpless spectators of a football match

Poets might learn from a poet who is too concerned with life to be self-conscious or apologetic about her lyric devices One hopes to see more of Kathleen Norcross's work

David Hopkinson may have an advantage in age Born in April 1914, he read modern history at Oxford, took his BA before the war, and was one of the HMIs from 1952 to 1976 He supplies dates of composition for his early lyrics in *Of Past and Present*[2] and the well-honed, rather Yeatsian quality of his youthful verse begins to suggest his strictness of feeling for language He admits to having been under the 'vastly important' influence of Yeats and Auden, but, as he worked free of these, the historian's view of human event guided his poetry-writing Hopkinson's poems are grave and beautiful reports of the spirit in reaction to time, event and necessity Judgement is so vital to him that the active present is held at a distance — though one feels the slow lurch of the doomed machine in 'Crew of a Wellington'·

They fell out of the sky in 1940
Condemned to death because they were airworthy
But, O my Lord, not guilty!
Ignorant of the height of the ocean
Well-briefed on the depth of the sky
Bearing in mind an E T A,
These airmen hummed their innocent course
Over an inland sea in the first light
First placed on stand-by for a posting,
Then on draft for another theatre
Where Entrances were few and Exits many;
Targeted on an unwelcoming coast
With untouched treasures of love in liquidation

They would never again be generous to the living

His poems are few. All of them, or almost all, are concerned with sources of renewal History is the nightmare of the Wellington bomber's path, but, even in 'Marching Order', which he wrote at 22, he can ask,

> Is there no private and unexpected pathway,
> Soft grass beneath the feet, beating aside of brambles,
> Between ferns and green bracken, between heather and high trees?

Love brings responsibility, ache, a sense (as in 'not Counting the Beats') that with 'nothing in my arms to-night' there is no meaning anywhere in the lover's absence, and that then the powerful force of history that shapes our lives reveals itself as numb and faceless The loved person gives a gloss to nature or harmonizes it, as in 'At "T" Meadow — A Celebration' where in the liquid air 'A beautiful girl floats sideways for ever ' But the nightmare of history is not to be judged lightly. Hopkinson saves his talent for the felt verdict on his time; his lyrics are so well-attuned that when many harmonies occur, as in his 'Ergo Sum', the affirmation denies modern history and is rooted in the natural rhythms of our race

> Rock and the earth glowing
> Song and the stream flowing
> Joy and the rose growing
> Thorns and the cock crowing

Hopkinson, brooding over history, is not the only poet who has turned into 'one of her Majesty's Inspectors of Schools'. This year of 1988 marks the centenary of that elegist, Matthew Arnold (1822-88), and some of his celebrants may miss the loveliest aspect of him, his lyric talent Mary Moorman (Wordsworth's biographer and an Arnold descendant) however is aware of his poetry and, with help from the Dean of Westminster, she is arranging to place a stone in Poet's Corner to record,

'MATTHEW ARNOLD, POET AND CRITIC 1822-1888'

As a biographer of Arnold I am afraid that I am a dedicatee of Simon Curtis's poem 'Thinking of Matthew Arnold on the M62'. Curtis, whose first volume was *On the Abthorpe Road* of 1975, gives his own version of Arnold in 'Scholar-Gipsy' patterned stanzas:

> How out of date he feels! What dreams he had!
> I speed across the Pennines I, too, teach
> Lamplight and headlight shape things frosty-clear
> We're turning Shakespeare into common speech
> And Greek's been lost, the tongue he held so dear
> It's how things go Too bad
> Great boards of blue and white unlyrically
> Point Leeds and Pontefract; dull snowflakes fall,
> Unfestal bulbs prink out a Bingo Hall,
> On a blankness of Clearway, trucks thwack by

First published in *Encounter,* this poem will appear in Curtis's new volume *The Glebe Field*[3]

Simon Curtis was born in wartime and raised in a Lancashire vicarage. After his early work was printed in *Critical Quarterly* by Brian Cox, he had a volume published with Kingsley Amis's help, and then he was taken up in *Faber Poetry Introduction* His work appears in *London Magazine, Poetry Review, Poetry Durham, Poetry Wales, TLS, London Review* and elsewhere, and it shows a strong development. If he has not yet reached

his widest public, he has mastered rhythm and metre and found a voice Perhaps he has nothing else technical to learn. Whether he will become England's voice remains to be seen; a vicar's son may or may not take on some responsibility for his nation, but he is the most interesting poet writing in England today

One needs a volume to learn to read and hear him 'Rhythm's all-important — consistent rhythm, music, melody, numbers, cadence', he says. 'It's a thing that a lot of would-be poets fail at hopelessly these days. I use rhyme a good deal I love form enriching other people's poetry, Herbert and Du Bellay and Hardy. it gives such pleasure. Rhythm's a great help to communication, a courtesy . Liking rhyme doesn't mean I don't like Shakespearean or Miltonic or Wordsworthian blank verse, of course. They have *consistent* rhythm'.

Simon Curtis's tone depends on his having made pentametres his own, so that the six-beat line suddenly can add its exquisite, dampened note of beauty and realism·

A man in outline trudges near low rocks
A clinging pearl-pale mist beleaguers all,
Both out to sea and inland, north and south,
Furling flat suburb roofs, wide strand and low sea wall
The man's been lug-worm digging — out, alone,
In vast still vacancy of sky and sand
Where lamp-posts, like great plantains, mark the prom,
A primrose bus shakes past *en route* for Sunderland

Curtis's ear and seeing agree, they report on real things Here is a marina at night, in his 'Yvoire'

And what an eerie dance of sound
the halyards and the rigging make
on high spar and on creaking mast,
with tap-tap fret and horse's bridle clink!
Paths and grass are hushed, all's absence there,
yet how the white yachts bob and toss
as in a weird infectious chafe of desire,
charging the midnight dark
with electricity of expectation!

His mood is not of acquiescence but of a humane apprehension of our England, as though his poems were clearing the ground for our own renewal Oddly, his satire is not cynical but sympathetic, as in verses on the closing down of a 'Modern Irish' course at Manchester University.

The last remaining Irish course
Has vanished out of England now
Our Reader's gone, the post's closed down,
And count on it, there'll be no row
We sip our coffee and we shrug
As Irish Gaelic's grave is dug
Some months ago, I read reports
Of the end of one blue butterfly,
A rare last lovely orchid's gone,
Endangered species, silent, die,
So elements of richness, worth,
Fade irretrievably from earth

That is not liberal or Thatcherite (but rather Yeatsian) and has a truth beyond politics. We cannot save all we would, but need to know the full loss of change and evanishment

Curtis drives about 'looking' for poems. 'I do actually keep a biro on

the dashboard of my Beetle', he comments Other writers throng in his mind 'There's R S. Thomas, Norman Nicholson, Patrick Kavanagh, Seamus Heaney, Elizabeth Bishop, Housman, Hardy', he says 'I've been reading Boileau recently; a good poet Richard Cobb's writing (in prose) on France has been enormously stimulating, Robert Graves' *The Reader Over Your Shoulder* is a key-work'. Yet books are not quite life, and it is the urge to find what is true in the local instance that chiefly moves him. And he must train his readers, as he does in a series of sonnets that have his voice and no other in their rhythms The sonnets, as exercises, suggest the poet must observe banal details to keep the habit of observing sharp, as in the pinball-machine sonnet of 'Pierrot Mon Ami'

> The steel balls dodge, then roll to ricochet
> From pin to winking bollard into cup,
> A single coin would last him all the week!
> Our tap-room's genius, he wins applause,
> The egg-yolk yellow neon Scooby Doo
> Awards him second goes, replays top scores —
> At such uncanny artistry, he shrugs;
> St Jude, you know, is patron saint of mugs

That is truthful, but only an exercise, we wait for the urgency of his preoccupations to assume control of the five-beat line.

Kathleen Norcross observes with a sensitive camera which turns this way and that to give, in its odd focus, a vivid and honest sense of the enthusiastic picture-taker herself Hopkinson's camera is brought out at rare moments to record modern life in the grips of that monster, historical inevitability And Simon Curtis is cool and close, amused and detached, not picturing *much* in the full swim of life, but at least a good deal at its edges All are alive to sound-possibilities of the lyric and seem much more rewarding than prosaic poets we meet in the normal run of our journals.

The question we have to ask is always the same, whether the English lyric poet can account for much in experience, and whether she or he can assimilate the sound-structure of language In all three of these poets, the promise lies in their fresh vision and tonal felicity. They and a few others are now slowly renewing the British lyric in sound and form, and *that* is a task worth attending.

NOTES

1 *Grass in the Wall and Other Poems* Tallis Press. Cheddar, 1987, pp 111 £4 95
2 *Of Past and Present*, privately printed, 1988 pp 22 Available from Ex Libris, 1 The Shambles, Bradford-on-Avon, Wilts
3 *The Glebe Field* 1988, available from Littlewood Press, 5 Slater Bank, Hebden Bridge, West Yorkshire HX7 7DY

[Park Honan is co-author with William Irvine of a biography of Robert Browning, *The Book, the Ring, and the Poet* (Bodley Head, 1975), and author of *Matthew Arnold: A Life* (Weidenfeld, 1981) His latest biography for Weidenfeld is *Jane Austen: Her Life* (1987) He holds the chair of English and American Literature at the University of Leeds Professor Honan will give the annual address to the Jane Austen Society on July 16 at Chawton, Hampshire]

CORRESPONDENCE

ANOTHER EUROPE

Dear Madam,

I am mystified by John Coleman's quest for another kind of 'Europe' (Vol. 252, No 1465) as distinct from the one already dumped on our plates. I see no reason to want either and am strongly opposed to both.

If modern history has two quite awesome lessons, they are that governmental and entrepreneurial forms of giantism lead to lack of control over their workings by the ordinary citizen, and that once centralised governmental bodies are established they proceed to draw unto themselves every kind of power at an accelerating rate.

We may take all our lessons from the American Empire on this The Founding Fathers did their best to ensure, through a written constitution, that 'states rights' and the power of the town meeting would counterpoise such powers as they provided for the federal government. Where are those counterpoised powers today? And what kind of control does the American citizen today exert over the federal government? And what benefits have accrued to the USA as a consequence? When I was lecturing in the United States a few months ago, in Connecticut (one of the wealthiest states of the wealthiest country in the world) the discussion afterwards turned on the problems of running a soup kitchen for the unemployed. Do they have soup kitchens in Luxembourg, Norway, Switzerland or in many other *small* countries?

A united Europe of any kind does not solve problems It either creates new ones or enlarges old ones. We may well stop war between France and Germany by uniting 'Europe', but how long will it be before our youngsters are conscripted into a 'European' army to fight 'European' wars in defence of 'European' interests? The sensible route to peace is not through bigger and bigger unities but through division. Balkanise all the big powers so that no one has the power to attack the other with any hope of winning! The Balkans only became a byeword for national wars owing to the interference of the 'great powers'. Let us, if you like, Scandinavianise Europe into small, peaceful, stable, neighbourly and prosperous regions of five or six million each Let us have all sorts of co-operating functional bodies as the already existing postal union or John Coleman's special body to clean up and control the Rhine. But let us have no more chatter about 'Europe' If we, in Britain, cannot solve our problems from London we certainly won't solve them in Brussels

The whole 'European' exercise is a massive, map dreaming confidence trick which, if we do not soon wake up and get out, will lead to more and more economic, social and military instability at the expense of our liberties

Yours faithfully,

24 Abercorn Place,
London, NW8.

JOHN PAPWORTH
Editor of *The Fourth World*

Literary Supplement

QUARTERLY FICTION REVIEW

by Rosalind Wade

The Woman Who Was God Francis King Hutchinson £10 95 *Sheep's Clothing* Celia Dale Constable £9 95 *S* John Updyke Deutsch £10 95 *The Green Leaves of Summer* Ted Willis Macmillan £10 95 *Black Baby* Clare Boylan Hamish Hamilton £10 95 *Time with Children* Elizabeth Tallent Cape £9 95

There are some authors, such as Charles Dickens and Sir Walter Scott, who were prolific, and often condemned on that account others as for instance E M Forster or Jane Austen, whose high reputation rests on a relatively modest number of published books Both situations have much to recommend them It is always satisfying for a writer to feel that his or her form is maintained throughout the years, even if the performance is occasionally uneven On the other hand, a small, highly-polished output often remains embalmed in a kind of unalterable perfection Francis King belongs in the former category. He has published, with astonishing frequency, a large number of novels as well as biography, travel and poetry It is not many months since his novella, *Frozen Music*, was reviewed in these pages and now comes a new major work, *The Woman Who Was God* The 'woman' of the title is not the central character Events centre round a rejected wife and mother bent on investigating the mysterious death of her eighteen-year-old son in Salloum, a semi-fictitious African state.

It is much to Francis King's credit that he invests the depressed, neurotic female with genuine integrity and common-sense Ruth St Just is obsessed by her doubts about the circumstances in which the tragedy occurred Understandably, as the official verdict that young James St Just died after diving into a half-empty swimming pool fails to take account of his congenital fear of water and the fact that he could not swim After drawing blank in terms of sympathy or assistance from her ex-husband and various foreign and commonwealth officials, Ruth sells the restaurant through which she has maintained her self-respect and an independent income and journeys forth into unexplored territory to discover the truth for herself The inefficiently administered travel arrangements and the peculiar people encountered *en route* provide excellent opportunities for the display of Francis King's seemingly inexhaustible fund of information about far-away places A comedy this certainly is, if in somewhat macabre terms but, as the story progresses, sinister under-currents begin to surface, although these are soon submerged by the exploration of other assorted characters and of Ruth herself Saloum is, indeed, a law unto itself and only the foolhardy would venture there to stir the muddied waters

Each revelation heralds a fresh complexity of motive for the boy's death Needless to say, no relevant information is forthcoming, yet Ruth continues her fearless probing into the very core and heart of the tragedy — the unconventional, run-down community presided over by 'Mother', (the Woman who was God), of which James had unaccountably decided to become a member Here, where the truth should have been readily discovered, it proves more than ever difficult to establish the facts, yet boldly she persists until, reluctantly, she admits defeat and returns home However, that is not the end of the story

Francis King is adept at providing startling *dénouements* to his novels and *The Woman Who Was God* is no exception A posthumous 'suicide' note left by James presents a new and sensational twist to the affair, one which must not in fairness be disclosed although for the astute reader, a careful reappraisal of the novel, with its many illuminating comments and sub-plots, will almost certainly reveal the clues

Celia Dale is also gifted with the ability to explore unlikely levels of human emotion and behaviour In *Sheep's Clothing* she presents a convincing portrait of two petty criminals, one canny as a fox, Grace, (Mrs Black from the DHSS), and Janice (Mary, her 'assistant') Both have served prison sentences for fraud and while 'inside' worked out a confidence trick which provides them with a comfortable living and appears to be proof against detection Posing as Social Service representatives, they call on elderly, single people to spin a tale about extra 'benefits' which will shortly be forthcoming With pathetic readiness the victims admit the predators and accept 'Mrs Black's' suggestion that 'Mary' shall make tea In an innocent looking 'cuppa' a mild sedative is dissolved and, when it takes effect, the two vultures rob the home of its modest valuables and depart, never to be seen or heard of again

It is only when Grace becomes bored with the routine and Janice falls in love that their activities take a different course, although Grace's determination to provide for herself on a permanent, even luxurious basis creates more problems than it solves Trapping the casual public-house 'pick-up', Roy Conway, into marriage might have seemed a 'soft touch', yet she had not bargained for his possessive, ex-actress mother Still, she scores an initial success by becoming Mrs Conray's live-in house-keeper and nurse attendant Then begins the battle of wills between two inordinately conceited and unscrupulous women — so different in background and experience — but equally determined to maintain ascendancy over Conroy Eventually, when she perceives that her ruse is doomed to failure that Grace reverts to type The gloves are off and the smooth-voiced 'nurse' resorts to wrecking tactics

We do not follow her into the aftermath Instead, the narrative switches to an examination of the means — largely fortuitous — by which the police begin to catch up with the criminal activities of Grace and Janice Do detectives engaged in a complicated investigation really address each other in the manner here described? Surely not but perhaps we shall never know This quibble apart, *Sheep's Clothing* is an enthralling novel of the highest order, skilfully combining crime and suspense with some very penetrating character analysis

John Updyke is a novelist with a long-established talent to surprise and *S* is true to form Two centuries ago the novel was traditionally presented in the form of letters Jane Austen's first attempt at fiction was a correspondence, as was Samuel Richardson's *Pamela* But what are the particular advantages of conveying a story through the epistolary method now, as John Updyke has chosen to do in the succinctly titled *S*? It could be argued that a close concentration on the matter in hand is one of them People writing letters do not normally describe the scenery or other people's appearances and thus much extraneous matter is automatically excluded The letters in *S* are written by Sarah Worth to her estranged husband, her daughter, mother and various business and social associates To body them out, John Updyke has cunningly included the use of 'tapes' in which more intimate 'streams of consciousness' are possible Despite this self-limiting method, a strong central situation emerges A frustrated, often aggravating forty-year-old has decided to escape from the pressures of marriage to what she hopes will be a world of superior

values — a religious community situated deep in the Arizona desert Sarah Worth, is the querulous type, forever lamenting her missed academic status, dearth of worthwhile professional employment and her one-child family The philandering husband, a prosperous and successful surgeon, must also have been under considerable strain with such a difficult wife and a demanding occupation Through the medium of the tapes, we learn that after the divorce he is going to marry Sarah's best friend And when, on receiving this information, Sarah pulls down the barricade of self-justification to vent her spleen on her successor, the sheer naked truth of sexual jealousy is accurately and cruelly drawn, with all John Updyke's unfailing intuition and skill. But, of course, as is to be expected, in *S* much more emerges than the tooth and claw of feminine possessiveness

In *The Green Leaves of Summer,* Ted Willis displays an understanding of his heroine's personality as accurately as the arena in which she lives and works The first stages of Rosie Carr's life were recorded in *Spring at the Winged Horse* These were during the pre-World War I years, when conditions were harsh far beyond any that might be acceptable today Rosie's struggles to extricate herself from the squalor were terminated by marriage to a jaunty, go-getting barrow boy who idolised her to the extent of giving a name to her illigitimate child Like hundreds of thousands of others, Tommo failed to return from the trenches and the present novel follows the young widow, now with two small children, through the inter-war period

It is in the evocation of these half-forgotten years that Ted Willis excels, bestowing significance on the otherwise sentimental story of a 'disadvantaged' young woman in the nineteen-thirties Rosie was essentially a person geared to the philosophy of self-help Whether playing the piano in a pub, helping a market tradesman to build up a business or leading her neighbours in a protest march to the Town Hall, she radiates the attractive aura of a vital and gifted woman who might have achieved much in happier circumstances Even so, she became a respected council member and, on the eve of the Welfare State, could look ahead to benefits for all, combined with dignity and independence

Black Baby is mainly concerned with a woman who, despite comparative affluence, has had few promising opportunities in her long, uneventful life To what extent this may have been due to her own inadequacies is revealed in a brisk, spasmodic narrative Clare Boylan is an Irish writer with the predictable ability to present feckless, often distasteful characters as though they brimmed with natural, native charm

The novel has an unusual starting point When the now ageing Alice was only twelve years old, the 'nuns' prevailed upon her to 'buy' a black baby for the princely sum of two shillings and sixpence, which was to be handed over to an unidentified Mission No more was heard of the transaction until, many years later, a stout, middle-aged African named Dinah arrives at Alice's house and is presumed to be the long-lost baby Dinah's incursion into the damp, chilly home provided some motivation for the disconsolate virgin spinster as well as a host of new acquaintances and hangers on

But *did* it? Or was the presence of Dinah and her friends merely a fragment of fantasy experienced by Alice during the final stages of mental disintigration? In this hilariously comic novel of the absurd it is never easy to distinguish between reality and hallucination One thing is certain, the seamy, off-beat characters could not have existed anywhere but in Ireland or have been presented so appealingly by a writer less gifted than Clare Boylan

Finally, a volume of short stories. A collection of brief unconnected pieces

is often tantalising and unsatisfactory This could have been true of the thirteen items in *Time with Children,* but what makes the book worthy of close attention is Elizabeth Tallent's outstanding creative ability, which enables her to invest each cameo with an endemic life of its own, and, as is indicated by the title, she is particularly successful when describing children

Also Received

Death of a Doormouse Patrick Ruell Methuen. £10 95

Death of a Doormouse is a thriller to take on a long journey, when the colourful scenes in Yorkshire, Switzerland and Austria will provide distraction and interest The problems of working out precisely what is happening will not seem too pressing, while the adventures of late-maturing Trudi may be admired for their ingenuity But do women really talk to each other and to their menfolk with such a degree of crudity? Some may, perhaps, in which case we would be thankful never to encounter them in real life

Little Misunderstandings of No Importance Antonio Tubucci. Chatto & Windus £10 95 Translated by Frances Frenaye

Antonio Tabucci is an Italian writer of great distinction, rightly acclaimed in his native Italy and elsewhere Several of his books are shortly to be published in this country The present volume is a collection of short stories, all of which exercise on the reader a considerable compulsion In his Author's Note he apologises for his 'ambiguity', yet many people will find his characterisation and narrative admirably clear

The Highly Flavoured Ladies Patricia Angadi Gollancz £10 95

Patricia Angadi was highly praised for her novel, *The Governess,* and in *The Highly Flavoured Ladies* she has chosen another unusual and distinctive theme There is more than an element of the supernatural about this story of two sets of residents at a house in Hampstead with the time span of a hundred years between them It was to be anticipated that the lives of both groups would to some extent run parallel Thus, there is a 'Mary' in each generation, happiness and tragedy in equal parts and the characters appear to each other in ghostly form, slipping in and out of a very different way of life The structure, scenes and dialogues are satisfactory, even if it is difficult to discern exactly what became of the 'first' Mary and to accept the language and portrayal of the gathering ranks of 'drop-outs' who congregate in the pleasant Hampstead house second time round Do young people really talk and act in this exaggerated way? Apparently, and not surprisingly they are eventually sent packing so that a happy ending — unlike the disasters which beset the earlier residents — is conveniently contrived.

The Round Robin. Roderick Stuart Axon Trudlove Hart and Co, Guildford, Surrey £11 95

Roderick Stuart Axon is a courageous man who has undergone major heart surgery and survived to lead a full and useful life. For his first novel, he has understandably chosen to dwell on his experiences and the results of such a serious operation make interesting reading Perhaps less predictably he has elected to combine these real-life events with his views on a campaign for nuclear disarmament His recipe for achieving a total laying down of nuclear and other forms of bombing are simple A 'round robin' signed by every member of the armed forces world-wide would, he argues, automatically achieve this end The formula raises as many questions as replies What for instance of terrorism and its indiscriminate ability to wound and maim? Nonetheless, it proves stimulating, and *The Round Robin* will repay a careful study.

NON FICTION REVIEWS

THE NATURE OF ISLAM

The Arab Mind from Arab sources. John Laffin Pickwick Books. Revised edition, £12 95.

The Middle East is not to be equated with the Arab world The Mediterranean basin, the Levant, Arabia are peopled by Berbers, Turkomans, Kurds (the great Saladin was one, rather than, as here designated, a 'Persian'), Druze, Jews and sundry Europeans as well as by Arabs Nor are Arabs, save as a generalisation, necessarily Muslim Some of the most vicious Arab terrorists have been 'Christians'

Yet it was Muhammad who promised dominion to the Arabs and gave them glory His Koran proclaimed them elect In the eleventh century al-Tha'alibi described the Arabs as a chosen nation and Arabic a chosen language Their empire, ranging from the Atlantic to China, flashed as a meteor through history. 'All Western Europe benefited from Arab culture in Spain' Arabs mediated the science and philosophy of classical Greece But by 1492, the year both of Christian reconquest and the Christian expansion symbolized by Christopher Columbus, the Arab achievement was spent Ever since decadence and disunity and alien yoke

'A vigorous, intellectual race became leaderless, confused and apathetic ' Dr Sania Hamady, herself an Arab, is quoted as castigating 'Arabs' laziness. . irresponsibility lack of team spirit lying' Another distinguished Arab, Cecil Hourani, notes the incompetence of the military regimes installed in many of the Arab states since 1949 Failures in war, they are unlikely to succeed in the tasks of civil administration and economic development Nasser was not the Ataturk our Left believed him to be. He was more of an adventurer, an Enver Pasha

John Laffin's own criticism is that of one who has made Arab friends, enjoyed Arab hospitality and been succoured by Bedouin He has witnessed 'great generosity and savage cruelty' Ibn Khaldun had commented on the latter quality Mr Laffin fastens on a traditionalism which has prevented the Arabs from adapting themselves to change Islam is founded on unalterable Koranic decrees. Lord Curzon 'Reformed Islam is Islam no longer' T E Lawrence wrote of the intellectual inertia of the desert Arabs

According to Dr Hamady, 'Arab society is a shame society'. She sees her people as suspicious, easy to offend, with a keen sense of humiliation Which inhibits business-like dealings with Westerners Personal, family and tribal loyalties over-ride allegiance to the nation-states carved upon sand by the British and French conquerors of the Ottoman Patriotism and Islam are uneasy companions, and Islam binds Arab society A Kuwaiti newspaper is quoted for an editorial headed 'Fake Arab Unity' Cecil Hourani traced Arab disaster and disintegration to a 'psychological weakness in us that (which) we do not like we pretend does not exist'

JOHN BIGGS-DAVISON

INDIA TODAY: DYNASTY OR DEMOCRACY?

From Raj to Rajiv, 40 year of Indian Independence Mark Tully and Zareer Masani BBC Books £10 95

The veteran BBC reporter from India, Mark Tully, prints here the scripts of his five-part BBC Radio 4 series, which was produced by Zareer Masani They give a fascinating kaleidoscopic picture of India over the last forty years, since Mountbatten decided — and rightly — on a total British evacuation in 1947 In India, as in almost every other case of Imperial withdrawal (Africa, Ceylon, Malaysia, Singapore), everything turned on who inherited, or seized, power This is no criticism of the ambitions of local leaders It is but to say that all these societies were and are all but totally illiterate, and that they deify their 'tribal' or 'national' 'leaders' Once radio and television came — and they too bypass literacy — 'personality' and 'charisma' counted for everything When the British and its civil service departed and there was no obvious or pre-selected inheritor, chaos reigned, and sometimes still surfaces (parts of Africa, Malaysia, and even Israel), where there emerged a strong man (Lee Kwan Yew, Kenyatta), the story has in fact been infinitely happier

How has it been in 750-million strong India? Mark Tully at one point, though not usually, is gloomy 'The Nehru dynasty has become like a great banyan tree, in the shade of which nothing grows' (p 104) He brings out vividly the contrasting personalities inside the family. the founder Pandit Motilal Nehru, a Westernised barrister and friend of Mahatma Gandhi, his son Jawaharlal, the Westernised socialist, whom the Mahatma ensured would be free India's first Prime Minister (if he had chosen Jinnah, would there have been the holocaust of partition, or would there even be a Pakistan at all?), his granddaughter Indira Gandhi, who lacked her father's moral and intellectual stature and became the dictator he never could have been, or would have wanted to be, and his great-grandson Rajiv the reluctant, whom his mother was determined should succeed, and who was the youngest and least experienced Prime Minister India has ever known In her reign — and it lasted eighteen years off and on — India was Indira's

This is not just a study in biographies, though it is rich in them In the vast kaleidoscope, there are too the problems of caste, and of the untouchables, still stubbornly there, of remorseless population growth and urban congestion, of the condition of women, who still seem to prefer marriages to be arranged for them, of the Pakistan war, of Kashmir, the Nehrus' original homeland, of rampant corruption and raging inflation, the perennial problems east of Suez, and, not least, of the minorities, who include Tribals, Sikhs and India's own Moslems, all of whom have done better economically than the Hindu majority This is not to exhaust the list of problems, for dominating them all is a poverty best illustrated by the fact that the life 'lived' by beggars on the pavements of Bombay is itself dominated by the strong men who live in tenements nearby, to whom a rent of fifty rupees a month has to be paid for a living space of six feet by six. If India is now an industrial country, as it was not pre-1947, and if life expectancy has gone up from 32 years in 1947 to 57 today, the Nehru dynasty still has its work cut out

ESMOND WRIGHT

EDWARD VII's LOVE LIFE

The King in Love Edward VII's Mistresses Theo Aronson John Murray £13 95

Sex, love and royalty are three of the perennial topics that fascinate mankind To combine all three is no doubt to ensure a popular success This book provides a Peeping Tom's account of King Edward VII's private life For those who enjoy an historical gossip column with a tabloid approach, this should long remain as the standard account of this side of that merry monarch's life as it is full of amusing and diverting tales

It is no great historical discovery to reveal that Edward VII, both as Prince of Wales and as King, had a myriad of affairs. This was widely known and talked about at the time This book concentrates on the three best known mistresses of the King Lillie Langtry, Daisy Warwick and Alice Keppel

The problem with historical gossip columns, just as with the present day variety, is that the mere fact that some person, normally a spiteful person, has written down a story, does not make it a true one Manuscript sources are particularly dangerous in this regard When someone with a sense of history uses manuscript sources it can add tremendously to a book's value The recent biography of Edward VII's sister, Princess Louise by Jehanne Wake, is a good example of this

In this book, however, far too much reliance is placed on a particularly suspect source, namely Wilfrid Blunt Every anecdote is pressed to extract as much juice as possible and Blunt's diary is never doubted nor his motives or integrity questioned The handling of Mr Gladstone's interest in reclaiming prostitutes is singularly inept To describe the distinguished essayist, Abraham Hayward, as engaged in 'pimping' for Mr Gladstone is ridiculous and betrays the writer's basic ignorance of the period into which he has stumbled Having recently looked through the Hayward-Gladstone correspondence in the British Library, this reviewer came to the conclusion that most of it dealt with long forgotten political and literary chit-chat It certainly cannot bear the interpretation put on it by Mr Aronson

JAMES MUNSON

FIRE FROM HEAVEN

The Ancient Secret Flavia Anderson R I L K O Books £8 75

Like an upmarket Miss Marple, the Lady Flavia, grand-daughter of that law-giver of England, the Earl of Halsbury, simply cannot resist a mystery And that which intrigues her — and us — is the ancient secret of the Holy Grail She has laboured long and esoterically to decipher the cabbala, and has brought forth light and heat Literally For Lady Flavia Anderson is satisfied that the Holy Grail was not the mythical vessel of Arthurian legend, but rather the sacred object of a mystery cult — fire from the sun

Is her pyromantic revelation tenable? Basically, it is her submission that the Holy Grail, the Sacred Fruit of the Tree of Knowledge was the knowledge (= power) or power of Control of Fire Fire was obtained from the sun (god) Fire was power for good or evil It vanquished cold, preserved life But was destroyer also Fire blinded, but also lightened Man's darkness The kindled flame could be kept or cosseted, crown of a wick, housed in a lamp, hung before the temple tabernacle Fire could be cultivated, but never subdued.

Lady Flavia's book is not amenable to critical summation It is an argument in its entirety and deserves no less than the courtesy of a full and careful reading Its adductions and deductions depend in such close-knit and logical arrangements as to make considerations in isolation valueless This is an all or nothing at all book to which each reader must necessarily address him or herself What I can — and must — do, is to assure the reader that time devoted to this rather 'difficult' text will most certainly not be time wasted The book abounds in new and very intellectually attractive theorisings Its bias is constructive and in absolutely no way inimical to Christian doctrine On the contrary, there is provided an aperçu here and there which seems blazingly to confirm some known truth from an unknown angle One conclusion might be that we are all children playing with fire.

RICHARD WHITTINGTON-EGAN

A MIND OF HER OWN

A Mind of Her Own The Life of Karen Horney Susan Quinn Macmillan £16 95.

It would be wrong for readers who, for whatever reason, repudiate psychoanalysis, to shy away from this important and satisfying work, which is a classic (probably definitive) biography of an intellectual, achieving, questioning woman of the twentieth century

The previous Life of Karen Horney (1885-1952) by the late Dr Jack Rubins, published in Great Britain in 1979, is, it must be said, more readable, but not so exhaustive, more personal and quirky, and, again it must be said, not so accurate There cannot be many biographers who have had the dire misfortune to launch into their account — 'This is where she was born ' with a scintillating description (photograph also supplied) of the wrong place! It was, apparently, in Eilbek, a town on the outskirts of Hamburg, not the small village of Blankenese, where small boats scurry like waterbugs, that the frequently absent sea captain, Berndt Henrik Wackels Danielsen chose to establish his family Nevertheless, Dr Rubin's book is not eclipsed, it contains much vivid, anecdotal material, which Susan Quinn does not reduplicate, and the psychoanalytical content, if less lucid than in Susan Quinn's perfectly understood and presented commentary, bears the authority of his five years of study with Karen Horney, and his thirty years of practice and teaching of her theories The two biographers' treatment of the photograph of Karen Horney as the one woman, holding a skull, in a group of Freiburg medical students, who hold duelling swords (not, *pace* Rubins, student swagger sticks) shows the danger of such free-floating interpretations Rubins sees her as 'ill at ease and timid', while Quinn sees her as cleverly becoming the centrepiece, with her knack of benefiting from a potentially unwelcoming environment

Although the adolescent diaries of Karen Horney have already been published, Susan Quinn draws upon valuable new diary material which has the same intensity, solipsism, cyclic mood, quest for identity, and drive for intellectual excellence as Sylvia Plath's diaries She shows how the brilliant student survived her weakness for romantic attachments, resolved to 'take myself to pieces', gravitated towards psychoanalysis, and at first eagerly embraced the teachings of Freud in the heady early days of the movement Gradually, however, her views diverged from Freud's, and her influence grew until she was regarded as a dangerous threat to the orthodoxy finally, in 1941, she was cast out by being stripped of her status as training analyst at the New

York Psychoanalytic Institute. She may have wept, or she may have sung — the stories differ

The break was inevitable, since the Horney variations were not mere shifts of emphasis, extensions or qualifications, but fundamental re-castings 'What about (the satisfaction of) motherhood?' was one of her first doubtings Freud rarely wrote about marriage, and, after the early years of the women with hysterical illnesses, he tended to ignore the psycho-sexual problems of women This became one of Horney's fields, with an insistence on the relevance of social factors It was not, Susan Quinn points out, until 1967, with the publication of Karen Horney's preliminary works under the title of *Female Psychology,* that modern feminists recognised her as a forerunner

By 1935, Freud is credited with the opinion of Karen Horney as 'She is able but malicious — mean ' She began to question the universality of the Freudian interpretation and therapeutic, seeing it as culture-bound, and, even more heretically, she wanted less emphasis on childhood experience and single *trauma* it was, she thought, more productive to address the present than the past The sacred Oedipus complex itself was not immune from her undermining Neurosis grew from cold or deficient parenting — this was a particularly influential area of her teaching — and narcissism was a typical neurotic disturbance, with an absence of enduring relationships, and an inner emptiness The goal of Horney's therapy was to help the neurotic, through awareness of conflicts and their neurotic solutions in himself, such as externalization, to get in touch with his 'real self' Karen Horney's own personality was, in some ways, deeply disturbed, and Susan Quinn's interpretations intrinsicate most skilfully into her commentary on the Horney teachings, to make an impressive, if somewhat cold, intellectual whole

MOLLY TIBBS

WIFE TO ROBERT BROWNING

Elizabeth Barrett Browning Margaret Forster Chatto and Windus £14 95
Selected Poems Elizabeth Barrett Browning Introduction by Margaret Forster £12 95

Margaret Forster, novelist and critic, has published a most illuminating new biography of Elizabeth Barrett Browning, with a companion volume of selected poems The choice of poems is made on the clear principle that some of her shorter, more important pieces have for many years been out of print: and also that the whole sequence of poems like *Casa Guidi Windows* and the forty-two *Sonnets From the Portuguese* should appear in their entirety because of their central importance in the Brownings' married life The *Sonnets* were written as love poems to Robert Browning in the early months of their courtship, but not revealed to him until the third year of their marriage he thought as highly of her poetry as of his own or Tennyson's but these sonnets he spoke of in the same breath as those of Shakespeare The *Casa Guidi Windows* poems are a celebration of their beloved home in Florence and therefore a significant element in the romantic story of her life Also they contain clues to her political development for she derived inspiration from the idea of the liberation of Italy from Austria and more particularly she admired the courage of the leader Cavour in going to the aid of the Piedmontese

In the biographical volume there is much new material about the early life

of the Barrett children The dominant figure of the unforgiving father, in relation to the story of Elizabeth's elopement with Robert Browning, is well-documented from the earliest days in her girlhood when, stricken by the death of his wife, Edward Barrett turned to his daughters for comfort but especially to Elizabeth who understood and loved him the best Here Margaret Forster has the advantage of her gifts as a novelist and can cause the family to come to life in a way that does no injustice to the facts but at the same time brings to light the individual psychological complexities of their strange situation

Elizabeth is depicted as strong and self-willed, by no means the helpless frightened invalid of popular legend but preferring isolation largely to protect herself from interruption when writing poetry in her attic room Two of the little known periods of her life are dealt with admirably here her troubled adolescence and young womanhood before, at the age of 40, she fell in love with and secretly married Robert Browning, and the fifteen years of their married life in Italy The delicate state of her health was Robert's great concern, as it had been that of her father, and their frequent migrations to various parts of Italy, away from Florence when winter set in, caused him deep anxiety, interfering greatly in the beginning with his output of poetry The happiness of her life with Robert was marred by the fact that, after the elopement, the father who had professed so great a dependence on her love for him implacably refused to read her letters or to answer them for the rest of her life More remarkable was the reversal of feeling effected by all her family, from passionate devotion to their sister to almost complete indifference, in a single moment

Margaret Forster's biography is a work of scholarly research and also one of warmth, written in an attractive prose style The selection of poems in the companion volume is inspired and achieves its object of reminding us that Elizabeth Barrett Browning is a poet to be reckoned with

BETTY ABEL

IN THE NAME OF GOD

The Missionaries. Norman Lewis Secker and Warburg £10 95

Norman Lewis, renowned traveller and novelist, has now, *aetas* 70, become crusader also He draws on his journeys in South America and Southeast Asia to compile here a savage indictment of the — mainly Protestant, Evangelical and American — sects who move to Bolivia, Paraguay, Brazil and points north in the role of missionaries, but who end by exploiting and indeed exterminating the native Indians He identifies in particular the New Tribes Movement, who have all but wiped out the Achés in Paraguay, and the curiously-named Summer Institute of Linguistics, among the Ayoreos in Bolivia or among the Panare in Venezuela They might convert a few souls, but they destroy tribal cultures and beliefs, and — in the process — acquire vast and virginal acres Their weapons are the white men's diseases malaria, smallpox, syphilis, tuberculosis They destroy equally by introducing time-tables and habits of industry, which make 'free' people into slaves These sects might even be agents, Lewis suggests, not only of their Christian or capitalist Gods, but of the CIA

The book is a piece of autobiography, and based on Lewis's own grim journeys He does not, however, limit the indictment to the more aberrant of American sects — there would seem to be some 300 of them at work He begins with an account of the destruction of the apparently arcadian life of

the people of Tahiti after the London Missionary Society sent their agents there after Cook's discovery of it It was indeed their idyllic way of life that led Captain Bligh's crew on *The Bounty* to mutiny, since life on a Pacific paradise was infinitely to be preferred to discipline at sea, or work at home And Lewis draws on his own experiences in French Indo-China in the early 1950's, to tell a similar story of the Mois in what is now South Vietnam It does not weaken his argument that in fact the peoples of Southeast Asia, notably in Cambodia and among the Karens in Burma, have suffered more harshly at the hands of their own neighbours than ever they did from the white men from over the sea, whether Christian missionaries or Imperialist mercenaries But if he makes no reference to the work of the servants of God in medical schools or in leper missions in Africa, this remains a lurid and disturbing picture not just of man's inhumanity, but of his savagery, to man

ESMOND WRIGHT

PINCHPENNY LANE

The Bodley Head 1887-1987 J W Lambert and Michael Ratcliffe Bodley Head £20 00

This is an essential source book henceforth for anyone who is interested in, or needs to know about, the peculiar climate of the eighteen-nineties I was, incidentally, especially struck by the late J W Lambert's deft and excellent handling of — something that I happen to know a great deal about — the awkward personality of Richard Le Gallienne John Lane himself emerges as a curiously contradictory character On the one hand, Devonshire mean and pinchpenny, so hard a man from whom to get even your rightful dues that it has been said that despairing authors, unable to winkle out of him their royalties, ruefully decided that it was easier to ask him to lend them the money! And on the other, capable of acts quixotically generous and positively paternalistic to some in real distress

After the departure, via Golders Green, in 1925, of 'little Johnny Lane', the firm passed into the somewhat shaky keeping of his nephew, surrogate son really, Allan Lane, who preserved certain avuncular traditions, throwing 'uninhibited gin-swilling parties in the Thames Valley playground — so outwardly different from the relatively decorous and high-thinking Hindhead heights where so many of John Lane's authors mingled sex and seriousness a mere thirty-five years or so before' But Allen Lane must always be remembered for his, in the face of 'venomous' opposition, successful hatching of Penguin Books, rumoured to be the result of his having failed to find anything but rubbish to read on Newton Abbot station bookstall, and the first fledgling bundles of which were put to roost in the crypt of disused Holy Trinity Church, Marylebone, whither they descended by way of a lift formerly used for the lowering of coffins, mostly, for some bizarre, unexplained reason, containing the corpses of retired civil servants from the West Indian island of St Vincent An excellent, highly readable, account of the rise and swelling of the Bodley Head

RICHARD WHITTINGTON-EGAN

SHORTER REVIEWS

Living by the Sword (Faber & Faber £14 95) 'America and Israel in the Middle East 1968-1987' is the theme of this important study by Stephen Green He discusses the decisive part played by the USA in supporting Israel in its military campaigns during the last twenty years and its foreign policy among the Arab States. This has been of mutual benefit, to America in its relations with Soviet Russia in the Middle East and to Israel in its struggle to survive. Is the situation of Israeli dominance now changing with Syria's new weaponry from the Soviet Union? Syria is now equipped with the SS-21s which are a threat to Israeli air bases It could be used in conjunction with the multiple launch rocket systems, MLRS, already supplied by the Soviets to Syria 'Syria has these weapons deployed and poised with a more advanced command, control and communications system behind them than the IDF has ever faced in battle' Mr Green concludes that 'Israel may have missed its chance to take pre-emptive action against Syria' The other nearby Arab states may also step up their military capacities

The Commonwealth and Britain (Routledge and Kegan Paul £6 95.) Dennis Austin has contributed this short monograph, as Chatham House Paper No 41, commissioned by the Royal Institute of International Affairs The Institute itself does not express any opinion of its own. Perhaps inevitably, Mr Brittan has a story of decline by Britain in the changeover from Empire to Commonwealth Nonetheless he accepts that Britain still has a considerable part to play among the 49 members of the Commonwealth, albeit it is on occasion greatly out of step with the other members The question of South African sanctions is an obvious example. He concedes that for the Commonwealth to have achieved a position of 'qualified amiability' is 'no small achievement, and there are problems enough to engage its attention' Mr. Brittan concludes that Britain should be 'able to keep its ties with the Commonwealth in sensible repair'. The Commonwealth is not in any way dependent upon British membership or leadership It regards itself as an institution of value to its members, with a large secretariat of four hundred members headed by the Secretary-General.

Education for a World Adrift (Tabb House, £5 95) The republication of Sir Richard Livingstone's celebrated study of the principles of education, written in 1942, comes at an appropriate time, when education once more is the subject of national discussion. A distinguished classicist, Sir Richard was insistant that Greek culture should play a part in the formulation of education Further he argued that Christianity should be accepted for its spiritual role This new edition has been edited by Dr James Munson, who has contributed a substantial Introduction on the life and work of Sir Richard He concludes 'He stands today as a prophet who. recalls us to the truths of the past, of our history and make-up as a people of our Christian heritage' He had no use for 'multi-faiths' in education Whether he would have modified his view in our current multi-racial society is doubtful

ORDER FORM

To **The Subscription Manager,**

Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG

I enclose herewith my cheque for . , for a year's subscription

[For rates, see inside front cover]

Name

Address

THE RESURRECTION OF ARISTOCRACY

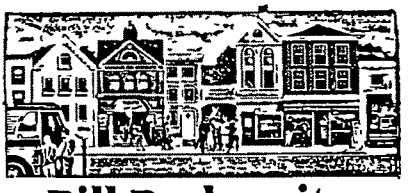
by RUDOLPH CARLYLE EVANS

Dedicated to the noble ones of all races

Obtainable only from Loompanics Unlimited, P O Box 1197,
Port Townsend, Washington 98368 USA $12 95

The rebirth of heroism in America

Local Heroes



Bill Berkowitz

'Local Heroes' is the latest book by Bill Berkowitz, of Arlington, Massachusetts, whose previous books include 'Community Dreams' (offbeat ideas for improving one's neighbourhood) It is a wonderful series of interviews with more than twenty American 'local heroes', people working at a community level, interspersed with Berkowitz's reflections on heroism — **Journal of Social Inventions (U.K.)**

$17 95 (cloth with photographs)

Lexington Books, D C Heath and Company,
125 Spring Street, Lexington, Massachusetts 02173 USA
(800-235-3565)

THE WILLIAM HERSCHEL SOCIETY

HERSCHEL HOUSE, 19 New King Street, Bath

President Patrick Moore Chairman E F J Ring

To mark the 250th anniversary of the birth of Sir William Herschel, K G O on 15th November, 1738 a programme of celebrations is planned for Saturday, 12th November, 1988

For full particulars and information regarding membership of the William Herschel Society please write to The Hon Secretary, 30 Meadow Park, Bathford, Bath BA1 7PZ (0225) 859529

- 1 DEC 1988

THE ROUND ROBIN

BY

RODERICK STUART-AXON

A Novel Venture in International Disarmament.

Now Available from the Publishers.

THC
TRUELOVE HART & COMPANY.
28 Commercial Road, GUILDFORD, Surrey.
Telephone: (0483) 503555.

ISBN: 1 85421 003 3 U.K. Price £11·95 inc P&P.

Printed by MANDEVILLE PRESS, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ, and published by the CONTEMPORARY REVIEW CO LTD, 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG
Telephone 01-831 7791. All business matters should be addressed to the publishers

Contemporary Review

122nd YEAR OF PUBLICATION

AUGUST 1988

GLASNOST IN EASTERN EUROPE
Martin McCauley

HONG KONG DISCOURSE
Andrew Hook

ULSTER TRAGEDY DRAGGING ON TOO LONG
John A. Oliver

THE RIPPER REPORT: A HUNDRED-YEAR STOCKTAKING
Richard Whittington-Egan

and other articles together with an eight-page Literary Supplement

£1.30

Contemporary Review

incorporating The Fortnightly

August 1988 Vol. 253 No. 1471 Founded 1866

Contents

		Page
Glasnost in Eastern Europe	Martin McCauley	**57**
Hong Kong Discourse	Andrew Hook	**63**
Ulster Tragedy Dragging on Too Long	John A. Oliver	**67**
Panama in Crisis	Jan Knippers Black	**72**
The French Connection	Paul Rose	**75**
The Midas Touch	Frances Hutchinson	**80**
The Ripper Report: a Hundred-Year Stocktaking	Richard Whittington-Egan	**84**
Talent to Please — The Phillips Collection	Muriel Julius	**95**
Ruffians in Robes	John Elsom	**100**

LITERARY SUPPLEMENT **105**

Frank Longford, Kenneth Lindsay, Laurence Tanner, Richard Mullen, Molly Tibbs, Betty Abel

SHORTER REVIEWS **111**

Editor:
ROSALIND WADE, O.B.E.

Associate Editor:
BETTY ABEL

Editorial Advisers:
PROFESSOR ESMOND WRIGHT
PROFESSOR PAUL WILKINSON

Fine Arts Correspondent:
ERNLE MONEY

Music Correspondent:
DAVID FINGLETON

Finance Director:
LEONARD SKIPP

© 1988. Published monthly by the Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG, England, and printed in England by Mandeville Press, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ. U.S. Mailing Agent: Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Second Class postage paid at Rahway N.J. Annual subscription (including postage); U.K. £18.50, U.S.A. and Canada $65.00. Rates for all other countries on application. Copies can be sent by airmail outside U.S. and Canada: extra costs given on request. U.S. Postmaster: please send all address corrections to 'Contemporary Review', c/o Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Contemporary Review. (ISSN/0010/7565)

Contemporary Review

Founded 1866 **incorporating The Fortnightly**

August 1988 **Vol. 253** **No. 1471**

GLASNOST IN EASTERN EUROPE

by Martin McCauley

THE election of Karoly Grosz as the new Hungarian communist party leader on 22 May 1988 was a watershed in east European politics. First of all it was preceded by repeated calls for Janos Kadar, party leader since 1956, to stand down Informed sources stated that this was the third time that Kadar's colleagues had tried to engineer his removal. Then, except for a closed session on 22 May to elect the new leader, the three day party conference was open to over 200 foreign journalists, offering them a rare glimpse into the inner workings of the Hungarian regime. The package agreed by the conference binds the Hungarian party to extensive democratisation This involves greater accountability of party officials to party members, much greater openness in discussing party affairs and the right of initiatives to be launched from below. Not only will party members become more involved in the policy making process but non-party initiatives are to be welcomed Independent associations have a right to exist and it is expected that this will be enshrined in law In this way the independent trade union and youth organisations which have sprung up can be officially tolerated.

Hungarian reformers have called for the separation of party and state and the legalisation of non-communist parties. Their aim is a multi-party, pluralistic democracy, guaranteed by the rule of law Karoly Grosz has come out in favour of the separation of party and state but the fact that he remains Prime Minister makes it uncertain, to say the least, what he understands by the concept Two Politburo members have referred to Grosz's holding of both offices — officially impossible in the Soviet Union — as only 'temporary' until parliament elects a new Prime Minister later this year

Many in the West see Hungary as a model for the Soviet Union but this is a myth The New Economic Mechanism, launched in 1968, has failed to launch the country into an era of high prosperity Economic performance during the 1980s has been very disappointing Per capita hard currency debt in Hungary is now the highest in the socialist world, including Poland Just as in Poland importing dollars has not guaranteed growth or competitiveness Why then has Hungary failed? Primarily because the economic reforms were never really put into practice

Hungary is a small country and the opportunities and temptations for interference on the part of party and government have proved irresistible.

If a major industrial concern appeared to be heading for disaster under the reform, it appealed to Budapest and it was always bailed out. So serious is the situation now in Hungary that new taxes this year are officially expected to depress purchasing power by 10% but sceptical Hungarians expect living standards to plummet 30% this year All this paradoxically helps Grosz Every Hungarian accepts that the present system, epitomised by Janos Kadar, is out of date and has to be radically overhauled Market socialism appears to be the only viable solution. Significantly one of those newly elected to the Politburo is Reszo Nyers, the father of the 1968 reform package

Another new arrival in the Politburo is Imre Pozsgay, who is even more radical than Mikhail Gorbachev. He wants public accountability with a vengeance Publish communist party Central Committee minutes, including debates, hold open elections for party offices and limit the term of office of party officials are only some of his proposals

The fact that Pozsgay has been elected to the key party body signifies that Grosz and the top party leadership accept that economic reform cannot succeed if it is not accompanied by political reform. Political reform also involves the party withdrawing from day to day interference in the conduct of government and the functioning of the economy. Grosz has stated that the leading role of the party will be maintained But what is meant by the 'leading role of the party' or as it is sometimes put the 'hegemony of the party'? By allowing party members to call party officials to account and also to launch initiatives from below the cherished doctrine of democratic centralism — in short the centre knows best (in Stalin's time the boss knows best) — is being diluted. Allowing genuine elections for party posts and probably non-party candidates to stand for and be elected to high government posts undermines the power of the nomenclatura It consists of a list of posts which can only be filled with party approval and a list of those qualified to fill those posts Some radical Hungarians would like the communist party to be reduced to a body only responsible for relations with the Soviet Union and other socialist states Karoly Grosz would certainly not agree

The one party state will remain for the time being, even Imre Pozsgay does not propose a multi-party system but due to his emphasis on individual freedom and responsibility does not regard it as inconceivable that a 'loyal socialist opposition party' could eventually emerge

Grosz is a hard-headed, pragmatic and skilled politician who is ambitious for Hungary to be a leader among socialist states He insists that *perestroika* in Hungary involves a new relationship between rulers and ruled His words are reminiscent of the Prague Spring of 1968 when socialism with a human face radiated hope for a season He appears to want to assimilate into Hungarian political life all that was positive about the Hungarian revolution of 1956, the Prague Spring of 1968 and radical socialist thinking since then What is striking about his and other reformers' utterances is that one searches in vain for Soviet inspiration behind the new ideas Hungarian socialist thinking is remarkably Magyar

in flavour Indeed if Hungarian officials are asked for a definition of Marxism-Leninism they veer away and refer to socialism, socialism in Hungary.

What are the limits to change in Hungary? Will the Soviet Union intervene if and when it deems that the process of renewal in Hungary has gone too far? The apostles of socialism with a human face in Czechoslovakia in 1968 did not believe the Soviet Union would invade Has a new era dawned in Soviet-east European relations, one in which anything goes providing it is labelled socialist, or will Moscow still claim that it has a monopoly on the definition of socialism? When in Yugoslavia in April 1988 Gorbachev was asked about Soviet intervention in Hungary in 1956 and Czechoslovakia in 1968. He declined to condemn them outright mentioning that there were special circumstances involved. Hence, given the opportunity, he did not consign the Brezhnev doctrine — the right of the USSR to intervene in the socialist world if it believed that socialism was under threat — to the Greek calends The parameters of Soviet tolerance are therefore unknown They will depend to a considerable extent on how successful Gorbachev is in reforming the USSR

Karoly Grosz is likely to advocate very radical solutions to Hungary's malaise and engage in a dialogue with the population but is unlikely to try to implement them in the short term. He must be convinced that Gorbachevism is the wave of the future in the Soviet Union, otherwise he could be committing political suicide Karoly Grosz is too clear headed and realistic for that

If it is spring time for *glasnost* in Budapest it is still winter in East Berlin. Nevertheless that sturdy plant is beginning to penetrate the ice of official SED (communist party) disdain More positive comments are beginning to appear in official party publications The days when senior members of the party elite dominated the discussion now appear to be over. Until recently the official line, as enunciated by Kurt Hager, Central Committee secretary for ideology, culture and science, was studiously to avoid what was happening in the Soviet Union Hager once quipped: 'If my neighbour repapers his house, do I have to follow suit?' The attitude was that *perestroika* and *glasnost* were fine for the USSR, given the economic and social problems which had surfaced there The GDR, which enjoys an ever expanding economy, rising living standards and social stability, simply did not need them

The change in tack has been heralded by Professor Otto Reinhold, Rector of the SED Academy of Social Sciences and Professor Rolf Reissig of the Institute of Scientific Socialism They are less doctrinaire in approach and have perceived that, although the SED can ignore *perestroika* and *glasnost* in the short term, they will have to be accommodated in the long term

A recent example was a long, detailed review by Reinhold in the party's theoretical journal *Einheit* of four volumes of Gorbachev's collected speeches which the SED's own publishing house had brought out and the General Secretary's *Perestroika and the new Thinking for our Country*

and the World The review is an affirmative re-evaluation of the Gorbachev era. 'Perestroika in the Soviet Union, which has begun under the leadership of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union, is certainly a difficult task but the power and abilities of an experienced party and a whole people are involved in the process', was Reinhold's considered view. Internationally *perestroika* and *glasnost* had improved the Soviet Union's image 'significantly' Nothing remotely so positive had previously appeared in the official GDR media.

The publication of Gorbachev's *oeuvre* was a turning point His words had previously been censored because they touched on subjects which the SED leadership would have preferred left alone. For instance, the General Secretary's devastating critique of the shortcomings of the Soviet economy, delivered at the CC plenum in January 1987, went unreported in *Neues Deutschland,* the SED's own newspaper

The SED has not made known how many of the Soviet leader's books and brochures have appeared in the GDR but *Perestroika* has gone through four printings, amounting to 160,000 copies Since so many copies were printed it is quite clear that the demand has been huge It is even probable that the demand has not yet been satisfied.

The realisation that events in the USSR are of wider significance has penetrated academic and high party circles but has been obvious to ordinary party members for some time The fact that the official GDR media studiously ignored the waves which *perestroika* and *glasnost* were causing did not escape the attention of the average communist who, in order to become fully informed, had merely to switch on West German television There are now 2,328,331 full and candidate members in the SED. This means that every sixth GDR citizen over the age of 18 years is a party member Despite this very high level of membership there is also a high level of turnover In 1987, 22,137 full and candidate members left the party It is not clear how many left of their own volition and how many were expelled Whatever the reasons this abnormally high rate of departures suggests a certain amount of disquiet at the base of the party At the regular monthly meetings party members are becoming less and willing to tolerate platitudes from party officials 'Those who only repeat what you can read in the newspapers are not taken seriously', said one party secretary 'Comrades want to be taken seriously, to be given challenging tasks and to become involved. They have no time for those who evade discussing problems '

Not all party matters can, of course, be discussed in public but some of the comments made in the Soviet Union must provide rich food for thought For instance, the Soviet leader's bold statement that no party enjoyed a monopoly of the truth and that some of the theoretical definitions of socialism have got stuck in a groove since the 1930s and 1940s

Such heretical thoughts have previously only been voiced in the GDR by dissidents such as Robert Havemann One party group leader in an east Berlin factory has revealed that intense, passionate debate takes place at party meetings over whether *perestroika* only affects foreign policy or

whether it also applies to the work process This would appear to reveal that officials have been hitherto been restricting restructuring to foreign affairs whereas the workers, well informed by the western media, know that its primary thrust is intended for the work place

Hager's metaphor is no longer relevant since Gorbachev is intent on rebuilding the whole house He has opened up a debate about what socialism is and has revised the stage of socialism which the Soviet Union has reached. Under Brezhnev the USSR was proudly stated to be enjoying developed socialism This implied that almost all the thorny problems of socialism had been solved and that the country was marching forward to communism Gorbachev has consigned this over sanguine analysis to the rubbish bin of history. According to him the Soviet Union has only achieved the stage of developing socialism. This implies that all the assumptions which underlay the perceptions of socialism in the past have to be re-thought Ideology has also to be restructured A previous leader of the Soviet Union, Yury Andropov, was wont to confess· 'We have no ready-made solutions'. Gorbachev would echo Andropov's sentiments. The Soviet leader is calling for a re-examination of the foundations on which Soviet socialism has been built for 60 years It is understandable that the GDR leaders find this a distasteful and painful challenge

It is instructive that Reinhold's review which was printed in *Einheit* and was thus intended for the party elite was reprinted in *Neues Deutschland* and thereby brought to the attention of the whole GDR population. Shortly afterwards *Neues Deutschland* carried Nina Andreeva's hard hitting attack on *perestroika* which had appeared in *Sovetskaya Rossiya.* The SED newspaper also reprinted *Pravda's* equally forthright defence of *perestroika.* Neither of these articles would have meant much to the average GDR reader without some orientation from Reinhold

Although basically positive Reinhold's review does not engage in full frontal *glasnost* For instance he does not mention either Josef Stalin or Leonid Brezhnev in his essay Coming to terms with the past is going to be very difficult for the present generation of SED leaders One indication of the acute embarrassment felt in East Berlin at some of the present day revelations emanating from Moscow is the way the information on the reassessment of Bukharin and others was treated It was announced in Moscow on 5 February 1988 that a Politburo commission was to be set up to re-examine the cases of Old Bolsheviks such as Nikolai Bukharin, Alexsei Rykov and eighteen others who had been condemned to death in 1938 by the USSR Supreme Court as a 'result of flagrant violations of socialist legality . and falsifications'.

It was stated that those executed had been juridically rehabilitated The Politburo commission was to look into their Party records with a view to their political rehabilitation. This information has neither been officially published nor commented upon in the GDR media

Why should the SED be embarrassed about events in the Soviet Union in the 1930s? After all the SED only came into existence in 1946 The average GDR man and woman in the street would draw a direct parallel

between Stalinist behaviour in the USSR in the 1930s and Stalinist behaviour by the SED elite in the GDR in the 1940s and 1950s. It would escape no one's attention that most of the present SED leadership were up and coming officials during those decades The average age of an SED member is now 45 years but the average Politburo member is 65 years old. Eight of the twenty-two top party officials are well into their seventies They represent the Brezhnev generation waiting for restructuring It is asking too much of them to engage in self-criticism about their past.

Karoly Grosz's election as Hungarian party leader will shorten the time the older generation of leaders in the GDR can stay in office If Gorbachev succeeds in renewing the CPSU leadership at the XIX conference in late June the shelf life of the GDR elite will become even shorter Were Gorbachev's prescription that officials should normally only serve two five year periods become CPSU policy, the SED would be obliged sooner or later to follow suit.

If this rule were applied to the present SED Politburo almost all of them would face redundancy. No wonder they must be apprehensive about opening their copy of *Pravda* every morning!

Perestroika and *glasnost* are not transient phenomena in the Soviet Union Eastern Europe no longer has a choice to follow or wait for the CPSU to change course. It is countries like the GDR which will have to change course

---

[Martin McCauley is Senior Lecturer in Soviet and East European Studies at the School of Slavonic and East European Studies, University of London. He is at present writing a book about Gorbachev and *perestroika*]

HONG KONG DISCOURSE

by Andrew Hook

FOR English Literature read Translation Studies Why? Ultimately because of the crucial moment in Hong Kong's history set to occur in 1997 As far as many of Hong Kong's young and dedicated students are concerned, the traditional canon of English literature is already a dead duck For me, whose sense of the Far East has always been much more a question of Conrad, Kipling and E M Forster than Hollywood films or television documentaries, this was bad news But what quickly became clear was that, for those on the spot, 1997 represents a future not to be gambled on power is power, and the fading of empire means among much else the fading of the literature that helped to create and sustain it. Today, English remains the language of government, of law, and of business in Hong Kong; that is why the ordinary British visitor encounters so little in the way of problems — he may on occasion find himself compelled to try his hand at chopsticks — but he is unlikely ever to need to essay Chinese

For the people of Hong Kong, however, the future is more problematical. The big question concerns life — and language — after 1997 Clearly, once Hong Kong reverts to being part of China, the language of government and administration, and at some point the language of the law, will become Chinese This is a truth universally acknowledged Equally emphatic, however, is the insistence that China's Hong Kong will still require English English is, and will remain, the language of international finance and commerce, and what else is it about Hong Kong that underlies China's desire for repossession? The new China is embarked upon a programme of rapid mixed economy development and expansion — in this programme Hong Kong will provide an unmatched source of economic strength and commercial expertise But that provision will require the retention of English the essential linguistic context within which every aspect of the most up-to-date forms of business technology operates. Hence, for English, there will unquestionably be life after 1997.

Is there evidence to support this theory? The replacement of traditional courses in English Literature by Translation Studies may be no more than a symbol — but it is a highly potent symbol all the same The commitment of Hong Kong students, their will to succeed, I found almost alarming The various institutions of higher education I was able to visit all had this in common· a burgeoning student population queueing up to take advantage of whatever educational opportunity was available When I was told about the students to be seen at the international airport, I hardly took in what was being said But on the night I was flying out, there they were, and suddenly I understood In the largest airport restaurant area, table after table was occupied not by dark-suited businessmen, nor by harassed tourists, but by busy Hong Kong students with their books, their papers, and calculators Study-space in their colleges is at a premium; home is

usually small and crowded, so why not the tables and chairs of the airport? (Where but in Hong Kong would such usage be tolerated?) If such students as these see their future in Translation Studies rather than in Shakespeare, Milton and Wordsworth, their opinion is not to be lightly set aside

Alternative points of view do of course exist More than once I was told that standards in English were falling The command of written and spoken English by entrants to Hong Kong University is apparently not what it used to be (I seem to remember hearing something similar said of new undergraduates at where ? Well, every British university from Aberdeen to York) But the man from the Hong Kong Education Department I spoke to offered a local answer If there was a decline, it applied only at the very top end of the scale; English had once been the preserve of Hong Kong's social elite the wealthy class who had traditionally sent their sons and daughters to complete their education in Europe Through the current secondary school system, English was now available to an enormously wider range of Hong Kong's young people Inevitably there were variations in standards — but the number learning English was still growing. Whatever the rights and wrongs of this argument, I have to say that I was tremendously impressed by the spoken English of the students I met at the college with which I was particularly concerned no doubt they were among the best of the students there, but at least the standard they set was an admirable one Whatever reservations one might have about the passing of English Literature, the future of Translation Studies seemed safe in such hands

But is there evidence in the wider context to support the theory of the necessary survival of written and spoken English in the Hong Kong of the future? On such a short visit as mine, all evidence is little more than symbolic — but the symbols were certainly plain to see Hong Kong is a great bee-hive of activity — and none are more active than the builders Everywhere buildings go up — and up Ten stories torn down to make way for twenty; now twenty giving way to forty On all sides the ubiquitous wooden scaffolding spirals higher and higher Highest of all in Central — the business section — is the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, a magnificent modernist construction built, according at least to popular legend, at the fabulous cost of five billion Hong Kong dollars But, and this is the point, the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank's reign as Hong Kong's tallest silver finger in the sky is fated to be short-lived Even now, in its forest of scaffolding, the Bank of China — mainland China that is — is steadily rising; soon, well before 1997, it will take over as Hong Kong's tallest building, thus neatly symbolizing the transfer of power to Hong Kong's new masters

Take the (English-built) hovercraft past Kowloon and the New Territories and up the Pearl River estuary to Shekou, and even in a single day one can see the other side of China's determination to cash in on Hong Kong's economic miracle On the road to Guangzhou (Canton that was) one passes through the Shenzhen Special Economic Zone, a section of

South China nearest to Hong Kong where economic life is being rapidly reorganized along lines quite alien to the traditions of Marxist-Leninist — not to mention Maoist — China The Zone even has its own internal border checkpoints, designed apparently to keep out not foreigners but ordinary Chinese: only the specially skilled are allowed to enter Within the Zone itself, development and activity are evident enough Although inevitably much more dispersed, almost as much building appears to be going on as in Hong Kong itself But the differences remain dramatic No skyscrapers here. Chinese legislation requires that new buildings over six stories install a lift, hence six stories is as high as they go

Even more striking is the absence of advanced technology and mechanical aids humanpower, shovels and baskets, remain the order of the day Inside and outside the Zone, agriculture seems trapped in a similar time-warp· ploughs are everywhere powered by water-buffalo — not a tractor in sight Did collectivization ever reach South China? Small farms, each one with its large fish and duck-pond, and immense flocks of white duck and geese, look as though they have already outlasted centuries of changing political regimes

Despite this, the road to Canton is itself an image of economic energy and activity Totally inadequate for the traffic it is required to carry, private cars are rarely to be seen, but the streams of lorries, vans, buses, and slow-moving agricultural carts, is endless Hence the need to risk death by overtaking the alternative would be never to arrive at all And still on every side things are happening the road itself being improved, new buildings going up, new side roads to towns or villages being made, what look like petrol stations being created This is what US Highway One must have looked like around 1900 Hong Kong and China may still be light-years apart in terms of modern economic development, but South China and its Special Economic Zone certainly symbolize the direction in which the new China seems determined to head With its dry brown and green landscapes, southern China may remind one of the more undeveloped areas of southern Europe; but a closer look makes it seem more like such an area when it has received a massive injection of European Community funds

If the Special Economic Zone is a true symbol of new China, then the future of English in Hong Kong certainly is secure As has been said, 1997 will certainly see Putonghua (Mandarin) installed as the language of government — and no doubt in time all aspects of the formal administration of Hong Kong will be conducted in the same language But those who insist that English will still be needed inside the Bank of China as it goes about its business are probably correct.

Translation Studies, then, are inevitably destined to go from strength to strength Because not only English is in question Cantonese is the native language of Hong Kong, hence the translation map will require routes from Putonghua to Cantonese as well as from both to English In such a promising situation for the trained translator, it is hardly surprising that young students have often voted with their feet against traditional

courses in English Literature But in fact the surprising thing is just how long English Literature has held on.

Hong Kong is a society in a hurry — and not only in terms of the ceaseless bustle of its traffic It is a society conditioned to change. Walking around the streets what one misses above all is a sense of the past. It is as though Hong Kong had no past, no history The oldest things one sees are traditional British double-decker buses, and, more remarkably, old-style British tramcars Very little else St. John's Anglican Church is a genuine nineteenth-century building, dwarfed now, like the little Anglican church in Wall Street, by the towering banks and office blocks that surround it Basically, much of the Hong Kong myth proves quite simply to be true There is a sense in the streets of economic dynamism, of energy and purpose and the will to succeed, Rolls-Royces do seem to be the commonest British-made cars one sees, in some streets every second shop does seem to be a bank Perhaps this is indeed what an enterprise culture is like

The City Polytechnic of Hong Kong is situated in a tower block the lower floors of which are filled by a vast shopping complex To get into the Poly you have to pass by row after row of boutique-style shops selling everything from designer clothes to cultured pearls Inside the Poly every corner seems to be occupied by a computer; and ranks of students — many of them undoubtedly following courses in the kind of Business and Management which are clearly flourishing beneath their feet — patiently await their turn for access Soon, however, the City Poly will be moving out to a new campus site where it will undergo instant expansion to help meet Hong Kong's ever-increasing demand for higher education Within the next three years it proposes to appoint no less than seven hundred and fifty new members of staff. Some of that number will inevitably be experts in that field which here too already has its place on the curriculum Not — you've guessed it — English Literature, but Translation Studies

---

[Andrew D Hook is Professor of English at the University of Glasgow]

ULSTER TRAGEDY DRAGGING ON TOO LONG

by John A. Oliver

BRITAIN has let the tragedy in Ulster drag on for far too long. The problems are of course difficult, complex and dangerous But the plain fact is that Britain has now been in direct legal control of this part of the United Kingdom for 16 years and in general control for 19 years Direct Rule is still the form of government least objected to; and British Ministers have been doing a useful if thankless job in managing day-to-day affairs and in dealing with local crises They lead a hard life and deserve our sympathy and respect. HM Treasury are also to be saluted for funding the whole affair so generously

At anything above that level of management, however, Direct Rule has been a disappointment I speak not of the individuals but of the system and of the backing it gets from the British public I have never been a member of any political party, in Ulster or Great Britain, though I have worked with most of them I am an Ulsterman wholly committed to the Union of Northern Ireland with Great Britain because that is in the best interests of all concerned throughout the British Isles

Local people on all sides have of course hindered progress by many wrong, wicked and foolish acts I have already dealt with that unhappy aspect in a long article published in *Policy Studies* (London, April 1987), copied by the *Belfast Telegraph* (June 1987) and reprinted again by the Friends of the Union (London, Autumn 1987) All that being so I need say little more here about the contribution of the local people I wish instead to speak *to the opinion-formers in the British polity,* to help them get behind the harsh rhetoric of the Ulster political stage and the disgraceful street scenes, the cruel IRA murders and the harmful tit-for-tat revenge killings I hope I may be able to show why some hotheads have been misbehaving and why so many moderates share their feelings even if they express them differently

When Direct Rule was being brusquely imposed in 1972 many farsighted local people objected, arguing that — if given the military aid to which any civil power is entitled in a serious emergency — we could manage better on our own than any incoming English Administration could ever do; and that while it is easy to destroy a Parliament and Government, it is a lot harder to replace them.

Most of us, moderates and liberals living and working in Ulster, took the other view, believing that the revolutionary situation of 1968-1972 had outgrown the powers of any small devolved government, that it had taken on international aspects and that nothing short of the experience, standing and authority of the sovereign British Government could deal effectively with it We had done much in the 1950s and 1960s to build up fine new industries and to support them with an attractive infrastructure. We assumed that everyone concerned would push the work further and strengthen the economy Today, the economy is in a poor state despite

excellent work by individual firms and entrepreneurs and despite admirable co-operation and restraint by trade unions That decline is due in part to the continuing instability and uncertainty We fully expected that with the aid of a world-wide network of embassies and consulates, bit by bit inward investment to Ulster would reach far beyond what one or two small development offices in New York and Brussels had been able to do In fact, inward investment has largely dried up

Few improvements would ease the problem of alleged job discrimination as much as fuller employment and a tight job market — certainly much more than fatuous new laws and statistical targets will do But mainland residents seem to have settled quietly for an acceptable level of unemployment in Ulster, just as 17 years ago they settled for 'an acceptable level of violence' We in Ulster are not willing to settle for either, and let it be made clear that nationalist workers for one reason or another are always liable to suffer most under either affliction

Where we counted on peace we have war, not only war but excrescences such as para-military clubs, protection money, financial rackets and so on that will be hard ever to root out

Where we hoped for gradual reconciliation we have a community bitterly divided on grounds of citizenship, of belonging, of passports, of loyalty and disloyalty, of hunger strikes, of maddening IRA funeral displays, of national flags, and of one-sided interference by the Irish Republic

Far from building up democracy we have been left with a dangerous impasse and a worrying flight from politics, not just of a few well-known individuals but of a whole body of moderate professional and business people and trade unionists who now leave politics to the hard-pressed and unfairly maligned politicians

Those calamities, as we see them, are not all the immediate result of Direct Rule by any means, but the prolonged, rigid and dispirited Direct Rule has, to say the very least, presided over, accepted and in a sense confirmed that melancholy sequence of decline and disappointment.

Yet Ulster is a country of unusual paradox. terrible problems of constitution, of politics and of violence alongside a vibrant scene of achievement in enterprise, farming, housing, schooling, health services, cultural affairs and much else in an atmosphere of warmth, humanity, good humour and real day-to-day collaboration in the workplace To us, therefore, as Ulster men and women it is all the more gruesome to see such decline and disillusion where there could be progress, harmony and advance if only the British people could have managed in the 16 years to harness to the political plough the undoubted gifts and energies of those who have led such admirable sides of Ulster life

All Irish Nationalism, benign or malign, is a reaction against Britain's past, present and future The first priority ought therefore to be to get all-round Anglo-Irish affairs on a sound footing Ulster would then be more likely to fall into perspective and its tensions lessen Instead the terrible mistake is made of treating Irish problems as the fag-ends of

public business, a tiresome side-show We on the other hand eagerly scan reports of election manifestos, party conferences, select committees, assessments of the year or the parliamentary term for signs of wisdom, reasoned argument or leadership; but we scan in vain Where some of the best brains should be engaged on the tragic Irish problem it seems that the highest aim is just 'to contain the trouble'. While most of us foresaw in 1972 that Direct Rule would have to carry on for some years, we confess we did not foresee that the form it took would prove to be so rigid, so barren, so unimaginative Let us take just a mere five examples of its sterility

We enjoy close links with lowland Scotland; we speak the same dialect, our customs have much in common, we savour the same ethnic foods, we can see Scotland on a clear day, our main surface contact with Great Britain is through Stranraer and the south of Scotland Did it never arise, in all those 16 years, that a Scottish Secretary of State might have drawn a warmer response than an unbroken procession of estimable Secretaries of State from English constituencies? I can say that of all the visiting statesmen with whom I dealt the one who most readily saw the needs of the people and who, on a quick visit, set up the best human contacts was a senior Labour Cabinet Minister from Dundee

Each Direct Rule team follows rigidly and blindly the British party political pattern — a Conservative team after a Conservative victory or a Labour team after a Labour victory. Has a little coalition-building by including a Labour Junior Minister in a Conservative team and a Conservative Junior in a Labour team never been considered? In Britain, all support the British Constitution, honour the Union Jack and work by the same Parliamentary rules Given the British genius for pragmatism and compromise, the setting up of a modest example on those lines ought not to tax the general arrangements too heavily What amazes us in Ulster is how successive governments have the gall to urge power-sharing or coalition in the vastly difficult conditions of Ulster

Another missed opportunity lay in the personal make-up of Direct Rule teams of Ministers, that is to say the comically colonial spectacle of English Ministers flying in and out every few days to run their colony from behind barricades Of course, it was right to have a clean break in 1972 and to send a fresh, clear-cut British team to take over. But from say 1975 onwards one Ulster man or woman rooted and living in Ulster could well have been added each year by bringing in leading Ulster people of proven worth, perhaps already in the House of Lords or sent there specially in order to satisfy the needs of Parliamentary accountability By careful, sensitive action we could by now have had a full team of Ulster Ministers working under 'mainland' control

Even within the fixed and stereotyped system, was the inclusion of a woman as Minister never contemplated if only to draw a better response from the new generation of emancipated Ulster women that had emerged since the 1950s, especially noticeable in the Catholic Church?

A fifth example of utter rigidity is the practice of legislating on most

Ulster affairs at Westminster by means of Order in Council (allowing only 90 minutes of debate and no amendment) — a useful device in the turmoil of 1972 but still throttling the democratic process

Another and separate reason for poor government performance has obviously been failure to deal effectively with the IRA, who are clearly winning two wars, the military and the propaganda This in turn stems partly from a failure in perception. The IRA are carrying on a declared war against Britain, although this is rarely admitted It is easier and more comforting to let it appear that it is all a sordid matter of local religious fanatics fighting one another within Ulster That falsehood is clearly reflected in a favoured phrase about the risk of the fighting 'spilling over' into mainland Britain We see it differently We see the IRA engaged (in their own open words) in 'the armed struggle' against Britain, letting their bullets often fall short, so to speak, in Ulster; finding it easier and cheaper to shoot some poor part-time UDR man on his milk-round in the Fermanagh lanes or a woman census enumerator in Tyrone than to mount attacks in London, defending their brutal action by declaring that such men and women are legitimate targets as 'the agents of Britain'

The IRA outrages that catch your interest are, alas, those with a sentimental flavour — death at a funeral, a church door or an armistice service We are a lot more worried by the steady stream of individual killings, maimings, bombings, bereavements, destruction of jobs and acts of intimidation that are perpetrated every day and go barely noticed in Great Britain

As the ill-judged and ill-fated Anglo-Irish Agreement of November 1985 is now discredited it is necessary to discuss only two aspects of it. When Ulster people have asked for the Agreement to be altered (or set aside in some particular) they have been firmly told that this is a solemn treaty, a binding agreement between sovereign nations, registered at the United Nations and so cannot be departed from Very well. How does it then come that nothing has been done about Article 12, which provided in clear terms for the setting up of an Anglo-Irish Parliamentary body and which promised support for such a body from both Governments? If the agreement was regarded so highly why was it not followed up quickly by sending an all-party delegation to Dublin in December 1985 to start making plans? Three years have passed (indeed seven, because the Inter-Parliamentary body was 'adumbrated' in 1981) and still nothing has been done

Secondly, many people in Ulster think that the worst mistake and most offensive action has been to disregard democracy so completely in practice while upholding it in splendid theory all over the world. The shameful story of a clumsy presentation of the Agreement, ignoring the massive, orderly and peaceful demonstration at Belfast City Hall in November 1985, and the 15 bye-elections in the depth of that winter; a refusal to grant a referendum although great trouble was taken to hold referenda in Scotland and Wales There is a growing anger among many thoughtful people in Ulster over the failure of the so-called British political parties

to face the electorate there

What some people in Ulster now want is a break from local politics and the right to go to the polls and vote for or against the British parties, for or against HM Government, and for or against taxation that hits them as much as it does voters in Great Britain A deputation of workers from the Harland and Wolff shipyard (which the London and Dublin press constantly refer to as 'Loyalist dominated' or 'bigoted' or 'exclusively Protestant') backed by a memorandum from 45 trade union officials attended at the Labour Party Conference in Brighton, September 1987 and asked to be allowed to join the British Labour Party. They were turned away empty-handed as to admit members from Ulster would 'give the wrong signals' Heed should be paid to a rising movement in Ulster, led by some able people and supported by generous popular subscriptions, called the *Campaign for Equal Citizenship* It might have been imagined that this idea would appeal to the fair-minded English people· equal citizenship, a departure from local animosities and the basic democratic right to vote for or against their Government

If, in the last analysis, Ulster should decide one day to go independent — which God forfend as it would be a bad outcome for all concerned especially the Irish Republic, but which I look on as a 40/60 possibility — then some of the reasons for UDI will surely be traced back to the general situation as outlined. Insensitive handling by the superior power will have been a strong force in driving Ulster into fretful independence. It is simply not right to assert that 'only the unionists can break the union'

[John A. Oliver, CB, PhD, idc, Hon RTPI and Zimbabwe Independence Medal was for forty years a member of the Northern Ireland Civil Service but has since 1976 worked in different parts of the world His autobiography *Working at Stormont* was published by the Institute of Public Administration in 1978.]

PANAMA IN CRISIS

by Jan Knippers Black

WHETHER or not US security is at stake in the Panama Canal, US military and political leaders have long been convinced that is the case Thus, the indictment of Panama's ruling general, Manuel Antonio Noriega, and the airing of his many categories of criminal activity pose a serious challenge to the Reagan Administration It can no longer openly back Noriega, in fact, it has felt obliged to engage in a public display of opposition Nevertheless, given the stories that the drug-dealing general has yet to tell, he could hardly be left alive and with nothing left to lose in his relations with the US Nor would precedent suggest that the US is apt to leave the resolution of the current legitimacy crisis and the future direction of Panamanian politics to the discretion of the Panamanians

For public consumption at home, Noriega is predictably attributing his current altercation with Uncle Sam to US intentions to hang on to the canal well past the year 2000 In that, he is not entirely off the mark, there are indeed powerful forces in Washington who would exploit the Noriega affair to that end But from the perspective of Washington, the threats and opportunities presented by the Noriega affair are far more complex and multi-dimensional The affair taps into virtually every concern and ambition that enjoys a forum in US politics

In general, Panamanian leaders have alternately responded to and contributed to an explosive climate of public opposition to United States operations in the Canal Zone They have had to walk the tightrope of taking a strong enough stand on the issue to maintain popular support while keeping popular manifestations of frustration within controllable limits, and without appearing so militant as to alarm the North Americans The current challenge to Noriega is of the same order It may be that given the allegations about his role in the murder of Torrijos and other prominent Panamanians and about the dimensions of his racketeering, only the appearance of an orchestrated US campaign to drive him from power could save his position.

The primary factors conditioning Panama's national development and its external relations have always been its size and strategic location and its economic dependence upon the canal and international trade And the North American presence has been its major source of frustration

Provisions of the 1903 Hay-Bunau-Varilla Treaty, under which the United States was granted the Canal Zone 'in perpetuity', made Panama a virtual protectorate of the United States until 1936. Relations with the United States in general, and the status of the canal zone in particular, have continued to be the overriding concerns of foreign policy makers, and have strongly influenced domestic political contests as well as relations with all other countries

Despite the negotiation of additional treaties in 1936 and 1955 and

several lesser concessions by the United States, various aspects of the relationship continued to generate resentment among Panamanians. Aside from the larger issue of jurisdiction over the zone, which bisected the territory of the Republic, Panamanians complained that they had not received their fair share of the receipts from the canal, that commissaries in the zone had damaged commercial interests in the Republic, that Panamanian workers in the zone had been discriminated against in economic and social matters, and that the large-scale presence of the United States military in the zone and in bases outside the zone cast a long shadow over national sovereignty

After serious rioting in 1964, which indicated the intensity of nationalistic aspirations concerning the status of the zone, the United States agreed to enter into negotiations for a new treaty Meanwhile, studies relating to the construction of a new canal were undertaken. In 1971, after a four-year interlude, negotiations were renewed, but it was not until 1977 that two new treaties, one providing for Panamanian assumption of control over the Canal in the year 2000 and the other for a permanent joint guarantee of the Canal's neutrality, were signed. The treaties were ratified by a Panamanian plebiscite in October 1977 and by the United States Senate in March and April 1978. The treaties launched a new era in Panamanian national life and in US/Panamanian relations But it was too much to hope that it would be an era free of serious discord.

Panamanians have not failed to note that the United States, in the past, has been less than religious about living up to treaty commitments Ironically or, one might say, cynically, the United States had 'justified' its military intervention on behalf of the Panamanian secessionists in 1903 by citing its 1846 treaty with Colombia, whereby the US had guaranteed Colombian sovereignty on the Isthmus.

Furthermore, the new treaties were fraught with ambiguities and contradictions and in several respects fell short of satisfying Panamanian expectations Even though the extensive US military presence has been highly offensive to Panamanians, the US promised no reduction before the year 2000 It promised only to 'endeavour to maintain its armed forces in the Republic of Panama in normal times at a level not in excess of that of the Armed forces of the United States of America in the territory of the former Canal Zone immediately prior to the entry into force of this treaty' And the provision of the permanent neutrality treaty that after the year 2000 'only the Republic of Panama shall operate the Canal and maintain military forces, defence sites and military installations within its national territory', is contradicted by the US Senate's reservation allowing for bilateral agreements on the stationing of US military forces in Panama after that date.

The neutrality treaty is self-contradictory in that it guarantees transit to vessels of all nations on terms of 'entire equality' but, as subsequently interpreted by US President Carter and Panama's General Omar Torrijos and amended by the US Senate, guarantees that US vessels may, if neces-

sary, go 'to the head of the line'. And a reservation attached by the US Senate to the Canal Treaty nullifies that treaty's provisions for bilateral accord on the construction of a sea level canal.

Despite prohibition against intervention in the internal affairs of Panama, the meaning of the US guarantee of the Canal's neutrality remains unclear In fact, the US Senate's so-called DeConcini reservation, legitimating US military intervention in the event of interference with the operation of the Canal, smacks of the protectorate status from which Panama supposedly emerged in 1936. Although the compromise wording in the reservation to the Canal Treaty, to the effect that the US right to keep the Canal open shall not be 'interpreted' as a right to intervene in Panama's domestic affairs, was accepted by Torrijos, it has been less than reassuring to many Panamanians At any rate, power disparities remain, and many Latin American States can attest to the fact that when the United States believes that its interests are threatened, treaty commitments to non-intervention are easily overlooked.

To US strategists, the importance of Panama and its political leadership has been compounded in the 1980s by the crisis in Central America. Thus, even as the country's diplomats participated in so-called Contadora initiatives for pacific settlement, Noriega's National Guard was relied upon to train the Contras Even the CIA's indulgence of some $200,000 a year over a ten-year period, however, was not enough to buy Noriega As it turned out Noriega was not for sale, only for rent, and the CIA would not necessarily be able to outbid other contenders, like Columbia's Medellin drug cartel. Given what must now be seen in the US as the unreliability of Panamanian leadership, Panamanian fears that the US will not live up to its treaty commitments cannot be lightly discounted.

[Professor Black is Research Professor of Public Administration at the University of New Mexico.]

THE FRENCH CONNECTION

by Paul Rose

PERHAPS, in the light of recent revelations, all speculation on political matters should be left to astrologers However, opinion polls are at least marginally more scientific and psephologists and sociologists may cast some light on the resounding victory of President Mitterand in the second stage of the French Presidential Election They may even be able to shed some light on why, alone among advanced democracies, the British Labour Party has failed to broaden its appeal so as to achieve what their counterparts in countries as diverse as Spain, Greece, Australia, New Zealand, Cyprus or Sweden have done.

In a week when Schleswig-Holstein gave the SPD an overwhelming majority (and 3% to the extreme right), Belgium moved to the centre-left and Denmark remained evenly balanced with an advance by the tax-cutting anti-immigrant right, are there lessons to be learned? Certainly one must not extrapolate in too facile a fashion from one country to another France has traditionally been able to muster a left of centre coalition at different times in its history. Spain only recently emerged from the twilight that followed the destruction of its own centre left republic by a coalition of traditionalists, Falangists and the Church (as it then was) with the military led by Franco Greece suffered the trauma of the Colonels Cyprus remains divided Democracies often respond to a see-saw effect that was captured by the late Professor MacKenzie's swingometer

However, there are trends in the social fabric of most advanced societies which are similar. Even the Soviet Union is responding to economic pressures and social and ethnic tensions which have long lurked beneath the surface as technological change and consumer expectations have to be met by new ideas. The ghosts of Adam Smith, Marx, Keynes and Bukharin must be locked in fervent dispute but not being an astrologer I am unable to inform Paddy Ashdown if his star is in the ascendant at the time of writing, although I would concur with the polls.

None-the-less, I believe there is a lesson to be drawn from the Fifth Republic. With Mrs Thatcher presiding at one end of the Tunnel and President Mitterand at the other, one trusts they will meet in the middle of the Channel. Otherwise, Mr Haughey will no doubt be able to claim that we received two for the price of one. Curiously, the ideas and attitudes of the radical right have swamped the thinking of this generation in the UK There has been a poverty of ideas on the traditionally more intellectual and theoretical left In France, on the other hand, while one in four French men and women no longer follow the rigid line of the Party of Maurice Thorez, a once moribund Socialist Party has re-emerged, able to carry with it the centre left and even the centre right while no longer having to look over its shoulder at the hard left

It is true that Mitterand is a shrewd operator whose pragmatism may be tinged with more than a little opportunism At the same time Jacques

Chirac, Raymond Barre and Giscard D'Estang and the new Prime Minister Michel Rocard are no clowns in the political circus Le Pen fused the populism of Poujadism with the working class racism of the red belts that were Communist strongholds, trapping fascist and traditional conservative streams at one and the same time while adding the protest vote

Having used and discarded a divided and outmoded Communist Party, Mitterand divided the right and then appealed to the centre rather than to the left as he had done in a different atmosphere The French are infinitely more personally involved in politics than their more sober counterparts on this side of the Chunnel The nuances are greater and there has not been the traditional consensus that has avoided Revolution in Britain since Cavalier and Roundhead clashed and ushered in the ascendancy of Parliament with various hiccups on the way to universal franchise at 18

Ironically, François Mitterand was the figure of consensus and national unity while Mrs Thatcher with a majority based on a solid 40% of electors, espouses the politics of confrontation In France the centre and right are hopelessly divided and one can see the appeal of a demagogue of the right like Le Pen, where the centre and left are fragmented and trapped by an electoral system which is not conducive to the forming of new alliances

The immediate concerns of those who abhor the polarisation of British Society, the north south divide; the manifestly regressive budget in which the richest 1% of the population gained in total as much as the poorest 70%; the new Social Security rules; the decay of Inner Cities; the state of the NHS, the Poll Tax, is an alternative strategy

Bryan Gould and those who share his thoughtful attempt to bring some sense of reality to the Labour Party are unlikely to succeed Indeed, far from falling into line, those principled but outdated dinosaurs on the so-called hard left are diverting attention to an internal if unequal leadership contest

The departure of most of the gang of four left the courageous Robert MacLennan to carry the can for the split created by the vanity and rightward mobility of Dr David Owen. This has temporarily if not permanently inflicted a grave wound in the centre and centre-left of British politics It was the great virtue of the old SDP that it saw the changes brought about by new technologies, the growth of the consumer rather than the producer as a political force It understood that traditional industries had to contract, preferably in an orderly manner, with arbitration and conciliation in place of confrontation between untrammelled management and Luddite Unions It understood the growth of the service industries and the fragmentation of work units It grasped that the collectivism upon which the Labour Party had thrived was giving way to new modes of working It saw that rigid ties to the Unions were no longer a helpful asset but a millstone in electoral terms. It nevertheless preserved the caring values that nurtured the Labour movement and set it on a course convergent with the radical Liberal tradition

A decade later and a quarter of a century after Hugh Gaitskell's sincere albeit clumsy attempt to remould the Labour Party, the Party remains in the same turmoil fighting out the same issues

Those issues were resolved in the Social Democratic Parties of Germany and Scandinavia all that time ago Social Democracy is a central force to be reckoned with throughout Europe The Italian Communist Party may use symbols that recall its origins but in practice it was the model of good government, free from corruption, that allowed it to remain the only 'Social Democratic' Communist Party and therefore a real force in politics, in the West I well remember seeing its posters condemning the destruction of the Prague Spring by Soviet Armed Might By the same token, as a student in France, I found *Le Populaire* to be a single sheet newspaper representing a Socialist Party that was moribund and claimed the allegiance of a minority of trade unionists, a few teachers and little else At its peak the Communist Party claimed the votes of one in four of the electorate The new face and attitudes of the nation is however tainted by a xenophobia not unknown in its history Not for nothing was Chauvin a Frenchman. In the once solidly red factories of Renault and the Ceinture Rouge of Paris one observes the same phenomenon as in Deptford, Newham or a dozen other rundown areas of high immigration combined with deprivation and unemployment

However, just as in the rest of Europe, the aspirations of the majority are not revolution or radical action in the direction of state control. They seek greater security and health care but they are conditioned by a consumer society in which the acquisition of certain commodities is now not seen as a luxury The holiday abroad and the smart car with dinner out are no longer the prerogative of the few. Society is not the pyramid shaped absolutely impoverished proletariat foreseen by Marx although that still exists in the context of the third world. If one is to use geometrical shapes one may describe it more as a diamond Those in the bottom fifth — the sick, unemployed or otherwise disadvantaged do not imply a strengthened left Republicans in the USA have triumphed frequently in just that situation and the urban bastions of the north together with the Celtic fringe need not worry the Conservative Party too much.

If the time comes as it may well do when Mrs Thatcher's personal popularity becomes an embarrassment to the Conservative Party there are waiting in the wings half a dozen potential mainstream Tories, although I am interested in what the astrologers may say of Michael Heseltine. The right wing radical revolution has shifted the centre of gravity of British politics in a manner never conceived of by opponents or adherents of the Party of Macmillan and Butler and McLeod

The awful truth for the left is that the main beneficiaries of the demise of Thatcherism will more likely than not be the Conservative Party reverting to traditional one-nation Toryism Neither the left in the shape of Neil Kinnock nor the centre left has had the courage to consider compromise Paddy Ashdown may well wish to replace the Labour Party and one may wish him well. The fact is that just as in the era when

Labour was replacing Liberalism, the opposition remains divided, unable and unwilling to isolate the outmoded left the better to gain the broad centre-left consensus so common on the Continent.

Clearly, if Rocard can attract the liberal centre and broaden his base he will have achieved what Mitterand achieved True, many of Le Pen's voters from the erstwhile left preferred a Socialist to a Conservative tag but Europe in its most stable period has only moved between the centre left and centre right.

Some may say that the pass has been sold by Socialist leaders who recognise the market economy and limit state intervention to particular fields Clearly, market forces cannot be applied without untold damage to health, education, social services, the protection of the environment or to certain public utilities New concepts of co-ownership, co-partnership, income policy and enlightened advances in industrial relations together with a new perspective on East-West relations must be common to the left and centre.

There are doubtless many in the Labour Party who are more Conservative than Democrats. There are others equally if not more concerned with civil liberties and human rights Indeed there is much that many may find attractive in the one nation Conservatives The outspoken defence of that tradition by former Prime Minister Edward Heath revealed the possibilities that exist for consensus politics The inability to step beyond Party barriers is a product of our electoral system which it perpetuates Even our Parliament is constructed like a football stadium to segregate rowdy partisans of two teams Our courts are based on the adversarial system and our industrial relations are conducted in the same adversarial spirit.

It was the French who gave the concept of left and right to the world by reason of where their deputies sat However, the concepts of left and right are two dimensional in a multi-dimensional world of class, national, ethnic, linguistic and religious diversity The opening to the left long spoken of in Italy and the opening to the centre pursued by Mitterand, practised by the German, Belgian and other Social Democrats, the success of Social Democracy in Scandinavia must all have lessons for Britain.

There is, however, one aspect of French policy — perhaps a legacy of Gaullism that is distinctly unattractive. I have no moral scruples about the 'Cohabitation' of Mitterand and Chirac as consenting adults Clearly Mrs Thatcher can cohabit with President Reagan and Mitterand or the Hungarian Communist leader Karoly Grosz across political and national boundaries They share the common attributes of tough leaders, but the willingness of Chirac to trade for hostages just after the tough stance in relation to Iranian hi-jackers gave the go-ahead to future blackmail His actions in New Caledonia and the implied support for state terrorism against Green Peace in New Zealand waters are similar aspects of a French chauvinism which rejects the very concept that led us on the road to a more united Europe.

That tendency, demonstrated in unscrupulous arms deals, has at times been reflected in the resurgence of unpalatable jingoism and has brought

support to the fortunes of the Conservative Party. It was seen over the Falklands — a just war against an aggressive totalitarian nation marching into our Sudetenland but besmirched by the Belgrano. It is seen in the shoot to kill policy in relation to IRA terrorists. I have no sympathy for them but let us not pretend in advance of the evidence that it didn't happen

That aspect of policy has no place in a centre-left grouping. Libertarian and outward looking attitudes do. The courage to combat racism whether of the Le Pen's or the British 'National Front' variety is another. One failure of the British Labour Party in which the otherwise saintly Bryan Gould was involved was its mistrust of Europe and opposition to EEC. As a New Zealander, his emotional ties make this understandable. The tight little island which can construct the new Jerusalem alone is a tradition running through the British left which is almost comical It overlooks the fact of the left's weakness in Britain and denies the internationalism claimed by Labour

The tight little island will soon have a direct connection to France. Commuters will live in Pas de Calais and thunder into the City Any thinking for the nineties must be on a European scale and beyond to a third world in turmoil As Paddy Ashdown shaped up to his former chief whip and cries of treachery were thrown at Neil Kinnock, there is one factor which I find to be missing — a politician with the astuteness and ability to bring those factions together in a coherent opposition with policies that appeal broadly to the 60% of the nation that voted against the current Government There is no Mitterand to counter Margaret

If the lesson of the French Election and those of countless others in Europe and the antipodes is not learned, then the centre and the left will be condemned to opposition until the end of the century; yet one factor may be put into this scenario that has not been considered The New World may come to the aid of the old as in the days of the 'New Deal' and the war that followed If Mike Dukakis makes it to the White House — and no-one should under-rate the remarkable achievement of Jesse Jackson — then it may be that a new vision will unfold to bolster the centre-left in Britain and the West on a whole. Victory to Mitterand followed by the US Democrats would be a peaceful repetition of the Revolution that helped shape the modern world two centuries ago

THE MIDAS TOUCH

by Frances Hutchinson

COMMUNITY life has, since the industrial revolution, been dominated in Great Britain by the demands of the economic system to the virtual exclusion of other social considerations Child rearing, home and family care have continued to play an essential part in meeting the needs of individuals But the economic system has registered only the costs of breakdown and remedial actions. In the same way as economists have only recently, and marginally, come to account the destruction of the environment and the exhaustion of the earth's scarce resources, the development of affective and social skills through traditional forms of home and family care has been taken for granted and subtly devalued

Males and feminists alike have, for their different reasons, combined to underplay and undermine the significance of family care in introducing new members to the social community of human beings The strength of the backlash against this erosion of family life can be seen in the vigour of the growth in support for fundamentalist religions Beyond those narrow confines, home care, child care and the traditional skills of mothering have been denigrated and debased Parenting and child care have been demoted to a spare time activity outside working hours, to be delegated wherever possible to low paid substitutes In this way, traditionally male concern with production of statistically verifiable material wealth has been accepted as the sole significant form of human activity The need for love, care and affection is appreciated only at the point of personal breakdown, when expensive specialists are consulted

Traditionally feminine concerns have so far eluded the androcentric comprehension which dominates all forms of academic and educational structures in society The psychologists — and there have been many of them, and of both sexes,— who record the infant's ambivalence towards its mother could, perhaps, with more accuracy be said to be recording the results of the untypical mother's ambivalence towards her child Mothering in human beings is a socially sensitive activity, and Western society has, since the onset of the industrial revolution, placed the rearing of children under peculiar constraints

Taking the lead from classical economists, backed up by cynical psychologists, we in the West have come to doubt the sincerity of those who offer love and affection The ideal role model of the tender and caring mother — or father — has been replaced by the young, fit, healthy, role-playing, 25 year old male, in economic employment and without ties or responsibilities By contrast, the woman who cares, be it for an elderly relative, a child — her own, or that of another who has suffered mental or physical abuse,— or her sick or disabled husband, child or parent, is designated a person of low status, her needs ignored in terms of community support, and her economic independence removed from any guarantees Following the industrial revolution, family life has come to

be curiously dependent upon wage earning, that is, upon the economic rewards to labour as a factor of production

The reward given to labour bears no relationship whatsoever to the economic needs of the family Further, it takes no account of the work involved in household tasks, work which recent International Labour Office estimates show consumes at least as many working hours as are spent in paid employment. This supportive work is acknowledged to be essential in servicing the workers, that is, in attending to their essential needs for food, clothing, shelter and leisure The very existence of labour, an essential factor of production in economic terms, is dependent upon the satisfaction of those needs Housework is, however, excluded from economic calculations in the same way as nature's gifts are assumed to be free, simply because they do not occur as a result of financial considerations A mother does not — normally — wait to be paid to look after her baby. Yet it is this very absence of economic motivation which demotes an activity in Western eyes 'If a job is worth doing, it is worth being paid to do it', is the current rule of thumb As a result, mothering and caring generally are classed as menial tasks, to be delegated to others wherever possible for a financial consideration

It is, however, becoming clear that child-rearing practices based on the economic needs of the parents are giving grounds for concern Parents return from work to tackle household and child care responsibilities in their 'spare' time, often many miles away from otherwise supportive grandparents In attempting to side-step the demands of children for attention and affection, busy parents offer the passive and undemanding viewing of television rather than embark upon traditional forms of interactive play, talking and reading together The significance of the incalculable numbers of hours of shared activity of children and adults spent in the recounting of nursery rhymes, tales and games combined with routine household tasks, has been seriously undervalued These activities, essential in the formation of self-esteem and self awareness, have fallen into disuse in many families So, too, have forms of children's free peer group play in streets and open spaces near to home. Traffic and other modern dangers have eroded ancient childhood rights, restricting in an unprecedented way children's freedom to develop a sense of personal awareness, place and community The middle-aged and elderly of today, from even the most inner city areas, can recall childhood excursions to open countryside and areas of woodland in the company of siblings and friends, and an ease of access to shops and houses of relatives in nearby streets which is rarely possible today The resultant frustration and alienation demonstrated in adolescent behaviour stems directly from this absence of an early sense of belonging to family and to community

Human beings are more than mere units of labour, cogs in the economic production machine Material wealth is very limited as a means for satisfying human wants Labour saving devices have not, according to recent studies, cut down the number of hours devoted to housework They have, in fact, increased the total number of hours of work in the

home, as expectations have been raised and the machines themselves require attention. Further, the time spent earning money to pay for the machines has increased, as have other associated expenses. Rudolph Bahro, the West German 'Green', has presented a vivid image in commenting that 'today we spend ten times as much energy for a worker to be able to sit in front of the TV in the evenings with his bottle of beer as we needed in the eighteenth century for Schiller to create his life's work'.

The ability of the earth to tolerate the ever expanding demands of human beings for continued economic growth is being seriously brought into question in terms of the exhaustion of the finite resources of the earth, and the as yet only partially understood effects of the pollution of the land, seas and atmosphere. It may be time to look more seriously at the development of the human intellect and the human community, as a substitute for the continued demand for material wealth. In reality, consumer commodities have never been more than a means to an end, as King Midas found out so long ago.

Despite the wisdom of the ancients, material wealth remains the predominant pre-occupation of our time. Few would fail to wince at the idea of handing a highly priced Ming vase to a person with no conception of its value, who might well drop it, or throw it in the dustbin. Yet many a human infant's life chances are far less well protected than those of a Ming vase. Attempts are made to patch up some of the most disastrous mistakes in child care, and the expensive services of highly-trained specialists may be lavished upon children whose lives have been shattered by parental neglect, physical, mental or sexual abuse. But beyond this largely futile gesture, society on the whole places a low value on child care and spends few resources in the preparation of, and support for, adults in their responsibilities as parents. If anything, the economic system has quietly encroached upon and undermined the status and skills of those who do attempt to care

Some would, however, accept that each human infant is indeed more precious than the most expensive vase on earth. When one considers that fifty per cent of a child's intellectual potential is developed before the age of five years, and that the foundations are laid in those early years for his or her artistic and emotional life, the lack of training and support in parenthood is astonishing This deprivation applies not only in inner city areas, where temporary accommodation and a background of unsettled family life has been inherited by successive generations of parents since the early days of the industrial revolution Parents in the affluent professional classes enter parenthood in a haze of equal ignorance, ignorance which they themselves would consider horrific in a fellow professional embarking upon a professional task. With smaller families, and geographic mobility which has split the extended family, it is not at all uncommon for a couple's own baby to be the very first they have ever held in their hands, and for their knowledge of the needs of a toddler or young child to be virtually non-existent.

So bemused have we become with the significance of economic growth

that we fail even to consider the allocation of resources to the care and nurture of infants and young children In a haphazard way families have little option but to choose between a series of unsatisfactory strategies in deciding their child care methods. Where both parents wish to remain in economic employment, the parents may decide to pay for the child to be cared for by a non-family member during working hours. The primary duty of this stranger, brought into the child's life on a temporary basis, is to oversee the physical welfare of the child The relationship between the family and the stranger will cease when their services are no longer required, even where a strong bond may have developed between the child and the carer.

If, on the other hand, parents decide that their child needs continuity of care and affection, and that home and family should weigh more heavily than purely financial considerations, the family faces a further series of unexpected hurdles.

There is considerable pressure upon women in particular to consider that child care is no more than a matter of providing for the physical comfort of an infant up to the age of five years Beyond that age it is considered that children are off the parents' hands, as they enter formal schooling, and embark on the processes of training to themselves become units of labour in the economic machine With the trend towards smaller families, women are encouraged to think that parenting is no more than a minor hiccup in the working life of an adult, taking up a mere 3% of a normal working life. Nothing could be further from the truth A child is a lifetime's commitment, altering the relationships between the parents, grandparents, siblings, not to mention the child itself, within the family and the community A child forms a unique link between present and future generations Further, a child requires a sense of place and personal identity if it is to develop into a mature and responsible adult, willing and able to work with others for the good of the community, and capable of actions beyond the narrowest pursuit of adolescent self-interest

Perhaps it is time to look again at the fragmentation of family and community life which has resulted from the pursuit of pure materialism, and to consider forms of training for child care and design of communities based on more truly human, as opposed to economic, values Women who have remained in the home and in the community may well prove to be a most valuable, and hitherto undervalued, source of knowledge and associated with child care and homemaking There is, however, increasing economic pressure militating against the dissemination of these traditional skills It may be necessary to mount a new conservation campaign to prevent the total extinction of human values in Western society.

[Frances Hutchinson has worked as a social worker in inner city areas of Birmingham, Sheffield and Leeds She has taught on contract in Sierra Leone and Zambia, and in Bradford]

THE RIPPER REPORT: A HUNDRED-YEAR STOCKTAKING

by Richard Whittington-Egan

JACK the Ripper. Time already for the centennial stocktaking How quickly a hundred years pass It is a discovery one makes as one grows older The spaces between successive Christmases shrink When I was a baby the last Ripper victim had been in her grave but thirty-six years

Jack the Ripper A name to conjure with. And, in that name, some very strange conjuring tricks have been performed They have included the production of a royal duke out of a Masonic gibus, and sundry other assorted bizarre personages out of sundry other assorted bee-ridden bonnets.

There has, indeed, been a great and eccentric yield from the 5,200 weeks, 36,523 days (including leap — to conclusions! — years), of fact and fancy gathering, and the trepid reader may well require some guidance, a lead of kindly light, through the re-opened alleyways of the Ripper territory

So what, in this centenary year, is new? Candour might end this report at this point But kindly light must lead on to some discussion of what is *offered* as new. A nice legal distinction and like many a subtle legal hair-split, not quite fair For the seven celebrant centenary volumes have brought a great tidying up, a grand correction and clarification on minor points and of major peripheral issues For instance. the Great Dandenong Fallacy has been resolved and dismissed (by Howells and Skinner), and the mystic revelation of Robert James Lees has been revealed — as nonsense (by Melvin Harris)

The occasion has also evoked some fine writing — as well as some lamentably banal scribbling — by contemporary newspaper journalists Perhaps the best, John Carey in the *Sunday Times,* of innominate Jack

> Like Dracula or Santa Claus or Robin Hood, he belongs to our cloudy pantheon of immortals, and we are unwilling to see him deposed We need him He is Death in pantomime garb one of the figures we use for coming to terms with our ultimate terror His semi-fictional nature is what makes him acceptable Popularised through films, stories and book-illustrations, he has the harmless garishness of romance — a cartoon image pinned protectively over the festering shambles of the Whitechapel corpses . His jaunty name was invented for him Its fairy-tale ring (evoking Jack the Giant Killer) helps to remove him from the human sphere

Our seven authors 'all rake together the same blood-soaked evidence, but reach no consensus' as to the Ripper's identity No matter As Christopher Wordsworth has observed (in the *Observer*), 'The hunt is meeting to draw those charnel coverts once again' But, as Colin Wilson has sagely remarked, 'a problem for a modern writer on the subject is to produce a new suspect' Happily, none of our septet has done that All the crazier speculations seem to have been dismissed Gone are the gorilla, the sadistic midwife, satanic doctors Stanley and Pedachenko,

old Dr. Barnardo and all Current research sticks to Macnaghten's standard text. Druitt or the multi-nominate Polack, Mr K (once varied as Mr C)

Wilson and Odell assume their position on the bench, casting you the reader as nominating juror Donald Rumbelow satisfies himself by requesting the Ripper to stand up — and then exclaiming *'Who?'* Terence Sharkey awards Montague *Thomas* (sic) Druitt 75 marks out of 100 for being the one most likely to stand up Unfortunately, Mr Sharkey's accuracy, nominally *et passim,* does not stand up Martin Howells and Keith Skinner both plump for a guilty Druitt, Montague John Melvin Harris goes nap on an outsider, Dr Roslyn D'Onston Martin Fido is a Polack fancier — Mr. C. out of Mr K Peter Underwood, as befits one who is, after all, the president of the Ghost Club, keeps an open mind, while sponsoring two new candidates — Joseph Barnett and James Kelly — and, at the same time, declaring for either Druitt or an innominate Ripper

A centennial *bonne bouche* has been the provision by the grandson of Detective Chief Inspector Donald Sutherland Swanson, Mr James Swanson, of a privileged peep into the mind of the man who, in overall charge of the Ripper case, always, in his lifetime, viewed police work as 'decidedly a secret service', and kept a tight upper — and lower — lip So tight, in fact, that he would not discuss the case even within the sternly disciplined Scots bosom of his own family. However. he *did* confide his pencilled secrets to the margins of a copy of the autobiography of his old chief, *The Lighter Side of My Official Life,* by Sir Robert Anderson, published in 1910 Following the death of a maiden aunt, this volume came into the hands of the Scottish detective's grandson Anderson had written: 'The only person who had ever had a good view of the murderer unhesitatingly identified the suspect the instant he was confronted with him; but he refused to give evidence against him In saying that he was a Polish Jew I am merely stating a definitely ascertained fact' Swanson had pencilled in· 'Because the suspect was also a Jew and also because his evidence would convict the suspect, and witness would be the means of murderer being hanged which he did not wish to be left on his mind' On the other side-margin was pencilled 'And after this identification which suspect knew, no other murder of this kind took place in London' At the back of the book, Swanson had written a longer note 'After the suspect had been identified at the Seaside Home where he had been sent by us with difficulty in order to subject him to identification and he knew he was identified On suspect's return to his brother's house in Whitechapel he was watched by police (City CID) by day and night In a very short time the suspect with his hands tied behind his back, he (sic) was sent to Stepney Workhouse and then to Colney Hatch and died shortly afterwards Kosminski was the suspect'

The name of Kosminski was not a new one It had been introduced in 1965, when Tom Cullen published in his *Autumn of Terror* the Macnaghten Memorandum In it, Kosminski was the second on the list of three men against whom the police held especial suspicion. The other

two were Druitt and Michael Ostrog Macnaghten indicated his preference for Druitt Now, in the Swanson Marginalia, revealed in the *Daily Telegraph* of October 19th, 1987, comes interesting confirmation of contemporary high official belief in the guilt of Kosminski

Martin Fido has done some remarkable and extremely onerous pioneering research, wading through workhouse, infirmary and asylum records, in pursuit of Anderson's unnamed Polish Jew and Macnaghten's (possibly the same) mad Polish Jew, Kosminski (no forename given). And in the end he found one Aaron Kozminski, a twenty-six-year-old, Polish Jewish hairdresser, living with his brother, Wolf Kozminski, whose address, given to the asylum authorities as No 8 Lion Square, Commercial Road, does not appear on any street map After treatment at the Mile End Old Town Workhouse, he was admitted to Colney Hatch (Friern Barnet Asylum) on January 7th, 1891. He was transferred to Leavesden Asylum in 1894, and died there in 1919. Most puzzlingly, Aaron Kozminski only half fits the facts given by Swanson about *his* Kosminski However . Mr Fido has discovered another Polish Jew, who does seem to fill the Swanson bill He is a 23-year-old tailor. of Leman Street, brought to the Whitechapel Infirmary on December 12th, 1888, and admitted to Colney Hatch on December 21st, 1888. He died there on October 20th, 1889 The only trouble is that his name is David Cohen! To further complicate matters, Mr. Fido is convinced that David Cohen is really Nathan Kaminsky.

Nathan Kaminsky, a 23-year-old, unmarried, Polish Jewish bootmaker, no known next of kin, living at No. 15 Black Lion Yard, was admitted to Whitechapel Workhouse Infirmary on March 24th, 1888, and was diagnosed to be suffering with syphilis. He was discharged at the beginning of May 1888. Kaminsky was, Mr. Fido argues, the right age for a sexual serial murderer, the right race for Anderson's Polish Jew, the right occupation for Macnaghten's Kosminski (in the notes for his Memorandum Macnaghten is said to have included the fact that his was the leather-aproned occupation of 'a tanner or cobbler'). Infection with syphilis proved an active sex life among the local prostitutes, and supplied a conscious motive for hatred of street-walkers Moreover, the location of Black Lion Yard was virtually at the centre point of the five murders, fitting all the topographical clues provided by the murders themselves But . the name of Kaminsky is never entered on the lists of pauper lunatics, never appears in the records of any asylum Nor is there anywhere any record of his death. How can Mr. Fido bridge the gap between Cohen and Kaminsky? His grand unscrambling operation, which exonerates Kosminski and Aaron Kozminski and reconciles the identities of a guilty Kaminsky/Cohen, depends upon several acts of hopeful faith. The first is his submission that the nasality of the Victorian East End Jewish accent could easily have produced the mishearing of 'Nathan' as 'David', and that the 'Kamin' of 'Kaminsky', with the 'sky' syllable lost in a combination of mumbling Yiddish and lunatic rambling, could present as the more familiar 'Cohen' Mr. Fido has since been informed that 'Cohen was the usual "John Doe" name that petty officialdom gave to Jews whose

names were unpronounceable, hard to spell, or generally uncertain'

The second *actus fidei* postulates the explanation that the Metropolitan Police investigated Nathan Kaminsky *aka* David Cohen and the City Police investigated Aaron Kozminski *aka* Kosminski, each force poaching on the other's manor to do so Mr. Fido thinks that the City Force's witness, Joseph Lawende, was spirited away to the Met's Seaside Home, at Hove (not opened for convalescent officers until 1890 — so this, he admits, is a mystery), there inconspicuously to identify their suspect Kaminsky/Cohen Lawende refused to testify against him, so the Met did the best they could in the circumstances by having him 'caged in a lunatic asylum'. Plausible enough — except for that seemingly insurmountable business of the Seaside Home The City Force's suspect, Aaron Kozminski, satisfied them as to his innocence, but was subsequently committed to the asylum by his brother when his behaviour became intolerable Since *both* suspects ended up in Colney Hatch, it is perfectly conceivable that the respective accounts and allocation of facts to names became confused. By a similar feat of mental acrobatics — since Mr Fido presents us with a binominate Ripper, and since *two* names may be reasonably held in this case to amount to no *one* name — I find myself able to accept his *innominate* Ripper.

In other words, a Yiddisher rose by (practically) any other (unknown) name is just as sweet a guilty choice. Mr Fido's ultimate thesis seems to be that Anderson's Polish Jew was Macnaghten's Kosminski, who was either Aaron Kozminski, who does *not* fit the facts, or Nathan Kaminsky, who *does* fit the facts, but whose name was wrongly registered as David Cohen. Mr. Fido's book is well researched and most engagingly written He falls into some errors, but the plain truth — and it is never plain in a case so complicated and patchily and variantly documented as this — is that Papal infallibility is practically impossible; good old Christian Science 'error' is bound to creep sinfully in But some errors are worse than others — whatever the arguable teleological validity of that statement — and Mr Fido makes none of the really serious kind To confuse the peritoneum and the perineum is a very understandable and excusable lay mistake, just as the rendering of ensiform cartillage as enoform and enciform is no significant error His book is without question a most valuable addition to 'Ripperature'

In *The Ripper Legacy: The Life and Death of Jack the Ripper,* Martin Howells and Keith Skinner concentrate on Macnaghten's Suspect No. 1, Montague John Druitt, and in so doing achieve some very useful demolition work They have reduced Daniel Farson's rare pamphlet, *The East End Murderer — I Knew Him* by Lionel Druitt to an article in a newspaper supplement — a piece by an East End landlady along the lines of a 'Jack the Ripper was my lodger' type story, in the *St Arnaud Mercury,* of November 29th, 1890. They have established that Dr. Lionel Druitt did not live in the remote Dandenong Range area, but in Dandenong Road, in Oakleigh, a thriving industrial suburb of Melbourne Mr. W. G. Fell, allegedly the person who was responsible for the private printing of

The East End Murderer — I Knew Him pamphlet, turns out to be a red herring, dredged up from an old man's distorted recollection, and the Macnamara Document offered for sale for £500 in a Melbourne public-house in the 1920s, actually related to the Melbourne murderer Frederick Bailey Deeming Their researches also yield the significant contribution that Ann Druitt, Montague John's mother, was not a patient at the Manor House Asylum, Chiswick, until *eighteen months after* her son's suicide.

Prior to that — from July 1888 — she had been in Brooke Asylum, less than two miles north-east of Whitechapel The authors stay enthusiastically with what Christopher Wordsworth calls the 'Wykehamist batsman, failed barrister and sacked schoolmaster' solution They work very hard at it They provide rich, cogent argumentation They aver, rather eccentrically, a cover-up job by Druitt's solicitor brother, William of Bournemouth He, they say, at the Lamb Tap inquest, gave flawed testimony He stated that he was Druitt's only living relative, whereas there were in fact two other brothers and three sisters He stated that he had found a suicide note among his dead brother's possessions The authors ask 'Druitt's family believed him to be the murderer, and yet his brother was supposed to possess information (i e the suicide note) which clearly pointed to his innocence How can this be, unless this vital piece of evidence is fabricated?' In this, as elsewhere, the authors seem, in attempting to take the evidence against Druitt further, to end up by going too far themselves, relying upon a heterogony of assumptions

Druitt was a homosexual He had connections with members of the Cambridge sodality, the Apostles, who, aware that he was the Ripper and, backed by shadowy Establishment Apostles in the highest places in the land, murdered him They dumped his body in the Thames, primed as that of a suicide and, inexplicably, with all the river's meandering length to choose from, they selected the crazily close proximity to their Thames-side meeting place, Osier House, at Chiswick, for the jettisoning Their motive? To ensure that there would be no discovery, arrest and trial, no besmirching public association between the Apostles' friend, the Duke of Clarence, and their whilom friend, John the Ripper, who had also been on terms of close friendship with Prince Albert Victor If this were so, it is astonishing that the Ripperwise ever-alert Donald McCormick, who, as Richard Deacon, produced, in 1985, *The Cambridge Apostles A History of Cambridge University's Elite Intellectual Secret Society*, has given no hint of any of this. It is a pity that in a book so well researched the authors had to go hay-wire in quest of a solution at any price The permanent value of their *Ripper Legacy* to future researchers will lie in its meticulous collection of facts One must always distinguish between facts and reasons It is a common failure among Ripper researchers not to do so

Mr Melvin Harris, the celebrated debunker, exploder of hoaxes, expert in the detection of deviousness and its exposure, entered the lists sledge-hammer in hand to crack walnuts Instead he produced a giant coconut of his own He came to mock and stayed to appraise the 'Ripperological'

merits of Dr Roslyn D'Onston *aka* Robert Donston Stephenson, mage, medical practitioner, drunken, drug-taking journalist, who ultimately suffered the C-change of a Christian conversion and survived to write learnedly on the Patristic Gospels Mr Harris' visitation in search of 'the bloody truth' has been of the greatest value Again, a demolition, or, as he might quite reasonably prefer to hear it styled, a ground-clearing, job

Especially satisfying is his final uprooting of that more-than-hardy perennial, Robert James Lees, medium *extraordinaire (très),* who is said to have tracked the Ripper down psychically to the West End mansion of a celebrated physician. The genesis of the Lees saga is a positive object lesson It originates on April 28th, 1895, with an article, 'The Capture of Jack the Ripper', published in the Chicago *Sunday Times-Herald* This story, the base of the pyramid of hoaxes whose apex was to be the involvement of the Freemasons and the royal family in bogus solutions, was an elaborate jape fashioned by members of the Chicago Whitechapel Club — a specifically Ripper-orientated chapter of the Ananias League, its initial impetus stemming from San Francisco's Bohemian Club. The Whitechapel Club premises were actually situated at the rear of the Chicago *Times-Herald* building, and it was a favourite watering hole of many of the reporters and sub-editors on the *Sunday Times-Herald*

This artefact of the frolicsome club's tall story workshop was picked up by, and repeated in the pages of, the English Sunday newspaper, the *People,* issue of May 19th, 1895 The outraged reaction of Dr Howard, the alleged catalyst in the unsealing of the lips of Lees' anonymous confidant in Chicago was revealed in my own *Casebook on Jack the Ripper* but, curiously, the article drew no denial of his alleged Ripper capturing rôle from Lees For good reasons of his own, he elected to remain tight-lipped and aloof He was no liar, but a man whose fantasy visions were so powerful as sometimes to submerge reality for him The strong wish became parent to illusory 'fact'. Thinking could make it so The dream was made flesh That the flesh was insubstantial is clearly demonstrated by Mr Harris' quotation from Lees' diary for 1888

> *Tuesday 2nd October* Offered services to police to follow up East End murders — called a fool and a lunatic Got trace of man from the spot in Berner Street
> *Wednesday 3rd October* Went to City police again — called a madman and fool
> *Thursday 4th October* Went to Scotland Yard — same result but promised to write to me

In January 1931 Lees died and the *Daily Express* despatched their wily and not overly scrupulous reporter, Cyril Morton, to worm, by hook, crook or cheque book, the secret of the Ripper's identity out of Lees' daughter Eva, to whom he was believed to have divulged it. Sphinxlike, she resisted all bribes and entreaties. Most likely because she was a sphinx without a secret. The crafty Morton's reportorial eye had, however, espied among a bunch of press clippings on Miss Eva's table, the one from the Chicago *Sunday Times-Herald* of thirty-six years before, and he had duly noted its date in his notebook On his return to London, Morton sent for that issue, and the original article, appropriately doctored and updated, was republished, as a recently discovered secret document, in the *Daily*

Express of March 9th and 10th, 1931 A spurious validity was conferred on the *Express* version of the *Sunday Times-Herald* story by its endorsement in 1935 by ex-Detective Sergeant Edwin T Woodhall, 'Late of New Scotland Yard', in his ridiculous book, *Crime and the Supernatural*

Mr Harris also catches the tampering Dr Forbes Winslow, red-handed and forgery-fingered, altering the date on an alleged Ripper letter addressed to him on October 19th, 1889, to 88, and describes the learned alienist as the first of the Ripper hunters to be corrupted

A sturdy enough case is adduced against Mr Harris' own suspect elect, the enigmatic and certainly extremely odd Dr Roslyn D'Onston, but I do not feel that the proof comes up to his conviction. But that in no sense devalues the extreme importance of Mr Harris' very solid contribution to the solving of the ongoing mystery as to the 'bloody truth', and the absolute indispensability of his superbly researched book to anyone with a serious interest in the problem.

Naturally, taking his supernaturalism into account, Peter Underwood in his *Jack the Ripper One Hundred Years of Mystery,* lends a sympathetic pen to 'the puzzling and remarkable' story of Robert James Lees. He maintains that, although the tale was first printed in Chicago in 1895, there is 'overwhelming evidence that the story was widely known in London as early as July 1889' And he cites a letter sent to Scotland Yard and dated July 25th, 1889 'Dear Boss, You have not caught me yet you see, with all your cunning, with all your "Lees", with all your blue bottles' The signature is 'Jack the Ripper'. Mr Underwood dismisses Dr. Howard's letter of denial that he ever made any such public statement, in San Francisco or anywhere else, about Jack the Ripper, with a Mandy Rice-Davies 'Well he would, wouldn't he?' shrug He also points out that Lees' own diary, preserved at Stanstead Hall, in Essex, 'has long been suspected of "being tampered with" ' which, he asserts, Mr Melvin Harris full well knows To quote, in these contexts, Mr. Underwood's own words. 'It is always easy to see what one wants to see and there are many kinds of truth'.

Mr Underwood sponsors two new suspects The first is Bruce Paley's nominee in an issue of the American *True Crime Magazine (True Crime Monthly,* April 1982), Joseph Barnett, Mary Kelly's live-in-lover The theory is that Barnett killed the other four prostitutes to frighten Kelly off the streets and, when his ruse failed, he killed and filleted her in a fit of pique Mr Underwood's comment· 'A lot more research may be called for before Joseph Barnett can be unquestionably identified as Jack the Ripper but he does appear to have answered the description of a prime suspect, to have had the motive, the means, the opportunity and he was known to be violent'.

That might be called the protector grown less protective theory The second new suspect is the refugee from *The Guinness Book of Records* theory The postulator is John Morrison, keen amateur historian and self-appointed knight errant of, as she liked to be called and he likes to call her, Marie Jeannette Kelly Mr. Morrison's discovery of the identity

of the Ripper is almost mystical He had a dream. In it he came to know that the Book of Revelations in which lay exposed the true name of Marie Jeannette's slayer was — *The Guinness Book of Records* And yes . . sure enough, there it was. James Kelly Kelly, not from the Isle of Man but, the next best thing, from Liverpool. It was there that he murdered his wife, was found insane and committed to Broadmoor He earned his niche in the record book by escaping from Broadmoor in January 1888 and remaining at liberty for thirty-nine years He returned voluntarily to Broadmoor in February 1927, and died there in September 1929, proclaiming himself Jack the Ripper. It is Mr. Morrison's contention that Kelly murdered his wife for the sake of Mary Kelly, who was then his pregnant sweetheart After his trial she fled from Liverpool and went on the streets in London After his escape, James Kelly went in search of her to exact a terrible revenge for what he saw as her desertion and treachery Every prostitute he questioned in his hunt for Mary Kelly, he killed in order to silence her and cover his tracks Mr Underwood seems a little hesitant in the endorsing of Mr. Morrison's unmasking of the Ripper Indeed, the last words of his book are 'The truth is this mystery remains as unsolved today as it was a hundred years ago'.

And, truth to tell, Terence Sharkey's *Jack the Ripper 100 Years of Investigation,* does not contrive to bring us any nearer to the riddle's answer either Truth to tell again, Mr Sharkey's book is the least satisfactory and satisfying of the septet The best the author is able to do seems to be to offer the reader what he calls 'a chocolate box' of other people's potential culprits

> The Ripper selection of chocolate-coated candy is the biggest yet Some are gold-wrapped . . But one man's fancy is another's fiction, and by now the gold-wrapping is frequently tarnished . . There will always be new suspects, silver-wrapped, gold-wrapped, and flavour of the month But for now, lift the lid and make your choice

Mr Sharkey's research implements appear to have been scissors and paste, albeit industriously enough employed, but resulting in a slender volume which displays neither cerebration nor argument in favour of any particular claimant for what I am sure he would have called — had he thought of it — the bloodstained laurels I present this, I may say, as a statement of fact, and *not* as a criticism It is most assuredly not incumbent upon any writer about the Whitechapel murders to play the name game

Colin Wilson and Robin Odell lay the facts before us in an atmosphere altogether less hectic and lurid They confine their contribution in *Jack the Ripper. Summing Up and Verdict,* to just that. The verdict is a bit shaky, but the summing-up is admirable The authors arraign no new suspect before the court of their readership. Mr Odell has, of course, previously proffered the innominate *shochet* An eminently feasible candidate in my view. Mr. Wilson furnishes an astute psychological portrait of the likely, innominate, Ripper The authors make the point that, whatever else, the Ripper *has* to be a sadistic maniac driven by mutilation madness This is the psychological reality behind the murders It makes

Jill the Ripper a grotesque impossibility, because mutilation madness is a crime of the male sexual pervert It may also indicate that Martha Turner or Tabram was, in fact, a Ripper victim The 'Court' then directs the reader to find all the suspects put up not guilty

Inevitably in this spawning centenary year anachronistically titled, Donald Rumbelow's *The Complete Jack the Ripper* takes no countenance of such of the latest gaol delivery as Joseph Barnett, James Kelly and William Henry Bury *qua* putative Ripper First published in 1975, it still rates, however, warts and all, as the best all-round, overall conspectus of the field of blood One had hoped that a little cosmetic surgery might have been applied to this new and completely revised edition, but many of the verrucae have resisted the duodecennial face-lift But how should one carp at a work so minutely detailed — even down to the varicose vein immediately below the knee of chief Metropolitan bloodhound Inspector Fred Abberline's left leg?

First of all, let us get the blemishes out of the way Mr Rumbelow's mind must have been unconsciously concentrated upon the civilian heroes and heroics of World War Two; the Buck's Row carman was Charles not George Cross Osborn Street has not now, and had not then, a terminal 'e' Despite its beguiling appeal to the ear, you will search the nomenclature of anatomy in vain for any portion mellifluously designated the *rectus musela* I am afraid it has to be the rectus muscle Mr Rumbelow's 'ruthless weeding-out process' of the signed Jack the Ripper letters has been just a shade too celerious, for he assigns to the 'Dear Boss' letter of prime importance the postmark 28 September 1888, when it was actually franked 27 September 1888 He is guilty, too, of repeating a couple of canards upon which he should not bestow his tacit benediction (1) That Annie Chapman had rings at her toes (2) That Dr Openshaw ever delivered himself of that absurd diagnosis after examining the contents of Mr Lusk's renal postbag And there is no reason why he should have got the substance and sequence of the 'Juwes' writing wrong

Now for the many excellencies Mr Rumbelow has succeeded in mapping the hitherto unrevealed workhouse pilgrimages and sorry sagas of the wretched meat of Saucy Jack's knife Especially full and fascinating is his log of the erstwhile uncertain movements of the Swedish nightjar, Elisabeth Stride His researches are anticipated, and complimented by those of Klas Lithner, published in the December 1987 issue of the magazine *True Detective* Mr Rumbelow turns effective detective on the detective, heretofore elusive Frederick George Abberline, anatomising and placing him, for the first time, securely in the frame Mr Rumbelow's own secretly cherished suspect has become a victim of his further research. Timothy Donovan, deputy of the common lodging-house at 35 Dorset Street, has been discovered to have died eight days before the last of the Ripper murders He offers no substitute for Judgment Day's upstanding figure

Too late for inclusion and assessment in any of the centenary volumes, but central figure of a promised future book by Euan Macpherson, of

Montrose, is the Dundee Jack the Ripper, William Henry Bury Bury, aged thirty, born in Wolverhampton, arrived in Dundee with his wife, Ellen, on January 20th, 1889 He came from East London — No 3 Spanby Road, Bow — where he had been in business as a sawdust merchant On Monday, February 11th, he walked into Dundee's Bell Street police station saying that his wife had committed suicide Her body was found in a large wooden box at the couple's basement flat at No 113 Princes Street Her throat bore the marks of strangulation and there were deep Ripper-like stab wounds in her abdomen On an old door at the back of the tenement block was written 'Jack the Ripper is at the back of this door' and, at the turn of the stairs which led down from it to the Bury's basement flat, there was chalked on the wall 'Jack the Ripper is in this sellar' Tried in Dundee, Bury was found guilty, and hanged on April 24th, 1889 No one ever questioned him about his movements in London during the autumn of terror, and Mr Macpherson intends to make a detailed examination of all the evidence against him

On November 9th, 1988, the hundredth-year bell chimes What of the next hundred years? I think that the remaining third of Macnaghten's 'official text' must be explored Two-thirds — Kosminski and Druitt — have been cleared of valid suspicion, but Michael Ostrog remains He is, on the face of it, quite a good proposition He has, it is true, a name, but it is one so insignificant as to place its bearer well within the parameters of my own favoured category of innominate Ripper or nominate nonentity. I do *not* suggest that Dr Ostrog necessarily *was* Jack the Ripper — one has to emphasise and underline what one does not say in view of the inherent indifference of so many Ripperphiles to accuracy of quotation and inaccuracy of interpretative assignment — but, equally, before we can clear him, valid suspicion must remain A *caveat* All that Macnaghten said, and this should never be lost sight of, was that he was merely mentioning the cases of three men — Druitt, Kosminski, Ostrog — 'any one of whom would have been more likely than Cutbush to have committed this series of murders'

Thomas Cutbush, an aptly named, thirty-year-old, was a relatively harmless fetishist, whose simple pleasure it was to rip women's skirts from behind with a knife, arrested in Kennington, and charged, in April 1891, at the London County Sessions with malicious wounding In February 1894, the *Sun* newspaper, confusing Cutbush with another maniac, named, again aptly, Colicutt, whose penchant it was to go around much more sanguivorously stabbing women in the *Gluteus maximus,* set about pinning the Ripper's crimes on him Cutbush, the nephew, incidentally, of a former Superintendent (Executive) at Scotland Yard, was by then safely stowed away in Broadmoor

Ostrog was first mentioned by Cullen in 1965 Donald McCormick, who had not so much as mentioned his existence in the first (1959) edition of his *The Identity of Jack the Ripper,* corrects his forename to Mikhail in the second (1970) revised edition of his book, and just cynically adds his name to the list of Dr. Pedachenko aliases And there the matter remains

This simply is not good enough. The more so, because the evidence for Dr. Alexander Pedachenko's existence is based on something as fragile as the word of that notoriously dishonest journalist William Le Queux, who claimed, in *Things I Know* (1923), that after the Russian revolution the Kerensky government permitted him to see a manuscript, 'Great Russian Criminals', written in French by Rasputin, a claim which has been convincingly demonstrated to be false

The heartening message for the next few generations of Ripperphiles is that the Ripper files seem to be, like the categories of negligence, never closed

---

REFERENCES

Jack the Ripper Summing Up and Verdict Colin Wilson & Robin Odell Bantam Press £12 95.

The Complete Jack the Ripper Donald Rumbelow W H Allen £14 95

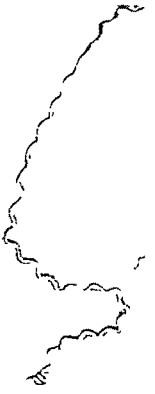
Jack the Ripper 100 Years of Investigation Terence Sharkey Ward Lock £10 95

The Ripper Legacy The Life and Death of Jack the Ripper Martin Howells and Keith Skinner Sidgwick & Jackson £12 95

Jack the Ripper The Bloody Truth Melvin Harris Columbus Books £14 95

The Crimes, Detection and Death of Jack the Ripper Martin Fido Weidenfeld and Nicolson £10 95

Jack the Ripper One Hundred Years of Mystery Peter Underwood Blandford Press £11 95



A TALENT TO PLEASE — THE PHILLIPS COLLECTION

by Muriel Julius

AMERICA is unique in the world in being so generously endowed with museums and art galleries consecrated to the commemoration of their opulent donors J. Paul Getty, Clay Frick, Norton Simon, Whitney, Barnes, Hirshhorn, Freer, and now Sackler

Different from all these is the Phillips Collection in Washington When both his father and brother died in 1918, Duncan Phillips and his wife, Marjorie, a painter, decided to create in their memory a gallery of modern art open to the public It was the first of its kind in America Two rooms in their home were set aside Musical recitals were held on Sundays, an art school took over during the week, and exhibitions showing the work of new, young artists were started

The Phillips is the most welcoming museum I know It is housed in a large red brick mansion near Dupont Circle, an area dotted with embassies and fine residences. When first I went there, many years ago, it really did feel like visiting a private home. It is much larger now and the family have long since moved out, but the atmosphere is still relaxed and friendly In March this year, two huge pink magnolias in full bloom beckoned me in Inside there are no uniformed guards but young women, sometimes artists or art history graduates with whom it is a pleasure to chat. The fine chairs and antique settees are there to be sat upon!

The collection now numbers two thousand five hundred items It is so that renovations can be carried out that part of it is on tour. Sponsored by Grand Metropolitan it will be at the Hayward Gallery, London until August 14th before going to Frankfurt and Madrid

Duncan and Marjorie Phillips seem to have been the kind of patrons artists dream about Not only did they buy the work of favourite artists in quantity throughout their careers — (they owned forty-seven paintings by Karl Knaths who they supported financially as well) — but their early recognition of talent was remarkable. Their benign attitudes are reflected in the collection There are few works by German Expressionists Even the Francis Bacon on exhibition here is merely enigmatic

The exhibition is arranged chronologically, the earliest work being 'The Repentant Peter', circa 1600 by El Greco When purchased in 1922, the work of this artist, long neglected, was just being reappraised The great strength of the Collection is in French nineteenth century works Ingres, Corot, Daumier, Cézanne, Van Gogh, Odilon Redon Among the twentieth century painters included are two remarkable early Kandinsky's of 1912 and 1913, a 'white' Utrillo of 1911, a Modigliani portrait, an exquisite Morandi still life, a Rouault portrait of the poet Verlaine, four works by Braque and Bonnard, several by Cézanne, Klee, two particularly good de Stael's of 1952 and two Mark Rothko's of 1953/4

But I was particularly interested to see the works of American artists who are little known here The Phillips Collection has very considerable

holdings of their work, so it seems a great pity that all are represented by a single canvas only

Thanks to the excellent exhibition mounted by the Arts Council of Great Britain we now recognise the work of Edward Hopper — here an unpeopled townscape with a railway track suggestive of surreal non-communication We may also recognise the work of Milton Avery, Georgia O'Keeffe, John Marin, Maurice Prendergast and possibly George Bellows But how many are familiar with Arthur Dove, Marsden Hartley, Karl Knaths, Albert Pinkham Ryder or the delightful William Merritt Chase?

In the first decade of this century the most exciting gallery of modern art in New York was the 291 owned by Alfred Stieglitz It was at 291 Fifth Avenue This influential, gregarious Jew, educated in Europe, showed the work of his friends, Arthur Dove, John Marin and Marsden Hartley whom Stieglitz supported until his death in 1943 He was also an exceptional photographer. No one who has seen his explorations of the face and body of Georgia O'Keeffe which have several times been exhibited, will forget them One thousand six hundred of these photographs exist But the importance of the 291 was the fact that they showed the latest work done by European artists, including Matisse, Rodin and Aschile Gorky.

Both before and after their marriage Stieglitz orchestrated and exhibited the work of Georgia O'Keeffe This former art teacher, known for her immaculately painted, over-sized flowers with strong sexual overtones, became a holy dragon in later life She died in 1986

Duncan Phillips, a long-standing patron of the 291 gallery, began buying O'Keeffe in 1923 'The White Place' of 1940 was painted in New Mexico where she lived from 1929 It shows a dramatic cliff formation distorted to a monumental scale With its high horizon the emphasis is on the configurations of the land rather than the sky — a compelling image

Arthur Dove began showing his 'Abstractions' at 291 in 1910, one of the first American artists to paint in so abstract a manner He went to live in the country and farmed, but continued to exhibit, drawing on nature as his source 'Flour Mill II' of 1938 included here is a series of loosely defined forms in earth tones against a creamy white ground, a subtle distillation of a landscape

William Merritt Chase (1849-1916) was a renowned dandy who lived exotically in the finest studio in New York His domestic interiors with fashionable women as centre-pieces have wit and style but here, in 'Hide and Seek' of 1888 we see dimly two little girls in white dresses in a large, dramatically dark room

Marsden Hartley (1877-1943) studied art in William Merritt Chase's school Like John Marin and Wilmslow Homer he lived on the coast of Maine There similarity ends 'Off the Banks at Night' painted in 1942 is a dark, stygian seascape with strangely outlined clouds

The Wilmslow Homer and John Marin seascapes are unremarkable.

As for the famed Albert Pinkham Ryder (1847-1917) his 'Macbeth and the Witches' is so dark as to be impenetrable

In an altogether different mood is the portrait Duncan Phillips commissioned in 1919 from George Luks (1866-1933) His subject is the actor Otis Skinner (whose daughter, Cornelia, wrote 'Our Hearts were Young and Gay') in his role of Colonel Burdau in 'The Honour of his Family'. A rakish figure in a battered top hat, his arms crossed, holding a silver-topped cane in his grey gloved hand, he regards us with an amused, quizzical, wordly grin — a marvellous image

In the same mould Walt Kuhn (1877-1949) painted portraits of show-business people dressed up yet not at work They have a melancholy air Certainly his 'Show girl with Plumes', of 1931, a po-faced beauty is anything but gay She sits, bare shouldered with a towering confection of two white and two black ostrich feathers on her head She too stares directly at us but defensively, daring us to judge her

More beguiling than any of these painters is Maurice Prendergast (1858-1924) who Mr Phillips described as 'a delightful decorator' Most well known as a watercolourist, 'The Ponte della Paglia' of 1898/89 was painted in oils in Venice A veritable bouquet of gaily dressed ladies cross the bridge over part of the lagoon while beyond is the Grand Canal with fine palazzi stretching into the distance Prendergast had a tricky habit which made owners reluctant to leave him alone with his work He loved to make 'improvements' The present work, we are told, was reworked in 1922. One can imagine him brightening the red, orange, green and yellow parasols of the ladies that so gaily adorn the foreground of this work

Two artists, Manet and Picasso, are represented by unfamiliar works Manet's 'Ballet Espagnol' looks like a rapidly executed work of his pink and black period It shows four expressionless dancers and a few musicians in a bodega A bunch of flowers in white paper lies at the feet In fact, it was a painting of the troupe of dancers from the Theatre Royale in Madrid who visited Paris in 1862 It was the first of many paintings by Manet of Spanish subjects This was a decade of hispanomania in France In 1838 a collection of four hundred and twelve Spanish paintings assembled for King Louis-Phillippe and called the Spanish Museum had opened to the public It contained many works by Velasquez, El Greco and Goya In the same period Maréchal Soult had collected over two hundred paintings by Zurbaran, Murillo and de Ribera Manet, of course, saw them Velasquez was his hero — a painter for painters he called him He had scandalised society with his paintings of the nude 'Olympia' and 'Le Déjeuner sur l'herbe' of two fully clothed men and two nude women both completed in 1963, so a visit to Spain in 1865 provided a respite It is hard to credit that between 1859 and 1869 Manet could not sell a single painting, and that 'Olympia' only entered the Louvre in 1907 as a result of the intervention of Clemenceau

The work of Pablo Picasso is so largely concentrated on the human face and figure that a conventional still life of teapots and bowls on a table in front of a portrait and a drawing comes as a surprise This painting done

at Gosol in Spain in the summer of 1906 belongs to Picasso's pink period It was a gift to Mrs Phillips and until her death was kept in her private apartments

In the Paris winter of 1901 Picasso started his remarkable series of blue paintings. He was extremely poor and this colour expressed the winter cold, poverty and pity Even the incomparable 'The Two Saltimbanques', now at the National Gallery on loan from Russia, did not find a buyer until 1908 when Morosov bought it for three hundred francs

In 1927 Mr Phillips bought 'The Blue Room' The painting shows Picasso's room at 130 Boulevard de Clichy. Behind the bed is the Toulouse Lautrec poster of May Milton and a small seascape A disproportionately small woman stands in a wide, shallow basin on the floor bathing herself On page 19 of *Picasso et la Tradition Française* published in Paris in 1928, Wilhelm Uhde wrote ' a painting I bought more than twenty years ago. The first work by an unknown artist that I owned, a nude woman with blonde hair taking a bath in a blue room I bought it for ten francs at a mattress maker's in Montmartre On the inside of his shop he carried on his business in bedding Outside he was an art dealer for young unknown painters'

When an artist becomes famous all too often one forgets the early struggle About an incident in 1902 *(Daix and Boudaille,* page 215) Picasso wrote· 'I was living in the Rue Champollion I wanted to make some money I'm a little ashamed but that's how it was So I did this pastel I rolled it up and carried it to Berthe Weill (his dealer). She lived at the other end of Paris It was snowing And me with my pastel under my arm She had no money . so I went away and left her the pastel'. It sold in 1914 for 700 francs

The Phillips Collection owns one undisputed masterpiece about which many column inches have been written It is of course Renoir's 1880 hymn to flirtatious conviviality — William Feaver's happy phrase — *'Le Déjeuner des Canotiers'* An al fresco luncheon has just finished on the terrace at the Restaurant Fournaise on an island at Chatou, a popular meeting place among oarsmen along the Seine The mixture of sun, fresh air, pretty young girls and healthy young men, the wine and fruit, the dappled sunshine on the glasses and napery, the flicks of red threaded throughout linking the relationship of colour, tone, shape and pattern Describing one such luncheon in 'La Vie Moderne' of 1879 the journalist Gustave Goetschy write 'The meal is tumultuous, the glasses are filled and emptied with dizzying speed, the conversation goes to and fro a rowdy, heated intoxication rises from the tables on which the bottles quiver and shake'.

Except for 'The Ball at the Moulin de la Galette' painted four years previously, this was the most ambitious project Renoir attempted with its many figures and complex spatial organisation Although they meld so harmoniously, each of the sitters came to Chatou and were posed and painted separately The gaiety and happiness of the scene are shown in a number of little gestures, intimate and keenly observed, but Renoir was

careful to eliminate any narrative content We are given no clue to the nature of the relationship between his sitters. The only intention is to give us a luminous image of vibrant life and this is done by means of contrasts and diagonals, the rigorous outlines of the two canotiers in front, the richness of the still life and the rhythm and distribution of colours

Over the years the identity of the models was the subject of much debate, resolved finally by Meier-Graefe in 1912 We know now that the pretty young girl in the straw hat fondling a puppy unhygenically placed on the tablecloth — a practice still followed by the French — is Aline Charigot, a seamstress who shortly afterwards became Renoir's wife. Three years later, in 1882, when he used her as the model for 'Dance in the Country' she had already become plump The brawny fellow standing behind her is the son of the restaurant owner At the back in a top hat is Charles Ephrussi, a banker and man about town who by 1880 had already bought impressionist paintings Others were a journalist Maggiolo who leans over Angèle, one of Renoir's models, while at bottom right is Gustave Caillebotte He was then aged thirty-two, a rich marine engineer who had adopted impressionist ideas and helped materially by buying their pictures He painted himself, and the considerable number of his works exhibited at the National Gallery in Washington in 1986 is even now resulting in a new found fame. When he died, only thirteen years later, he left his sixty-five impressionist paintings to the State They included the 'Ball at the Moulin de la Galette' which is now in the Musée D'Orsay

When Duncan Phillips bought his Renoir from Durand-Ruel in 1923 he paid what now seems the unbelievably low sum of $125,000 It reflects more perfectly than perhaps any other work in the collection his declared aim which was to create a 'joy-giving, life-enhancing influence, assisting people to see beautifully as true artists see'

The title 'Master Paintings from the Phillips Collection' given to this exhibition is not strictly accurate, but it contains many gems I have not mentioned Above all, it has an essentially generous human quality which so many more prestigious collections lack

RUFFIANS IN ROBES

by John Elsom

THE most memorable production of *King Lear* I ever saw . Well, I didn't see all of it, let's say, witnessed anyway, it was a *memorable production*. and since I would not like you to think that I would walk out of a production of *King Lear*, memorable or immemorable, let me admit straight away that, well, yes, I was in it . and since you're all eager to know, I was *excellent,* and I have a press cutting from the *Brentwood Gazette* to prove it, if you read between the lines, and my father, a stern critic in these matters, said that it was the best production of *King Lear* performed by under-sixteen-year-olds that he'd ever seen, and for years after he would thoughtfully recall *King Lear* as an excuse for not giving me more pocket money 'Ripeness is all', he said 'There are right times for handing over one's estate, and wrong times, and look what happened to King Lear!'

Anyway, it was a production not easily forgotten, because it taught me a useful lesson about violence and conflict in the theatre It happened like this The part of Cornwall was played by a talented lad in the third form, while that of Gloucester by someone in the fourth form, a little older, a prefect, about to take his School Certificate, and in a school as hierarchically constructed as ours was, there was an awful symbolism in the thought that a junior boy could attack a senior one, and pluck out his eyes, if only in theory, on the brink of a public examination There was a breathless hush in the Charles R Allison Memorial Theatre as the line came, 'Bind fast his corky arms!' and Cornwall rolled up his muttonchop sleeves, secretly puncturing a phial of stage blood as he did so, and commenced the dis-eyeballing

But one night he went too far He was, as I have said, a talented lad, much prone to improvising in the playground, and a sucker for realism After a triumphant first night, when the mutilation of Gloucester was watched in awed silence by pupils and parents alike, all wondering what the world was coming to, he decided that it was not quite horrible enough — and lacked a touch of credibility Where were the eyeballs after Cornwall had plucked them out? What did he do with them? Unbeknownst to the rest of us, he went along to a local butcher and purchased two sheep's eyes, which he placed in a plastic bag, concealed in his doublet, and while Gloucester was still screaming, 'Oh cruel! Oh. ye gods!', he suddenly produced them without fumbling, and flung them down on the stage

After that, matters got a little out of hand One eyeball bounced and rolled downstage, where it came to rest on the edge of the boards, gazing balefully out at the audience, like a reproachful golfball on the lip of the hole The other was trodden on by a startled servant, me, squirting out sideways from under my foot, towards Regan who kicked it between the goalposts of Gloucester's chair The audience, I am ashamed to say, got

a little out of hand They laughed when I drew my sword to challenge Cornwall, and laughed when he killed me, and split their sides when Gloucester was instructed to smell his way to Dover, and gave a popstar reception to the stagehand who came on at the end of the scene with a dustpan and shovel to clear up what remained of the optic orbs

This experience taught me that there is a thin dividing line between tragedy and black farce — or, in our case, a total shambles — across which the unwary may easily stray It is one of those boundaries which do not appear on any map and you only know that you have crossed it by the shots of the border police, by which time it may be too late Nor is it only a peril to amateurs In my view, Edward Bond crossed it when, in his version of *Lear,* he invented an eye-gouging machine, like a bottle opener, for the purpose of popping out Gloucester's eyes and pickling them in formaldehyde, and it was definitely breached in *The Romans in Britain,* Howard Brenton's parable about Northern Ireland, when the conquering Romans committed sexual atrocities on three naked Celts. Some British writers, such as Peter Barnes, like to tiptoe along the boundary, as if on a tightrope, sometimes wobbling towards farce, sometimes leaning perilously towards tragedy; and that deliberate uncertainty of control was so typical of British theatre in the 1960s that it became almost a genre in itself

But I would like to stay with my original example for the time being, partly because I have already spent so much time in describing it but also because naivety is one of its merits as an illustration *King Lear* can be performed very badly and still work as a play The myth can grip the imagination, even when Lear himself is played by a young man in a grey beard, looped around his ears with twisted wire It can survive when the whole cast is dressed (as we were) in hired robes a size too large, which trailed across the floor, gathering dust and sweet wrapping papers It can survive, even under these circumstances, when the signs are sufficiently clear and, as signs, convincing, to point the direction and shape of the story — or, should I say, to define the frame?

What went wrong was when one sign, the gouging out of Gloucester's eyes, assumed an unnecessary importance over all the other signs, so that we could think of nothing else, and thus twisted the frame out of shape, indeed destroyed it altogether The fault lay not in the fact that sheep's eyes were being used, but that this sudden touch of gruesome realism threatened the conventions which held all the other signs in place. Our storm scene, for example, was a matter of rumbling a thunder sheet and flicking on and off the stage lights, to signify lightning; which may have been primitive but was enough to tell the audience all they needed to know — that here was a storm through which an old man, Lear, was battling his way But after the sheep's eyes had started to roll around the stage, all of us became aware, cast and audience alike, of the unconvincing nature of all the other signs under offer. The storm was reduced to a metal sheet and a light switch We were children once more, trying on clothes found in an attic

Of course, in a production which aimed for extreme realism, sheep's eyes could have been the answer to a tricky problem; and, of course, it could be argued that as a result of this theatrical gaffe, a different play emerged. Instead of watching a school performance of *King Lear*, we witnessed adolescents vainly trying to grapple with the mysterious conventions of adult life, where the roles never fit the people, and where actual cruelty is comic while stylised cruelty is tragic, and the 'robes and furred gowns' hid all but the frailty of the unformed bodies and minds which were trying to uphold them Those who love paradox might point out that the *King Lear* which went wrong in the Charles R Allison Memorial Theatre was itself a metaphor for the human condition — and that the chance happening in this case spoke louder than the prepared text

But I do not want to sidetrack myself If the accident proves better than the planned performance, that is itself a further accident, and by definition cannot be repeated I want to concentrate on the more straightforward idea that the theatre should provide the frame which it purports to deliver and that, where possible, accidents should be avoided In the 1960s, we had our aesthetic theory of accidents, the Happenings movement, and it took us straight into the 1970s, a fate which it would be foolhardy to repeat To avoid accidents, the theatre needs to observe or to establish afresh the social conventions which allow it to function

Chief among these conventions is the general acceptance that the theatre is not 'real life' It is a licensed play area where anything can be contemplated, in the full social recognition that the events portrayed are not replicas of reality, nor substitutes for it, but are signs which at best encourage our minds, as a group, to focus upon different areas of experience Mimesis is useful to clarify the nature of the sign in the audience's mind· they can quickly recognise its meaning, whether or not they have come across it before But slavish impersonation, that is, imitation which exceeds the bounds of duty by going on imitating whether or not the sign has been established, is a kind of formalism It slows down the development of the performance, distorts the frame and, at worst, whittles away at those conventions which separate theatre from real life. Excessive naturalism in the theatre invites the audience to say, 'But this is *so* much like life that it's not like theatre at all!' — which is the treason of the narcissist.

In early forms of theatre, actors had to keep on reminding the audience that what they were seeing was artifice, not actuality, for otherwise stage murders would have been mistaken for real ones, and they would all have been arrested Nowadays, audiences sometimes have to be reminded that what is artificial is not necessarily untruthful — which is why we may be drawn towards making our stage murders as realistic as possible. But in doing so, we still have to preserve this vital distinction between theatre and real life, because the whole nature and function of the theatre would be lost

If we say, as we sometimes do in Britain, that the theatre is 'about

conflict', the key word is not 'conflict' but 'about'. Conflict is all around us, and inside us, together with birth, death and violence The theatre can claim no copyright on conflict, or we would all be rich But the theatre does provide a frame through which we can contemplate conflict, which is the most powerful social argument for its existence. We go into the theatre knowing that it is a peaceful place, a protected place, where, unless something goes wrong, no violence will happen It is for this reason that we can afford to contemplate conflict in all its range and complexity, starting with the divisions in the soul and ending with the downfall of the state

In a real-life riot, we have no time to think at all We have to concentrate on dodging the stones or the bullets, or in getting our shot in first. In the aimless confusion of Beirut or Haiti, there is no theatre, and because there is no theatre, there is no escape from the aimlessness and the confusion There may be mimetic rituals to ward off bad luck or to summon powerful forces to one's side, but these are superstitious techniques justified solely by whether they work or not The theatre is not, and never can be, useful in this way. It may have had its origins in religion, but its process is entirely humanist

The theatre excels in being able to provide, through the immense subtlety of its medium, an ordered presentation of signs, each of which points to a particular aspect of the overall conflict, and which collectively indicates possible relationships between the details and the whole As a play text — that is, as a plan for a performance — *King Lear* provides a supreme example as to how this can be done, with the patterning of plots and sub-plots, characters and ciphers, words and images, combining to provide a whole frame through which so much can be perceived, understood and felt But, of course, the frame can be pulled out of shape, as happens to a greater or lesser extent in all productions, or shattered altogether, and when that happens, it is often as if the fragments stick in the mind, like shafts of broken glass, irritating with arbitrary violence, unresolved passions, signs which lead nowhere, except into further confusion; and that is when people despair of the theatre 'What use is it?' they say, and the answer has to be, under these circumstances, 'None'.

In live theatre, the actual presence of the audience, and of actors working together, provide a social force for holding the frame intact. We did not need to be told, in my school, that the sheep's eyes were a great mistake The laughter of the audience was evidence enough. And we did not need to be reminded from that moment on that the pursuit of melodramatic effects for their own sake was counter-productive But some of us drifted towards film, and others to television, where it is much harder to decide whether a sign has been established or not, and received and understood by a mass but invisible audience, and where the dividing line between the calculated effect and the arbitrary sensation is much less easy to determine, and where the shafts from a shattered frame can do more damage perhaps than simply unsettle one's peace of mind, for there is not the same natural distinction on television between theatre and real

Literary Supplement

THE PLACE OF TOLSTOY

Tolstoy A N Wilson Hamish Hamilton £16 95

This book, says A N Wilson, in this immensely impressive biography, is the history of a great genius whose art grew out of his three uneasy and irresolvable relationships his relationship with God, his relationship with women and his relationship with Russia In all cases, the relationships were stormy, full of contradictions They were love-hate relationships, and the hate was sometimes rather hard to distinguish from the love Tolstoy is secure in his literary pedestal as one of the immortals *War and Peace* has often been described as the greatest novel ever written It is enough for most of us that he wrote that book and *Anna Karenina* the rest of his ninety volumes is seldom discussed outside Russia, although A N Wilson has much good to say of *Resurrection* Yet Wilson reminds us that Tolstoy was widely admired in Britain before *War and Peace* and *Anna Karenina* were available to the British public The Croydon Brotherhood and other similar Tolstoyan manifestations in England eventually disappeared But no-one can doubt the profound effect of Tolstoy's writings on Ghandi and through Ghandi on India and many other countries 'Ghandi', writes Wilson, 'began to read Tolstoy when he was in South Africa and all Tolstoy's pacifist writings, especially *The Kingdom of God is Within You,* made a deep impression upon him It was from Tolstoy that he learnt the idea of passive resistance And it was by passive resistance, helped along by a catastrophically changed economic climate at home in England, that the Raj fell Here, allowing for all the obvious modifications and exceptions which such a generalisation would demand, it would seem as though passive resistance did actually work '

Wilson insists on calling Tolstoy 'a great Christian artist' But Tolstoy, though more of a Christian than Ghandi, would not be accepted as such by many Christians today (His non-violence, however, retains a large measure of support) Wilson vividly describes the scenes at Tolstoy's funeral 'In spite of the fact that Andrey Tolstoy had pleaded with the Bishop of Tula to allow them a full Orthodox funeral, permission for this was forbidden by the Church authorities Tolstoy's was therefore the first public burial in Russia since the conversion of St Vladimir which was not attended by the rites of the Church. But it would not be described as a secular funeral The huge crowd was full of reverence They defied their priests by singing the ancient Russian funeral hymns When the coffin passed them by, everyone except the police removed their hats and many fell to their knees ' Tolstoy indubitably loved the human in Christ, but he did not believe in His divinity or in other vital tenets of the Christian religion

A scurrilous journalist once wrote of Gladstone 'In public he pursued a life of the greatest piety and chastity In private he pursued and possessed every kind of woman' Gladstone's sons vindicated his virtue in the Law Courts It would have been impossible to do the same for Tolstoy He treated his gifted

wife abominably No doubt their ideas of good behaviour differed Wilson retails a wonderful story of Desmond MacCarthy's visit Tolstoy showed him to his room 'Oh and there was one small thing — the chamber pot If MacCarthy did not very much object, Tolstoy liked his guests to empty their own chamber pots He felt that it was demeaning to ask the servants to perform the office on anyone else's behalf ' Soon afterwards, Countess Tolstoy entered She made sure that MacCarthy was comfortable and then enquired. 'Has he told you about the chamber pot?' 'Yes, thank you very much Countess Tolstoy ' 'But has he' — her voice becoming shriller — 'has he told you about the chamber pot?' 'Yes, it is perfectly all right I do assure you I am quite happy to empty my own ' By now Sofya Andreyevna's voice is loud and sharp 'Always he tells his guests this nonsense Our lazy servants, what do we pay them for if they do no work? I must ask you most *strictly,* Mr MacCarthy, not to empty your own chamber pot It really is too humiliating that my husband should have asked you such a question! '

Yet at the end she said to the dying man 'I have never loved anyone but you' We are told that to understand all is to forgive all A N Wilson certainly enables us to understand Tolstoy much better and on the whole to admire him more

FRANK LONGFORD

LAST VOLUME, BUT NOT THE LAST WORD

Never Despair Winston Churchill 1945-1965 Heinemans £25 00

I remember quite clearly Martin Gilbert taking over the Churchill Volumes from Randolph in 1968, after four years as research assistant This majestic series started twenty-six year ago I have reviewed all Martin Gilbert's contributions, including several of the companion volumes Martin and his wife Susie to whom this last book is dedicated, deserve *national* thanks

Martin Gilbert has created his own Churchill but these last twenty years of his life tell us only adequately about an old and distinguished man's troubles, his remaining pleasures, wonderful letters from his ever-present wife, all this, though not quite as before Lingering retirement, and the second premier-ship are not to be compared with the exciting material in earlier volumes

Of course there are the characteristic Churchill incidents, for example, the presentation of the C H , to General Pug Ismay and secondly his personal but always correct relations with royalty, are a joy to read Of course Churchill should have retired earlier, which would at least have given Eden a chance to show whether he was equal to the very special job of Prime Minister, but Churchill was used to overseeing foreign policy and defence; indeed he did so even when Lord Alexander was appointed Minister of Defence It must be remembered that Jock Colville in his diary covered Winston up to his resignation and that Gilbert had seen the Colville diaries

Eventually, in genuine retirement after Easter in 1955, he continued, partly in the South of France with his book *A History of the English-Speaking Peoples* and John Colville raised the funds necessary for the foundation of Churchill College, Cambridge

In conclusion I have to admit that the last word on Churchill has not been written just because Martin Gilbert's last volume has appeared In this last volume the author of the life-like Churchill is writing about the less romantic and less warrior side of his hero, and quite rightly has not time for summary

or comment on the full-length picture of the great man Martin Gilbert has finished a fine job it is for a future historian to write a critical history of Martin Gilbert's massive biography

KENNETH LINDSAY

A NEW LOOK FOR THE CATHOLIC CHURCH

Sign and Promise A Theology of the Church for a Changing World John Thornhill, S M Collins £4 95

The author is head of the systematic theology department of the Catholic Theological Union in Sydney and a Marist priest Until 1985 he was a member of the International Theological Commission appointed by Pope John Paul II He has been a member of the Anglican Roman Catholic International Commission (Arcic II) since 1983

Since the Second Vatican Council the Roman Catholic Church has changed John Thornhill underlines how the emphasis now is no longer on authority and hierarchy but on sharing or communion As a result ecumenical involvement has been more whole hearted with efforts to find common ground It is no longer on the defensive against Protestantism but self-critical 'A real sharing in the mystery of Christ unites us with our separated brothers and sisters Indeed what unites us far outweighs our differences' Until recently the whole emphasis of the Roman Church has been 'counter-reformation', but in the twentieth century this has lost its realism There have been new ways to be explored, the Liturgical movement, the Biblical movement, the Lay apostolate and the Ecumenical movement

During any period of idological adjustment there are bound to be problems Doubt is cast on old certainties To what extent should local churches have more voice in deliberations? How is it possible to proceed to a world scale for the resolution of problems, rather than just to Europe? Is consensus appropriate in a world when there are so many differences in regions? The author quotes the early seventeenth century phrase 'Ecclesia semper reformanda' (The church is always in need of reformation) To the traditionalists these sound to be words of rebellion but clearly they express the mood of the Roman Church today, or part of it

The author's theme can be summed up in his own words What is the place of the Church in God's plan for his Creation? The institution is essential, though some people attached to Our Lord become irritated with it The author considers that today we benefit greatly from a renewed awareness of the man, Jesus, long eclipsed by dominant Johannine emphasis on his divinity The whole concern of the man Jesus was to bring mankind to know the Father whose ways overturn our familiar world and establish the new rule he proclaimed in the kingdom And so he looks to a people belonging to God who through discipleship with Christ would bring about God's purposes for mankind The key is sharing and he has chapters on sharing the call to serve, to mission and sharing in a history

His final chapter is concerned with the Virgin Mary and the Church In Roman theology, she is seen as having a unique place with Christ in the plan of salvation Also she is seen as a model of the listening and obedient Church These two views are not compatible, and Thornhill considers it urgent in the modern world that there should be a compromise to reconcile them 'It is from

Mary that the Church will learn the way of the Gospel'

This is an important book which will appeal to students of theology It is also addressed to the general reader who will find some of it hard going but worth it

LAURENCE TANNER

THE CASE AGAINST WOMEN PRIESTS

Why No Women Priests? W Gilbert Wilson Churchman Publishing Ltd £4 95

The author is the Bishop of Kilmore in the Anglican Church of Ireland For thirty years he has been a member of its General Synod In 1976 the following motion was proposed in Synod — 'That this House approves in principle of the ordination of women' The Bishop did not vote and thought no decision should be made until the subject had been studied more fully This book is the result of his own study He has widened the background for the debate and has analysed the arguments clearly in non-technical language

He first investigates the ways in which a male priesthood developed in Israel For ritual reasons connected with the reproductive process women could not be considered He then considers marriage customs and the inferior position of women in Our Lord's Day He quotes Rabbi José (c 150 A D) 'Talk not much with women' However, a modern commentator would say that these words, against a background of strict family life, were a warning about the moral danger of casual and flippant conversation Certainly Our Lord refused to discriminate against women but on the other hand he did not choose any women to be apostles The Roman Church bases its opposition to women priests on this latter fact and also on the unbroken traditions

Christianity in many ways freed itself from the restrictions of Judaism A considerable proportion of the book, perhaps an excessive one, is concerned with the relationship of Jesus to the Torah But as far as attitudes to women were concerned in the early centuries of Christianity there was a new factor, the cult of virginity Eve was regarded as the temptress and all women outside religious orders could be regarded as spiritually inferior to men There is no doubt that among the Early Fathers there was a prejudice against women which was the result of Gnosticism or a reaction against the excesses of paganism

For the Anglican Church to proceed now to the ordination of women would certainly damage relations with the Orthodox Church and the Roman Catholic Church Also it would cause divisions among its own members No one these days would deny spiritual equality to women Christ came to share our humanity and that humanity must include women The Bishop quotes the words of Dr Runcie — 'Because the humanity of Christ our High Priest includes male and female, it is thus argued that the ministerial priesthood should now be open to women in order the more perfectly to represent Christ's inclusive High Priesthood'

Nevertheless the fact remains that some of the most bitter opposition to the ordination of women comes from other women They would think that as Christianity is an historical religion no female could re-present the male image

of Christ at a Eucharist and to attempt to do so would be grotesque They may not be theologically minded but the depth of such opinions should not be underestimated

LAURENCE TANNER

CARDUS ON MUSIC

Cardus on Music A Centenary Collection Edited by Donald Wright Hamish Hamilton £16 95

As any reader of the Sunday newspapers will know it is difficult to write about the Arts without becoming a candidate for the 'Pseud's Corner' column of *Private Eye* Music, in particular, seems to call forth pretentious waffle It is, after all, difficult, to describe what cannot be depicted in words One exception was the late Sir Neville Cardus, who was equally well known as a cricket commentator The essays in this collection are selected from those he wrote in the *Manchester Guardian* from 1927 to 1975 He was devoted to the culture of the North of England and to good prose Both of these have suffered considerably from the decline of the provincial press and the increasing domination of the London tabloids

As a man of his generation, Cardus's taste was particularly directed towards the great Austrian and German composers He was part of the first age to have the benefits of the gramophone and it is interesting to see how he reacted to composers, conductors, and singers who were made familiar to people through recorded sound Many of the essays have an added value because the sounds produced by these singers and conductors are now being given a new fame through the marvel of the CD Naturally one will find things to quibble at such as his statement in 1934, that it would be impossible to better Lotte Lehmann as the Marshalin in *Der Rosenkavalier* This has happily been proved wrong to those with the good luck to have heard Elisabeth Schwarzkopf in the same splendid role

These short essays are mainly organised by composer and include Beethoven, Bruckner and Elgar but there is far too much space devoted to Wagner This book would be extremely enjoyable to those who love music to keep near to their increasing pile of stereo equipment so that one can refresh oneself with the sound of clear pure English describing the effect of music Take this, for example, on the greatest of all musicians, Mozart 'He does not strike the poetic attitude, he never assertively declares his joys, his griefs Happiness and sorrow play like sunlight and shadow through Mozart's music, swiftly, innocently A happy turn of melody comes, and we are made happy, too Then as suddenly, pathos surprises us, steals out of the serene air'

RICHARD MULLEN

SHELLEY'S CHILD OF LOVE AND LIGHT

Mary Shelley Muriel Spark Constable £14 95

Identifying, no doubt, with his first matrimonial experience with Vivienne Haigh-Wood, T S Eliot said that 'the weight of Mrs Shelley (on Shelley)

must have been pretty heavy' Muriel Spark's Mary Shelley (1797-1851) is an entirely different, understandable being, she tracks around the poet's wife and inserts defences from every angle, expressed in fine intellectual sentences which are not precisely psychological and are the essence and value of this book A typical example here might be her discussion of Mary's 'constitutional pessimism' — 'In developing this distinction, (from 'constitutional discontent') I would suggest that an individual may maintain a satisfactory fellowship with the world, who is intellectually pessimistic — today, in fact, this type is quite common — but the emotional pessimist is rarely at ease in personal relationships'

Originally published in 1951, in a small edition, entitled *Child of Light,* Muriel Spark's study is reissued, revised, and updated as to recent Shelley scholarship, but still retaining its rather awkward shape — a biographical monograph, to which is appended essays on the works and a very short conclusion One important factor of change is that it is no longer necessary to plead for a reconsideration of Mary Shelley as a novelist *Frankenstein* speaks for itself, and *The Last Man,* a kind of early Science Fiction — is widely available in paperback editions Muriel Spark has also made more subtle her first (and widely accepted) view that after the death of Shelley, Mary sought bourgeois respectability for its own sake Mary experienced a conflict 'between nostalgia for her rarefied (life) with Shelley and her new life of social observance' which was rooted in the necessity of securing from Shelley's suspicious and unwilling landed father the competence with which to launch her only surviving child by Shelley — Percy, by name, who, indifferent to the charms of Italian society, 'bought a trumpet to play upon and pined for England, where his main ambition was 'to see the model of the Flying Machine'

It is interesting that, in 1951, Muriel Spark had no idea that she was to become a novelist, and, indeed, at that time expressly repudiated the kind of impressionistic biography which elaborates ' "I lay on the bed and watched the candle flickering on the roof beams", when there is no evidence that I did so' But her analysis of Mary's extremely complex character holds forth the promise of what was to come, as also her 'throw away observations, such as 'We dearly love to see our follies and weaknesses promoted to a theoretical rectitude, we feel warmly towards those who can offer a meaning for our suffering and ignominy' A valuable side-effect of reading Muriel Spark on Mary Shelley is one's impulse then to turn to both the published Letters and the Journals of Mary Shelley, this is a nineteenth century woman and writer who deserves every attention

MOLLY TIBBS

THE REBEL POET

The Politics of Paradise A Vindication of Byron Michael Foot Collins £17 50

The two-hundredth anniversary of the birth of Lord Byron occurred on January 22nd, 1988 Michael Foot has fittingly commemorated the event by writing a long and spirited book on the poet's radical political ideas and actions He highlights Byron's constant references in poems and speeches to what was for him a permanent dilemma, the difficulty of choosing between the tyranny

of the native ignorance in which we emerge and the freedom of the enlightenment to which we may aspire. God, Byron thought, seemed to want it both ways

In this, the mystery of man's life and actions upon earth, lay the chief obstacle for Byron's contemporary Hazlitt in attempting to come to terms with the poet's political faith Equally liberal, similarly radical, just as frightening to the establishment, Hazlitt yet wished to make more concessions within a democratic framework of government than Byron ever envisaged Perhaps to compare the two writers is in some way inappropriate since Hazlitt's analysis of his political faith is fully developed in most of its implications throughout his *Essays on the Principles of Human Action* and, most memorably of all, in *The Spirit of the Age* Byron's method was different, embodying his politics in his poetry and taking action over specific issues like the oppression suffered by the Greeks and the struggles of the Italian Risorgimento, none the less powerful in its effect, even to the extent of his losing his life But the impact of Hazlitt's disagreement with Byron has not before, I think, been described and explicitly referenced in the way in which Michael Foot does it here Almost a quarter of the book is given to its exposition

As a debater and man of action, Byron showed his mettle early His maiden speech in the House of Lords, on February 27th, 1812, had been alarming to ministers of the crown it was a powerful vindication of the Nottingham stocking frame-workers' right to protest when their jobs were threatened by mechanisation (Surprisingly enough, Byron had been the superior in debate at Harrow to his schoolfellow, Robert Peel, later a Cabinet Minister and famous for the establishment of the police force) But when, later, Byron found a ready sale for his novel-poems the deeper aspects of his freedom-loving nature were more widely known in their personal rather than public manifestations.

The Politics of Paradise is a spirited vindication of Byron's anti-conservative views and these, like those of Michael Foot himself, were as deeply grounded in emotion as in rational conviction The book is in no sense a complete biography of the poet but takes the more rewarding ground of his faith and the problems it brought him Some of the author's ideas about how closely, at a later date, Byron's beliefs would have accorded with those of a modern socialist take a good deal of swallowing and the notion of Byron in the guise of a 'feminist' is surely incredible But Michael Foot's inimitable fire and inspiration are there as well as his incisive scholarship The book is properly subversive and is most enjoyable

BETTY ABEL

SHORTER REVIEWS

Economic Consequences of Democracy (Wildwood House £12 50) This is the second revised edition, in paperback, of Samuel Brittan's wide ranging and detailed study of 'the economic strains that threaten the liberal democratic system' A great deal of the book is derived from material which has already been published On the question of constitutional reform, Mr.

Brittan regards the first past the post electoral system as the unfair dominance of the majority over the rights of the minority to have a share in government He looks for consensus in government policy, partly through proportional representation As to the rights of the individual, he supports Lord Hailsham's pleas for a Bill of Rights which would define the liberty of the subject

Nora: A Biography of Nora Joyce (Hamish Hamilton, £16 95) is a most important book Brilliantly structured and beautifully written by Brenda Maddox, in despite of Professor Richard Ellman's *caveat* that Joyce's Nora was a dry bone The result is an absolutely essential addition to peri-Joycean literature, and an object lesson in the truth of the — slightly amended — dictum that behind (at varying distances) nearly every great man stands (in varying degrees of relationship) a not-to-be-discounted woman (R W-E)

Shakespeare — Middleton Collaborations (Alioth Press $22 50) This volume follows Mark Dominic's earlier study on the Shakespeare Apocrypha, *William Shakespeare and the Birth of Merlin* Now he considers the authorship of *The Puritan* and *A Yorkshire Tragedy,* and argues that both are the work of collaboration between Shakespeare and Thomas Middleton. He contends that there is stylistic evidence of Shakespeare's 'hand in these plays' supported and 'confirmed by textual and external evidence'. He regards the collaboration as very considerable On the other hand he does not pretend to be definitive He hopes that his study will be a 'viable first step in a reconsideration of the plays in question' It is certainly a provocative book which should attract much interest The volume includes the texts of the two plays, reproduced from C F Tucker Brooke's *The Shakespeare Apocrypha*

Dublin, a Traveller's Companion (Constable £14 95 hardback £7 95 paperback) This is a valuable addition to the Traveller's Companion series, consisting of some 163 extracts from mainly contemporary writings on aspects of historic Dublin, selected by Thomas and Valerie Packenham 'We have tried as far as possible to follow the brief for the series — that extracts should relate to events rather than describe buildings' In the result, the volume provides a vivid and colourful account of historic Dublin, with the help of an Introduction by Thomas Packenham, and numerous illustrations It is much more than a traveller's companion, to be enjoyed and appreciated by all who know and feel for this extraordinary city

Australia Felix (Chatto & Windus £9 95) This humourous history of Australia has been commissioned by the Australian Bicentennial Authority The author, Victoria Roberts is one of Australia's most celebrated cartoonists The volume is a combination of hilarious cartoons and witty text, outlining the fictional story of eight generations of the Boyle family It starts with the original immigrant, Agnes Boyle, transported to the colonies for molesting a rabbit Finally Annette Boyle continues the family with numerous children It is good fun, light hearted with streaks of sadness and frustration Whether it really illustrates the Commonwealth's history is certainly arguable

ORDER FORM

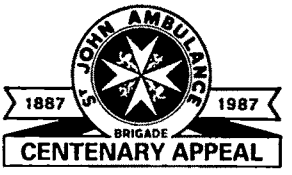
To **The Subscription Manager,**

Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG

I enclose herewith my cheque for , for a year's subscription
[For rates, see inside front cover]

Name

Address



ST. JOHN AMBULANCE BRIGADE CENTENARY APPEAL

PLEASE GIVE GENEROUSLY

St John Ambulance Brigade is a voluntary organisation Public donations alone enable the Brigade to come to your aid

Particulars from Mrs Kathleen Duncan, Appeal Director, 1 Grosvenor Crescent, London SW1X 7EF (01-235 5231)

NEW EUROPEAN

A new quarterly review of European affairs covering Europe as a whole, not just the European Community

Contributors include leading industrialists, politicians, academics, lawyers, defence experts, environmentalists and others from this country and the rest of Europe

It will be the first journal of its kind dealing with Europe as a whole

The enormous impact of Europe on Britain since the Second World War makes NEW EUROPEAN essential reading

To NEW EUROPEAN PUBLICATIONS LTD , 14/16 Carroun Road, London SW8 1JT
Please send me a free copy of the "New European"

Name

Address

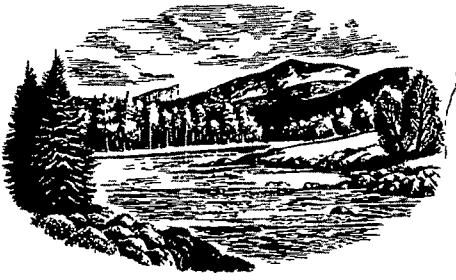
(BLOCK CAPITALS PLEASE)

CRAIGENDARROCH
ROYAL DEESIDE

Set in 29 acres of wooded hillside overlooking the Dee Valley and only 8 miles from Balmoral is Craigendarroch Luxury timeownership lodges furnished and fitted to the highest standards are set in small groups amongst the trees

The 4 star Country House Hotel awarded 5 crowns highly commended by the STB combines old fashioned standards of comfort and service with all modern conveniences The Hotel restaurants are supervised by Bill Gibb, Scotland's Premier Chef

The adjoining Country Club offers facilities including indoor swimming pool, spa bath; saunas, solarium, squash, snooker, trimnasium, Health and Beauty, games room, and creche, while in the grounds there is a 75 metre dry ski slope and tow



For more information on Timeownership, Self Catering rentals or Hotel accommodation please write to -

CRAIGENDARROCH

Braemar Road, Ballater, AB3 5XA
Telephone 0338 55858, Telex 739952, Fax 0338 55447

Printed by MANDEVILLE PRESS, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ, and published by the CONTEMPORARY REVIEW CO LTD, 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG

Contemporary Review

122nd YEAR OF PUBLICATION

SEPTEMBER 1988

FUNDAMENTALISM AND WESTERN ATTITUDES TOWARDS AFGHANISTAN
Guy Brailsford

ISRAEL AND ITS TERRITORIES
The Rev. Canon Laurence Tanner

TWO ENGLISH POETS IN EAST EUROPE:
1. SHAKESPEARE IN THE GERMAN DEMOCRATIC REPUBLIC
Joachim Bohlmann
2. BYRON IN RUSSIA
Boris Gilenson

and other articles together with an eight-page Literary Supplement

£1.30

Contemporary Review

incorporating The Fortnightly

September 1988 Vol. 253 No. 1472 Founded 1866

Contents

		Page
Fundamentalism and Western Attitudes Towards Afghanistan	Guy Brailsford	**113**
Israel and Its Territories	The Rev. Canon Laurence Tanner	**120**
Grasp the Social Security Nettle	Alec L. Parrott	**126**
The Soviets in Turmoil	Leo Muray	**132**
From Addiction to Liberation	Mary Beasley and the Rev. David McGough	**138**
The Far Right in South Africa	John A. Wiseman	**145**
Wordsworth the Tax Collector	A. D. Harvey	**151**
Two English Poets in East Europe		**154**
1. Shakespeare in the German Democratic Republic	Joachim Bohlmann	
2. Byron in Russia	Boris Gilenson	
Correspondence:		
Unilateral Devolution: a One-Sided View	Peter Thomson	**159**
'Giantism' and the EEC	John Coleman	**159**
An Open Letter to the Secretary of State for Education from the President of the Royal Society and the President of the British Academy.	Sir George Porter and Sir Randolph Quirk	**160**
LITERARY SUPPLEMENT		**161**
John A. Loraine, John Biggs-Davison, Laurence Tanner, Richard Mullen, Roy Morrell, James Munson.		
SHORTER REVIEWS		**167**

Editor:
ROSALIND WADE, O.B.E.

Associate Editor:
BETTY ABEL

Editorial Advisers:
PROFESSOR ESMOND WRIGHT
PROFESSOR PAUL WILKINSON

Fine Arts Correspondent:
ERNLE MONEY

Music Correspondent:
DAVID FINGLETON

Finance Director:
LEONARD SKIPP

© 1988. Published monthly by the Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG, England, and printed in England by Mandeville Press, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ. U.S. Mailing Agent: Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 2323 Randolph Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Second Class postage paid at Rahway N.J. Annual subscription (including postage): U.K. £18.50, U.S.A. and Canada $65.00. Rates for all other countries on application. Copies can be sent by airmail outside U.S. and Canada: extra costs given on request. U.S. Postmaster: please send all address corrections to 'Contemporary Review', c/o Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Contemporary Review.
(ISSN/0010/7565)

Contemporary Review

Founded 1866 **incorporating The Fortnightly**

September 1988 **Vol. 253** **No. 1472**

FUNDAMENTALISM AND WESTERN ATTITUDES TOWARDS AFGHANISTAN

by Guy Brailsford

THE Afghan war has been one of the most important international events of the 1980s It is the only war during this decade to have directly involved one of the world's superpowers. It has occurred in an area that is of strategic importance both to the West and to the Soviet Union. It has involved a scale of bloodletting currently rivalled only by the Iran-Iraq war and it has spawned the worst refugee problem in the world today

And yet, despite all of this, the reaction of the West to this little noticed and less understood war has been ambiguous Many people, whilst not supporting the Soviet actions, have come to harbour considerable doubts about the desirability of a Mujahideen victory. In a radio interview last year, the leader of the British Labour party, Mr. Neil Kinnock, expressed a fear that is shared by many 'There is a difficulty, of course, that what they (the Soviets) would leave in the wake (of a withdrawal) is a Muslim fundamentalist state; and that needn't necessarily enhance stability in the world', he said.

'Islamic fundamentalism' is a phrase that has been deeply ingrained on the collective western psyche over the past decade. For the Americans, in particular, it recalls painful experiences such as the Iranian hostage crisis and the fate of the multi-national peace-keeping force in Beirut Throughout the West it is a term generally associated with terrorism and the oppression of women, but how closely does this view coincide with the reality of what is happening in Afghan society and within the Mujahideen?

If one is to trace the emergence of the present parties to the war in Afghanistan, then it is necessary to look back at least as far as the late 1960s This was a turbulent time on university campuses throughout the world and Afghanistan was no exception. The politicisation of students that occurred most visibly in the United States and in Europe could also be observed amongst the young, educated urban elite in the Afghan capital of Kabul It was at this time that the Afghan communist party, the PDPA, emerged and split at an early stage into its rival Khalq and Parcham factions

This period also saw the emergence in Afghanistan of the movement

which in the West was to become popularly known as Islamic fundamentalism This description should, however, be challenged immediately, since it is misleading Although, a return to the fundamental tenets and moral code of Islam was very much a part of the political programme of this movement, their objectives did not end there. They saw Islam not only as a religious and moral code, but as the foundation stone of a political philosophy and the means of ordering a just society Thus, they were not simply concerned with returning to the fundamentals of Islam but with extending Islam into a political philosophy. The French scholar, Olivier Roy, has popularised the more accurate description of these intellectuals as political Islamists

The original vehicle for the Islamists was Jamiat-i Islami, meaning the Islamic Society, which was, in the beginning at least, a loose collection of scholars rather than a political party. The influence of Jamiat, under the leadership of scholars such as Gholam Niyazi, Burhanuddin Rabbani and Younis Khalis, grew steadily amongst young campus radicals during the late 1960s and early 1970s Many students who were later to become important figures in the Mujahideen were drawn into the Islamic movement. People such as Gulbuddin Hekmatyar, Abdul Rasul Sayyaf, Ahmed Shah Massoud and Zabiullah all joined Jamiat during this period.

Throughout the early 1970s the leaders of the Islamists, under Niyazi and later under Rabbani, became increasingly alarmed by the growth in influence of the Communists, particularly within the army and the state bureaucracy Their fears increased greatly after Mahmoud Daoud seized power by a coup d'état in 1973 Although no communist himself, Daoud had seized power with the active assistance of the Communists and was more strongly opposed to the Islamists than to the communists

In 1975 the Islamists attempted to instigate a popular uprising against Daoud's regime. This was a disaster. In all but a few parts of the country the uprising simply failed to materialise. The repression that followed was very severe, resulting in the imprisonment, execution or murder of hundreds of people, including many of the most capable of the young radical Islamists

The survivors of this abortive insurrection fled to Pakistan, where the Islamist movement fragmented Gulbuddin Hekmatyar, one of the most vociferous of the student radicals and a leading advocate of the 1975 uprising, split away from Jamiat-i Islami, which was by now under the leadership of Burhanuddin Rabbani Hekmatyar formed his own party, which he named Hesb-i Islami, meaning the Islamic party

This division increasingly came to mirror the ethnic division in Afghan society between the dominant Pashtuns, who often favoured Hesb-i Islami, and the various Farsi speaking minorities, who predominantly remained loyal to Jamiat-i Islami The contrast in the style of leadership between the pragmatic Rabbani and the radical, ruthless Hekmatyar was also apparent. It was this style of leadership which was the major reason for a second split in 1979, when Younis Khalis broke with Hekmatyar to form his own more moderate party, which confusingly retained the name Hesb-i

Islami

In exile in Peshawar the Islamists fared quite well. For reasons of their own the Pakistanis were prepared to extend considerable support to them, particularly to Hekmatyar And so when the communist threat that the Islamists had long feared actually materialised with the PDPA seizure of power in April 1978, it was the Islamists alone who were prepared to combat it.

The 'reforms' that the PDPA enacted in the following 18 months caused great resentment in the rural areas of Afghanistan and led to a groundswell of popular opinion against the regime which had been absent from the 1975 insurrection This groundswell of opinion translated into local uprisings, in which the Islamists played a prominent role Increasingly Soviet advisors were drawn into these conflicts and the situation deteriorated to the point where the PDPA was in real danger of being overthrown The Soviet invasion followed in December 1979.

It was only at this time that the conflict in Afghanistan was brought to widespread public attention in the West But the motivations for the Mujahideen actions in the war remained little understood. The Mujahideen were seen in the light of simple nationalist tribesmen, fighting for their liberty, but this was only a fragment of the picture. The actual political composition of the guerrilla forces is far more complex than this romanticised picture.

The 'Islamic Alliance of Afghan Mujahideen', based in Peshawar, is an amalgum of seven disparate political parties, four of which are generally termed 'fundamentalists' and three 'moderates'. The term 'moderate' however can be almost as misleading as the 'fundamentalist' label. The 'fundamentalist' parties and their respective leaders are Jamiat-i Islami (Burhanuddin Rabbani), Hesb-i Islami (Younis Khalis), Hesb-i Islami (Gulbuddin Hekmatyar) and Ittihad-i Islami (Abdul Rasul Sayyaf). The parties considered as 'moderate' are Harakat-i Inqilab-i Islami (Mohammed Nabi Mohammedi), Mahaz-i Milli (Sayed Ahmed Gaillani) and Jabha-ye Nejat-i Milli (Sibghatullah Mojadidi) Although these parties between them represent the bulk of the Afghan guerrillas, they do not speak for all Most notably the Shia Muslims, who make up about 10% of Afghanistan's population, are not included in this alliance

The leadership of the 'moderate' parties is drawn largely from the traditional hierarchy of Afghan society and many journalists and diplomats feel more comfortable with the, often quite westernised, manner of these people than with the rhetoric of some of the more radical Islamists This has perhaps tended to distort perceptions of the true nature of the Mujahideen power structure inside Afghanistan The reality is that, in the main part, it is commanders belonging to the various 'fundamentalist' parties that have the real military clout on the ground inside the country. Of the most famous Mujahideen field commanders, Ahmed Shah Massoud and Ismael Khan belong to Jamiat-i Islami, as did the late commander Zabiullah, and Abdul Haq and Jallaludin Haqani both belong to Hesb-i Islami (Khalis).

This might as first seem to confirm western fears of an oppressive Islamic Republic coming to power in the wake of a Mujahideen victory. But before coming to such a conclusion, one should perhaps pause to consider the record that some of the young Islamist commanders have established in the practical administration of areas of the country that have been under their control during the war.

The largest Mujahideen controlled administration in Afghanistan is in the North-Eastern area of the country under the direction of Ahmed Shah Massoud's 'Supervisory Council of the North', a Jamiat-i Islami dominated 'umbrella' organisation that seeks to co-ordinate the work of various Mujahideen groups in the area The Supervisory Council of the North, under Massoud's highly capable leadership, has achieved an impressive degree of military co-ordination, but its scope of activity is by no means confined to military operations.

The Supervisory Council of the North has formed a well organised civilian administration Financial, Cultural, Refugee and Health Committees have been established, made up of civilians elected at a local level and answerable to the Supervisory Council's central administration. Under the auspices of these bodies a variety of emergency relief and development programmes have been carried out These are financed largely by the collection of local taxes and the receipt of foreign aid money They are often carried out in co-operation with various western private voluntary organisations

These programmes have included the distribution of Cash For Food (small cash grants to enable destitute refugees to buy food for their families), the construction of a French staffed surgical hospital, the organisation of schools (both for boys and for girls) and the provision of funds for farmers to buy seed Further plans are afoot, should the resources become available, for irrigation schemes, the provision of livestock to farmers, the immunization of children, and even for the construction of roads, small factories and small hydro-electric plants In short, the Islamist intellectuals in this part of Afghanistan are carrying out a variety of radical social and economic reforms under the very noses of the communist government and the occupying Soviet army

Where these reforms are vitally different from the clumsy attempts at reform that were imposed by the PDPA in 1978-79, is in the manner in which they are being carried out. The young urban communists of that period took an imported ideology and attempted to impose it inflexibly upon rural Afghanistan The land redistributions they forced through took no account of the consequences of such actions on local economies or of injury to local feelings Likewise the literacy programmes, admirable in themselves, were imposed in an oppressive manner Old people were compelled unceremoniously to attend such programmes and men and women were often placed in classes together, ignoring the sensibilities of Islam on the question of co-education

The social reforms of the Islamists have been operated in a very different manner. Being devout Muslims themselves, these young radicals

have better understood the nature of the society in which they operate and have moulded their programmes to win the confidence rather than the outright hostility of the people. Islam, which permeates all levels of Afghan rural society, has itself been used as a means of social reform. For example, the Islamic invocation to wash before prayer has been used as a measure to educate people in the importance of hygiene. Great care has also been taken to involve people at a local level in development projects and to ascertain their views on how they would like to be helped The result of this approach has been widespread popular support for the social and developmental programmes of the Mujahideen administration, as well as for the military conduct of the war.

It would, however, be quite wrong to give the impression that the area controlled by Massoud and the Supervisory Council of the North is typical of the whole of Afghanistan This it most certainly is not. No other area has achieved anything approaching the same degree of organization. The importance of Massoud's example lies first in the model it provides to other commanders and secondly in the demonstration that Islamism, far from heralding a return to the seventh century, can provide a highly effective way of implementing social reform in a deeply religious and conservative country.

This should not be construed as an unqualified litany of praise for the 'fundamentalist' politicians in Peshawar or for all of their commanders inside the country. There are, of course, 'fundamentalists' and 'fundamentalists'!

Although the Islamist parties share a common desire to radically reshape Afghan society, they are by no means united in what form of society they want to bring about or in the methods they are prepared to use in doing so Rabbani, for example, is a pragmatic and tolerant man whose wish would be to achieve an Islamic society through a concensus of opinion Others are likely to be less restrained in the methods they are prepared to use In the Hesb-i Islami of Gulbuddin Hekmatyar there is likely to be little room for the politics of concensus.

Ever since 1979 there have been reports of Mujahideen groups fighting amongst each other, the overwhelming bulk of which have implicated Hesb-i Islami. There have been occasions when Hekmatyar has issued orders to his commanders forbidding co-operation on the battlefield with Mujahideen of other parties There are also documented examples of him attempting to disrupt the flow of arms and the visits of journalists to other Mujahideen parties This policy resulted directly in the murder last year of Andy Skrzykpowiak, a highly respected British cameraman The level of intolerance within this party can be taken to the extreme of invoking the action of *takfir* (the action of a Muslim declaring another Muslim to be a heretic) against political opponents for specifically political reasons Thus Hekmatyar brands those who disagree with him, not for disagreeing with him but, by implication, for not being good Muslims because they disagree with him.

Understandably, the pursual of policies such as these has resulted in a

steady decline in the support that Hekmatyar enjoys inside Afghanistan And yet he has remained powerful, and the reason for this reveals a curious paradox In Afghanistan, money and arms buy political loyalty. Mujahideen commanders have little choice but to go to those who have the resources to support them, and although Hekmatyar may lack genuine popular support, he certainly suffers from no lack of resources Despite consistent denials of receiving any foreign aid, Hekmatyar has always been by far the largest beneficiary of the US military aid programme to the Mujahideen, receiving assistance on a scale hugely disproportionate to the actual support that he commands

This can be partly explained by the motives of the Pakistanis, whose military intelligence service has been used as the conduit for the distribution of aid to the Mujahideen The Pakistanis have supported Hekmatyar since he arrived in Pakistan in 1975 for reasons of hard nosed *realpolitik* Ever since independence in 1947 Pakistan has been in dispute with Afghanistan over her Northern border, inherited from the British, which cuts the Pashtun tribal territories in two If Hekmatyar were to come to power in Afghanistan the Pakistanis feel that he could be relied upon not to ferment the 'Pashtunistan' issue since his own Islamic ideology would be incompatible with the pursual of a strictly nationalist border dispute with a neighbouring Islamic country Even if Hekmatyar were unable to win outright power, his very existence might well be enough to prevent a strong nationalist government from doing so Thus the Pakistanis have a vested interest in bolstering Hekmatyar. And, having supported him since 1975, they are now looking for a return on their investment.

But if Pakistan's support for Hekmatyar is based upon rational self interest, the motivations of the United States in supplying him with vast quantities of arms seem much harder to discern. Certainly Hekmatyar is a strong anti-communist, he is charismatic, well organised and skilled at public relations, all qualities which seem to appeal to American policy makers But his ways are also ruthless and bloody He is known to maintain prisons both in Pakistan and inside Afghanistan for his political opponents He is known to actively disrupt attempts at co-operation with other Mujahideen parties He is widely suspected of assassinating political opponents within the Mujahideen. His rhetoric is almost as virulantly anti-American as it is anti-Soviet, and he now commands only very limited support amongst ordinary Afghan people

Why then, has the United States of America provided this man, who might be thought to confirm all their worst fears about Islamic fundamentalism, with enough material support to make him a major contender for power in Afghanistan?

The answer to this puzzle seems to be that the United States has pursued only one policy objective in Afghanistan — the bringing to an end of all Soviet and communist influence. Beyond that, it would appear that the United States has seen fit to delegate policy-making to its Pakistani allies on the assumption that their interests are the same This, however, is not

the case.

There are fundamentalists and fanatics amongst the Afghan Mujahideen, but it is important to understand that these two phenomena are not synonymous. If we in the West are sincere in wishing to bring about a free Afghanistan, governed by the will of her people, then it is vitally important that we should learn — and learn very soon — to distinguish between them As it is, a general fear of 'fundamentalism' has ensured that many of the best and most capable people within the Mujahideen have received little material support, whilst a failure to appreciate the nature and motivations of certain individuals has led to the absurd spectacle of the balance of power being artificially shifted towards the most extreme and intolerant elements of the Mujahideen by the weight of misapplied Western aid.

[Guy Brailsford is a researcher working for the London-based Afghanistan Information Office.]

The October issue of *Contemporary Review* includes *Australian Aborigines The Struggle Continues* by Keith D. Suter, *Neutrality. Has it a Future?* by Peter Johnson, *Is the International Debt Crisis Over?* by Nigel Healey and *Edinburgh Festival· 1988* by Laurence Green.

ISRAEL AND ITS TERRITORIES

by The Rev. Canon Laurence Tanner

RECENTLY, the modern state of Israel has had a great deal of space devoted to it on television and in newspapers I suspect that the reaction of many who are not directly involved is a blend of admiration, perplexity and irritation. What follows is an attempt to give a neutral picture of the present situation in the light of the historical background.

In the twelfth century Moses Maimonides drew up Thirteen Principles of Judaism As translated from the Hebrew in the British Daily Prayer Book, the twelfth principle appears in these words, 'I believe with perfect faith in the coming of the Messiah, and, though he tarry, I wait daily for his coming' It was during the Roman period of Jewish history (63 BC-125 AD) that the concept of the Messianic age developed We can see this hope of a Messiah, a King of David's line, reflected in the New Testament He would rescue the people from Rome and restore the ancient kingdom. Maimonides does not explain or comment on the implications of Messianism but the general Messianic faith has persisted in most Jewish theological works, though less has been mentioned of the one figure The following themes have been associated with it; the freedom of Jews from persecution, the return to their ancient lands and the thought that the nations should recognise the chosen status of Israel Together with the religious, there has always been the secular theme, and these aspirations have played their part in the formation and dynamism of the modern state of Israel

In the middle of the nineteenth century it would not have seemed a possibility that in a hundred years a Jewish State would have been set up in the Middle East The situation was altered by the crumbling of the Ottoman Empire With the decline of Turkish power a vacuum would be produced. The great powers to extend their influence and with commerce in the background took a 'religious' interest in Palestine which seemed reasonable and respectable Russia was interested in Jerusalem and the Holy Places for the sake of the Orthodox Church. France for the sake of Roman Catholicism As an early exercise in ecumenism the Church of England joined with the German Lutheran Church to send a Bishop to found a See of Jerusalem. The fact that the Lutheran Church did not have bishops and there were only six Protestants in Jerusalem did not seem important. In time, when the European powers were weakened by two World Wars, the United States became more influential The presence of oil and pipelines in the Middle East and the large number of Jews living in the States were dominant factors From the seventeenth century Sephardic Jews from Spain had entered America through the West Indies Those who became wealthy assisted the other main Jewish group, the Ashkenazim who in the nineteenth century were to come across the North Atlantic, first from Germany and France, and later from Poland and

Russia. Money from American Jews was to sustain the new state of Israel, just as money from Babylonian Jews contributed to the well being of the Jews of Jerusalem after the return from exile in 525 BC. In 1948 the British mandate in Palestine ended and the new state of Israel began.

During the nineteenth century small Jewish communities appeared on land bought from Arabs. This added to the limited number of Jews already present Some were intellectuals· others worked on the land The first settlers were from Warsaw, members of the Chasidim, the ultra Orthodox sect Later arrivals were political rather than religious By 1900 the Jewish population had increased by refugees from the Russian pogroms We need not go into the causes of anti-semitism over the centuries which have varied Let it be sufficient to say that the very factor that had caused their survival, seeing themselves as a people apart, had made them suspect It was in the atmosphere of the pogroms that Zionism began. Theodor Herzl can be regarded as its founder Before his time there had been an organisation in Odessa called the 'Lovers of Zion'. Details of this can be found in Paul Johnson's recent History of the Jews It was Herzl's compelling personality that roused interest in Zionism in the Western world From 1891-95 he had been a journalist in Paris and it was then that he became conscious of French anti-semitism of which the Dreyfus case was a manifestation Previously he had thought that Jews could settle into the population as was happening in Great Britain and the States. From what he saw in France he thought that the only hope was for the Jews to have a state of their own and to disseminate this he visited the heads of European states Argentina and Uganda had been considered as possible places for this but the choice was Palestine At first it may seem strange that an attempt should be made to establish a state in an area with the possibility of so much hostility However, the Jews had maintained a devotion to this one place In view of this it is surprising that other areas should even have been considered

Martin Buber was a different type of Zionist. He criticised any secular approach and thought that it was the mission of the Jews to build up a universal Kingdom of God on earth which would spread out through the just dealing of the nation with others His background was Chasidic The tension between his tradition and the secular one was illustrated in December 1987 by a group of Chasidic Jews in Whitehall bearing a placard with the legend, 'The Zionist State is the greatest misfortune to world Jewry' Some would argue that the eventual cause of Jewry is more likely to be served by the synagogue than by Israel This division exists in Israel itself and is reflected in the correspondence column of *The Jewish Chronicle,* though lately the letters have been more uniformly in favour of the governing party in Israel In April 1988 there was heated discussion in the Conference of European Rabbis about the future of the West Bank and Gaza Strip The Ashkenazin Chief Rabbi of Israel considered it contrary to traditional law to abandon parts of the land of Israel Throughout history since the Babylonian captivity two elements have existed, a spiritual Judaism with one God of all nations, though only at

times has it been a missionary religion, and on the other hand a strong nationalism.

With the increasing number of Jews coming into Palestine there was bound to be a reaction among Palestinians who considered themselves established. It is possible though unlikely that, if partition had been attempted from the start, things would have been more peaceful. The number of Jews that came was not forseen, and efforts to restrict numbers during the mandate did not succeed Immigrants have come not only from Europe and Russia but also from ancient communities in Iraq and Iran Some of the most recent to arrive have been the Falashas, the black Jews from Ethiopia There was too an idealism about the new country which attracted academics and technically trained people from the Western world The birthrate among Jews in Israel however, is much lower than the Arab and by the year 2000 the Arabs will outnumber the Jews At the moment there are 3 5 million Jews and 2.1 million Arabs. Israel feels threatened by the local Arab population increase and is surrounded by a hostile Arab world Fortunately for Israel the surrounding states do not have a common policy and there are divisions among the Palestinians. The Palestine Liberation Organisation (PLO) has grown in strength and is well supplied with money. Sources are Iran and Libya, both of which appear to be attempting to hold their own with the great powers. For operational purposes it is with Syria that the Palestinians are connected. Israel does not recognise the PLO and objects to the term being used in British newspapers It would not allow it to take part in any conference seeking a solution to the Palestinian problem There is little doubt that Israel is determined to retain the territory now under its control. The recent discussions between Mr Schultz and Mr Shamin appear to have produced nothing Hard liners in the Knesset resented the handing back of Sinai to Egypt which was part of the Camp David agreement. An example of their attitudes is Geula Cohen who was interviewed on BBC television in April 1988 She had been a terrorist and a member of the Stern Gang She said that she believed that Israel will have all the biblical lands, including Judea and Samaria, and argued that the West Bank and Gaza are Israel's by right of history. It is difficult to know what 'historical rights' mean after such a gap of time To sort out the world on the basis of previous ownership would be impossible Geula Cohen has no sympathy with Palestinian rights She would say that there never was a Palestinian state and that Arabs should now move to Jordan For so many Jews 1948 meant the end of submission They expected compensation after their experience in Europe This explains but not excuses the way in which Arab riots are controlled The refugee camps are dependent on the United Nations for supplies and are a disgrace A description of them in the current Church Missionary Society Magazine describes them as 'a dense mixture of sand and smell, heat and flies, dirt and disease'. Order is kept by the doubtful policy of 'community punishment', a technique inherited, it is said, from the British Mandate!

With the idea of Canaan 'for our everlasting possession' it is not

surprising that the book *The Bible Came From Arabia* caused a stir in the Middle East in 1985. It was written by Kamaz Salibi, Professor of History at the American University of Beirut. His theme is that by chance he found that nearly all the biblical place names which we associate with the beginning of the monarchy in Saul's time, and the site of Solomon's Temple can be found in a coastal strip facing the Red Sea, north of Yemen It is here that he placed David's Jerusalem The most dramatic challenge of the book is to the claims of present-day Israel to be based on the history of the old kingdoms Biblical scholars in this country were not impressed by the arguments.

Can a claim to present territories based on historic rights be justified, even if it is considered to be sufficient reason for possession? To delve into Israel's history has become increasingly complicated. At one time the Old Testament was accepted uncritically as the source Since the seventeenth century scholars have been looking into the composition and dates of the Old Testament books It is now established that several centuries separated the books from the events they described Not all Jews accept such scholarship In addition, archaeology and anthropology have had important things to say

There were towns in Palestine as early as 7000 BC There were also nomadic tribes who moved North and South along the coast and through the rift valley East West movement was more rare as there were natural barriers In succession waves of Semites, prompted by droughts and increases in population, moved North from the Arabian Peninsula into Palestine About 1800 BC Abraham came on the scene (Both Arab and Jew in present day Israel look to him as father of their race) He was a semi-nomad who could be described as a donkey bedouin. Such tribes, and it is likely that his name represents a tribe rather than a person, did not go far into the desert as they had no camels They kept to semi-fertile tracts After dry periods, when herds had suffered, they went to Egypt to camp along the fertile Nile Strip, found employment until they had earned enough to restock their herds and then returned to their pastures

In the time of Moses, about 1200 BC they were restrained from leaving Egypt Their lot had become increasingly tough However, it seems that they were not without resources They later had sufficient gold for the golden calf! The story of the Exodus, Sinai and the religious significance to Jews is well known According to tradition it was at Sinai that the Jews accepted the wilderness God, Yahweh, and received from him the Torah. In the biblical account God Promised Abraham that Israel would be a great nation and that he would give them the land of Canaan 'for an everlasting possession'. The impression is given that there is no difference between the God of Abraham and the Patriarchs and the Yahweh of Israel but a close reading of the text shows that there were considerable differences Whether the Israelites of Moses' day were the same stock as that of Abraham is not certain. There are no records between the two. It is also uncertain whether the men of Abraham's time wanted to settle The area between Sinai and Beersheba, where Moses wandered

with the tribes had unreliable pastures and so they moved on to the better watered areas of Canaan Helped possibly by partial landslides they crossed Jordan after having made a loop to the East, and moved against Jericho. The conquest of Canaan was not completed but they settled among the Canaanites and learned agriculture from them. By this time Egypt had declined as a power and Assyria had not yet appeared. Struggles with other invading tribes drew the nation together In addition there was the Philistine menace from the coastlands. The Philistines had settled from the Greek Isles and were attempting to control the hill country It was this threat that caused the need for a king. Samuel's position makes it clear that Saul's monarchy was a limited one. Under David who was an outstanding military leader the monarchy became absolute.

Jerusalem had belonged to the Jebusites. David took it and made it his capital The ark was brought to Jerusalem and it came to be regarded as the special residence of the Jewish God. The Northern tribes were not impressed and stuck to their old shrines With a firm base David went on the attack He subdued Moab in the East, Damascus in the North, the Edomites in the South and the Amorites across Jordan The conquered areas were not settled but David's power was strong enough to exact transit dues from passing caravans In David's reign Israel became a power to be reckoned with It is to this period that modern nationalists refer. The boundaries of Israel were never again to stretch so far Troubles with his sons caused the kingdom almost to split up in David's reign By the start of Solomon's reign disintegration had begun Edom and Damascus broke free and the King of Tyre got part of Galilee. After Solomon's reign the old kingdom split into Israel and Judah.

In general, it can be said that the Jews maintained a grip on the hill country from the time of Joshua until the exile in Babylon There were difficulties but they were local They were not dominated by a foreign power Those familiar with the Old Testament are aware of this. There was a second period when the Jewish people were established in the hill country This was the period from the return from Babylon until 135 AD. In the Old Testament only two books, Ezra and Nehemiah, deal with this period and most people are vague about it It was the time when the Jews developed spiritually and thought of themselves more as a nation. But only some Jews had returned and they never were to possess the whole of Palestine The Samaritans were thought to be a different people Galilee was considered to be 'of the gentiles' and the coastal plain was never occupied There was now a strict division between Jew and non-Jew, based on circumcision, observance of the Sabbath, acceptance of the Torah and duties to the Temple Marriage with other peoples was condemned There was to be only one place where sacrifice could take place, the Temple Those living abroad were expected to visit Jerusalem but this was often not possible And so a new form of worship developed in synagogues

From the fifth century BC the Jews in Palestine were a comparatively small group. The Dispersion had begun. Towns with familiar biblical

names like Nazareth, Cana and Capernaum were heathen. The Jewish people occupied Jerusalem and the fields and valleys perhaps ten miles from it Herodotus who wrote of this area in the fifth century does not mention the Jews When Persia was the dominant power small peoples had autonomy as long as they paid their taxes and supplied men for the Persian armies. Ancient ways persisted, but there was a new emphasis The Jews came to see themselves as a special people, God's people with a promised homeland. Their comparative isolation, however, was to be threatened by the conquests of Alexander the Great and the coming of Greek Culture with ideas and ways of life which challenged Judaism After the death of Alexander there was an ugly scramble for power among the Macedonian chiefs which eventually resulted in the Seleucid dynasty. The Jews were sandwiched between the Seleucids to the North and in the South, Egypt, anxious to obtain timber from Lebanon and to control the trade routes From time to time Jerusalem was occupied, sometimes from one direction, sometimes from another. Eventually there was an armed revolt in 164 BC which then led to the family of the Hasmoneans taking power Judas Maccabeus won peace from the Syrians and founded a dynasty The Temple was rededicated This is now annually celebrated in the Jewish festival of Chanukkah By a century later Rome had become the dominant power in the region and in 63 BC Pompey annexed Judea. It was to be under the Roman Empire until the second century AD. In 40 BC the Roman Senate gave Herod, an Edomite, the title King of the Jews. He was not a pleasant character but nevertheless it was a prosperous period The uneasy power situation between the Jewish Council, the Sanhedrin, Herod and the Roman Procurator can be seen in the Gospels.

In spite of all their political difficulties this period was one of development for Judaism. The *Aboth. Sayings of the Fathers* is an example of this This tractate of the Mishnah is concerned with moral conduct. It consists of the favourite maxims of the Rabbis from 300 BC-200AD and is a model of common sense, wisdom and devotion. It has been read Sabbath by Sabbath by parents with their children and has become in language and precept part of Jewish life Not only is it great literature but it reveals a deep concern for humanity

And yet side by side with such insights there was also a fierce nationalism. The Jews hated to be under a Gentile power In AD 66 there was a revolt against Rome which was completely defeated. In AD 70 Jerusalem was sacked and the Temple destroyed From this time Judaism meant scattered Jewish communities. *Sayings of the Fathers* had prepared them for this; but side by side with acceptance of the situation and pushing expectations into the future was the source of desperation which led to the self-inflicted deaths of so many at Masada There was a further attempt at freedom in 132 AD which was ruthlessly crushed A new Roman town was built on the remains of old Jerusalem and from then on Jews were not allowed to enter the new town For a time Galilee became the centre of Jewish life. But from that time until this century there has been a gap when Jewish presence in Palestine has been minimal

GRASP THE SOCIAL SECURITY NETTLE

by Alec L. Parrott

WHEN Mrs Thatcher's Conservative Government was returned to power in 1983 with a three-figure majority, there was much talk of Lord Acton and the corrupting effects of excessive power. But there were some commentators who warned of the complementary danger, the corruption that loss of power can bring in its train They were thinking not only of the political parties in Opposition, but also of the Treasury. A Government committed to radical reform including a reduction in public expenditure must always be seen as a threat to the Treasury's power base, built up during those golden years when Keynes was a senior adviser and the Government assumed responsibility for the management of the whole economy It is no secret that the mandarins in that bastion of male chauvinism were not pleased when, for the first time in history, their First Lord turned out to be a First Lady And it is common knowledge that among their number were some who predicted that the Thatcher Government would be brought down over the issue of social security reform

Action to review the social security system began soon after the 1983 election The need for review had been apparent for some time, but it was brought into focus by the 40th anniversary of the publication of the Beveridge Report *The Times,* in a leading article on 1 December 1982 headed 'Wanted. A New Beveridge', drew attention to the growing incoherence of the system, its jungle of 'poverty traps' and disincentives, its lack of form and principle. The article contrasted the intention of the plan for social security with the actuality. Beveridge, and the British people, had envisaged and desired a mainly contributory insurance scheme, underpinned by a safety-net of means-tested assistance for the minority for whom provision was possible in no other way. What had happened was that the name of the non-contributory benefit had been changed from public assistance to supplementary benefit, and this had swamped the contributory system to become 'the staple of social security' The difficulty of getting the system back on course was recognised as primarily one of political will·

> is the Government willing to risk offending the large numbers of those with a vested interest in the welfare state created in Beveridge's name?

Fortified by their large majority obtained at the election, it was soon apparent that the Government were prepared to take the risk A high-powered 'Inquiry into Provision for Retirement' was set up, complete with a hatful of Government Ministers, the Government Actuary and a number of eminent specialists in the commercial pension field There were high hopes that a really radical examination of the whole complex area covered by State, occupational and private provision would be undertaken. The presence of a Treasury Minister on the team suggested that the important question of tax concessions would not be shirked, and the way the Inquiry set about its business gave rise to optimism that the

keynote would be openness in discussion of the issues involved

As time went on, however, the proceedings of the Inquiry became more secretive There were rumours of disagreements among the members of the Inquiry, and information about progress was obtainable only through 'leaks'. In April 1984 the scope of the review was widened, and four teams in all were engaged on what Mr. Norman Fowler, then Secretary of State for Social Services, described as 'the most substantial examination of the social security system since the Beveridge Report 40 years ago'. This may well have been so, but the general public were given no opportunity to judge The Green Paper containing the results of the review, published in June 1985, included the report of only one of the four review teams, that relating to housing benefit As far as provision for retirement was concerned, there was no wide-ranging discussion of the issues involved Instead, there was a Government proposal to abolish SERPS, the name given to the scheme providing earnings-related additions to the basic national insurance retirement pension. This scheme had been brought in by a Labour Government, with all-party support, in 1975 The declared intention had been 'to bring to an end the massive dependence on means-tested supplementary benefit which is the sad hallmark of old age today'. The Conservative Party spokesman at the time had been Mr Fowler

It was not therefore an easy task for him, as the chief architect of the review, to move the formal motion in the House of Commons welcoming the Green Paper He knew that the Government's proposals had not been welcomed by anyone, not even the commercial pensions interests whom the abolition of SERPS was supposed to benefit. He was also aware that there were some ambiguities in the Green Paper which were not easy to explain away. It was said that it was 'right to retain a contributory system for contingencies like retirement', and that 'the basic national insurance pension should remain, as an entitlement earned by people from paying national insurance contributions' On the other hand, it was proposed to abolish SERPS, which also satisfied those two criteria, and was financed in precisely the same way as the basic pension. By contrast, the approach to the non-contributory benefits was to take benefit away from some and give it to others, under structural reforms involving some changes of names of the benefits More people would benefit, at greater, rather than less, cost to public funds. It was all very different from the original intention. Readers of the March 1985 issue of *Contemporary Review* will have been more prepared than most for this U-turn in Government policy[1] What had happened was that the latest battle in the Thirty Years War between the contributory insurance principle and the non-contributory 'principle' of multiplying beneficiaries had once again been won by those who believed that help could be concentrated where it was most needed through a centrally-administered system based on means-testing. The defeated shooting party talked loudly of targeting, not realising the impracticability of registering equally accurate hits on targets all over the country from one firing point in Westminster They would have done better to stick to their guns

The motion was full of gems of wishful thinking, the sorts of platitudes that only a Government with an overwhelming majority can indulge in:[2]

> That this House welcomes the Government's Green Paper, Reform of Social Security, Cmnd 9517-9, and endorses the Government's aims of achieving a better social security system which would direct help to the people who need it most, make the benefit system simpler to understand and run, base pensions on a partnership between the State and individuals, and put social security on a sound basis which the country can afford

Mr. Fowler's speech was, as expected, continually interrupted. Opposition spokesmen were easily dealt with, because their plans for the future of social security meant even more public expenditure. Then came the dreaded question, from behind the Secretary of State's back, right between the shoulder blades It was put by Anthony Nelson, backbench Tory MP for Chichester [3]

> Many people will agree with my Right Honourable Friend's proposal for changing the structure that deals with an actuarial probability of the liability in the future, but we are still left with the problem of having to pay for the substantial cost of the basic State pension and the new proposals for portable pensions Is there not a case for saying something about grasping the real nettle, which is whether we are prepared, and can afford in future years annually to index and uprate these substantial benefits?

In the fairy story, the small boy who pointed out that the emperor had no clothes was acclaimed and the villains were exposed In real life, he would have been boxed around the ears and told that the grown-ups knew best. Mr Fowler, not being in the mood for grasping nettles, gave his backbencher the small boy treatment [4]

> One of the fundamental mistakes in the debate on the pensions scheme is that there is a belief that the national insurance pension and SERPS will be paid from a fund It will not be paid from a fund, because there is not one

If the Opposition had not been asleep, someone would have drawn attention to the fact that it was the Secretary of State himself who had made the fundamental mistake National insurance pensions and SERPS had always been paid from a fund, the National Insurance Fund, not from general revenues It was a real fund, unlike many in the occupational pensions field, holding securities with a nominal value of £4 5 billion, and during 1984-85 the fund managers had been forced to sell gilt-edged stocks amounting to some £525 million to increase liquidity during the miners' strike. It was not fully funded, but then no national pension scheme in the world had attempted full actuarial funding since the USA in the period 1935 to 1939. The remarkable thing about the National Insurance Fund was that it had never been in the red, and in recent years its dependence on Exchequer subsidies had been reducing The proportion of the fund's total income received from the Consolidated Fund had dropped from 17 4% in 1983-84 to 16 6% in 1984-85 It is now below 14%.

But the Opposition slept on, and it was left to outside observers to comment on the error which, it was found, occurred in the Green Paper itself. The incident was even reported internationally [5] But no steps were taken to correct or explain the affair, and international commentators (who express a lively interest in social security developments in the UK) have come to the conclusion that she has become *le vrai royaume des aveugles* It would have been entirely appropriate, they suggest, if *le*

borgne (the aptly named Mr. Nelson) had been acclaimed king, but the nettle was not grasped and his chance of fame was lost.

There was so much hostility to the proposal to abolish SERPS that it was instead modified by reducing the benefits payable for the same contributions. This meant that the Government had the worst of all possible worlds, with the old scheme running in permanent tandem with the new. The resulting legislation, both primary and secondary, was so complex that even a number of the Government's own advisers pronounced some of it unintelligible Nevertheless, the advantages of simplicity, ease of understanding and operation, effectiveness and economy continued to be claimed for the reforms, although with diminishing conviction The programme fell behind schedule, and it was not until the spring of 1988 that the main reforms came into operation. The timing could not have been more disastrous. A matter of days after Nigel Lawson had presented a Budget which gave billions of pounds in tax concessions to the better-off, changes were made in the rules relating to the non-contributory tax-financed social security benefits, effectively reducing the rates of benefit payable to some of the worst-off in society. The contrast was seized on by churchmen and others, led by the Bishop of Durham, who condemned the Government's policies as sinful, wicked and deliberately aimed at robbing the poor. This last cut was the unkindest of all for a party which had prided itself on its targeting. A few days later. a revolt of the Government's own backbenchers forced a package of concessions adding even more to the tally of public expenditure. The road paved with good intentions had, in fulfilment of the proverb, ended up in one hell of a mess.

Well, what went wrong, and why should a senior Cabinet Minister have 'run the risk that sooner or later a political opponent will accuse the Secretary of State of deliberately misleading the House and the British public' (to quote from a comment made at the time)? Only the Government and the persons concerned can answer those questions, but there is enough information within the public domain to enable us to make an informed guess The 1985 Green Paper gives the main clues The British social security system had lost its way and developed into a leviathan with a life of its own. Successive Governments of both main political parties since the Second World War had attempted to bring it under control, but without success. Expenditure had grown exponentially, at a far greater rate than intended Each new development had been made 'for the best of motives', but all that had happened was that things had become more confused and complicated. It reads like the story of the latest review. Given this scenario, it does not take a Sherlock Holmes to deduce that the fault must lie somewhere within the permanent machinery, and a brief recital of a few salient facts indicates that the Treasury is what we used to be able to call the nigger in the woodpile.

Let us retrace our steps. The National Insurance Fund is a real fund holding securities with a nominal value of £4 5 billion. Yes, but who manages the fund? The National Debt Commissioners. Who are they? A shadowy body invented by Pitt in the 18th century, of whom the only

active member now is the Chancellor of the Exchequer Isn't it a little odd for the Chancellor of the Exchequer to be forced to sell government stock because of the miners' strike? Yes; the Treasury wouldn't have liked it one bit But because the National Insurance Fund is a real insurance fund, it has to conform with standards of liquidity, etc, insisted on by the Government Actuary. How has it been possible, during periods when social security expenditure has been increasing exponentially, for the amounts paid by the Exchequer to the fund to have been actually *reduced?* Because although in law the fund comes under the control and management of the Secretary of State for Social Services, in practice the Chancellor of the Exchequer is in charge, and as far as the Treasury are concerned it is all public money This conflict between law and practice dates from the time of the 1945 Labour Government. The Accounting Officer of the DHSS has to operate archaic Treasury methods of accounting which do not even enable him to say how much of each contribution is attributable to retirement pensions, let alone to differentiate between the basic pension and SERPS This has brought him into constant conflict with the Comptoller and Auditor General, who for years has refused to certify the accounts

We can now begin to see daylight. In view of this background information, it is unlikely that financial and administrative matters would have been regarded as within the terms of reference of Mr. Fowler's review teams It is much more probable that such matters were seen as appropriate for consideration by the Treasury personnel who, concurrently, were reviewing the arrangements for personal taxation. It was in fact widely expected at the time that the income tax and national insurance contribution collection arrangements at least would be integrated as a result of the Treasury review. The results of that review were not published until March 1986, when it had to be admitted that integration of the two systems was not feasible. By that time the complex Social Security Bill was well launched on its stormy passage through Parliament If our analysis is correct, when Norman Fowler told the House 'there is no fund', what he meant was 'the Treasury tell me that when the review is finished there will be no fund' This was a reasonable expectation, not only because of the economies that were expected to accrue, but also because it would regularise an irregular situation that had existed for forty years But equally, if our analysis is correct, it means that the House of Commons and the British public *were* misled, and that the whole reform programme has been based on a false prospectus

Alternative proposals, submitted in response to the invitation to comment on the Green Paper, will not have been seriously considered Many who thought that the object of the exercise was to move forward from Beveridge, not backwards from Keynes, will have made suggestions more in line with what the British people voted for in two (now three) successive elections. One detailed set of alternative proposals was based entirely on a return to the Beveridge principle that 'there are strong reasons for keeping the hands of the State .. free for expenditures which

are as vital as social security, and cannot be undertaken by anyone except the State'. They included radical reform of the accounting system, replacing SERPS by a properly managed, funded scheme which would give the contributors value for money and would compete on equal terms with occupational schemes (both sides being denied Treasury subsidies and tax breaks other than the normal 'business expense' allowance) There was also a long-term strategy for a phased programme of replacing non-contributory benefits, wherever possible, by contributory ones, and a suggestion that consideration should be given to returning the responsibility for administering all means-tested benefits (under conditions of strict cash-limitation) to the local authorities The thinking behind this suggestion was that those closest to the targets are the most likely to hit them

Sooner or later, the Prime Minister herself will have to put on strong gloves and grasp the social security nettle. But merely grasping it is not enough It must be rooted out and replaced by some healthier alternative. The Conservative Party is in need of a floral emblem, and the red rose has already been spoken for. Could we suggest *lunaria annua*? They say honesty's the best policy. Mrs Thatcher might even get the churchmen on her side, as they were on Beveridge's.

NOTES

1 Alec L Parrott *On a clear day you can see the principles* (*Contemporary Review*, No 1430 (Vol 246), March 1985)
2 *Parliamentary Debates* (*Hansard*), 18 June 1985, col 187
3 *Ibid*, col 191.
4 *Ibid*, col 192.
5 Alec L Parrott. *The system that lost its way* (*International Labour Review*, Vol 124, No 5, September-October 1985).

[Alec L. Parrott, formerly an Assistant Secretary with the DHSS, is now an international social security consultant and writer on social security matters The article is condensed from his forthcoming book *The Truth about Social Security.*]

THE SOVIETS IN TURMOIL

by Leo Muray

THE 19th Soviet Party Conference in June — there had been none since 1941 — and the special meeting of the 320 member Central Committee of the Party, the body that prepares the real decision, in July mark the real beginning of the troubled period of transition initiated by Gorbachev He has been working on this since he became Secretary-General of the Party and head of the Secretariat two-and-a-half years ago when he introduced *glasnost* (permitted openness) and *perestroika* (reform) The first, incidentally, was attempted 150 years ago by Tsar Nicolas I That period will last until 1991 when the next regular Party Congress, as distinct from the Conference is to take place.

Although the Conference adopted six basic resolutions as guidelines for the reform policy Gorbachev had to push harder to get the Central Committee to speed up that process Now, for instance, the Supreme Soviet, the formal Parliament, is to meet in November to pass the changes in the Constitution he is favouring to enable elections for the new Congress of People's Deputies to be held in March. At the Central Committee Gorbachev made a passionate, widely reported new appeal using even more radical terms setting out his policy than at the Conference urging 'again and again that the time for vigorous action has come and we must not tarry'

But after he had gone on the traditional summer holiday the Number Two of the Politburo, the leader of the 'Traditionalists' and in charge of the Party organisation, Yegor Ligachev aged 67 made a speech openly attacking every feature of Gorbachev's policy, and, what is more, the basic arguments of his new doctrine, from reform of agriculture to foreign policy Everyone understood that he was rejecting Gorbachev's reform plans for agriculture when he said 'copying Western market models based on private ownership is totally unacceptable for a Socialist system of management' It was also noticed that the Central Committee made no changes in the Politburo to pension off veteran opponents of Gorbachev. Ligachev's address was given enormous publicity.

This month, (September) is the critical one. Gorbachev is back and will have to reply It will then become fairly clear too whether the Party Secretariat will carry out the proposals of the Central Committee in practice, especially that to disband nine of its departments controlling various sectors of the economy. The Conference resolutions and the Central Committee regulations, if carried out, affect every aspect of life in the Soviet Union, fundamental changes in the role of the Party itself as well as in the running of the economy. And now, in the spirit of *glasnost*, a leader of the opposition, holding a key job, has emerged He has appealed to the majority of the 19 million Party members most of whom are uneasy about *perestroika* because so far it has brought no real improvements.

Gorbachev did not claim that *perestroika,* his 'revolutionary structuring' had been made 'irreversible' Indeed, he pleaded 'We have no right to permit *perestroika* to founder on the rocks of dogmatism and conservatism, on anyone's prejudices and personal ambitions'. He had warned earlier that failure to make it irreversible would be a 'catastrophe'. But the fine print of the key resolution on *perestroika* shows that Gorbachev failed to get his own way. The resolution does not adopt as binding his earlier proposal which is included in the so-called 'theses' published before the conference, that political groups made up of Party members as well as people who are not that actively supporting *perestroika* should be recognised as official bodies The resolution merely says that they are appreciated but adds a warning that anti-Socialist activities could be used by them This has made Gorbachev go so far as to suggest in his oration, when discussing reforms of the Party, that the admission of new members should depend on the part they really play in *perestroika* In other words no opponents should be admitted. Those who are holding up *perestroika* have got to be put out of the way.

Gorbachev is using *glasnost* to build support for him in public opinion inside and outside the Party. He wants to show that he has to fight for it and also, of course, that he is capable of dealing with the opposition He is the first Soviet leader to make use of television A fascinating example was the two-and-a-half hour showing of the eight-hour debate on Armenia and Azerbaidjan by the Soviet Presidium, that is the meeting of the Politburo, an Army representative and Secretaries of the fifteen Soviet Republics He was shown as a leader capable of dealing roughly with authority and an aggressive command of facts and figures.

A dramatic incident at that conference revealed for all to see the conflict within the Politburo An obscure official from the Komi district of Siberia demanded that members of the Politburo involved in the wrong decisions in the periods of Stalin and Breshnev, code-named the Cult of Personality and Stagnation, should resign Gorbachev interrupted, asking him 'Name names' The speaker obliged by mentioning Gromyko, the State President and Foreign Minister for twenty-five years, and Solomentsev, a veteran former Premier of the Russian Republic. A little later Ligachev reminded Gorbachev that these two had supported his appointment as Secretary-General It was seen as a warning to Gorbachev not to try and get rid of them It was later assumed that Gorbachev had arranged the speech with the Komi delegate

Gorbachev has no assured majority in either the Politburo or the 320 member Central Committee. It should be realised that Gorbachev has condemned the Party and almost all its works He has dropped the 70 years doctrine, going back to Lenin, that the Party is infallible and that the system it has produced is superior to all other systems and final In the economic sector the system has failed The increase in food production has merely 'covered the demand' connected with the growth of population He wants to make the farmer 'sovereign master, protect him against Command methods and cardinally change life in the villages'. It implies

that 60 years of collectivisation of agriculture should be abandoned. It means that two-and-a-half years of *perestroika* have not really improved the notoriously poor and erratic standard of food supplies

Gorbachev wants to put an end to the 'Command-Style methods' employed for decades in industry, agriculture, administration and in the Party; but this is the essence of the present Soviet system The Party has its representatives in every undertaking, in every village, in every office. Gorbachev's proposals seek to change this while at the same time ensuring continuing control of the Party. This is best shown by the proposal that the local authorities, Soviet means Council, elected by Party members and non-members, should, as a rule, elect as their head the Party Secretary of that locality from villages and rural districts to towns and cities And again, on top of all this, the new constitution would imply that the proposed President of the Soviet Union, given new powers, would be the Secretary-General of the Party.

There is the same ambiguity in the proposal that office holders could remain in their jobs for two consecutive five year terms only This means that they could move sideways from one top job to another This rule should start in 1991 by which time some key members of the Politburo would have passed away while Gorbachev would not yet be 60. In this context it is revealing that Soviet Premier Ryzhkov and other key members of the government did not address the conference and only one Politburo member did so, Ligachev, who leads the traditionalist faction as Number Two The Politburo hastened to approve of the six Conference resolutions but what they really amount to will only be apparent when the actual texts emerge. This applies especially to the proposed changes in the Constitution and in Party rules.

In his address, and throughout, Gorbachev has severely criticised the Party, admitting that he has encountered 'undisguised attempts' to pervert the essence of reform The Party had been largely based on 'bureaucratic centralism' and the atmosphere of personal responsibility and efficiency had to be restored. There had been 'passivity' in numerous Party organisations. In the background is the firmly established practice of *nomenklatura* by the Party secretaries, the setting up of lists of members who will be given jobs. These lists are linked with the never-ending competition between officials for promotion, perks and power. The more friends you can get into worthwhile jobs the more power you have It is certain that Gorbachev himself and all members of the Politburo, the Central Committee and members of the Secretariat and the governments and city and village councils will be engaged in that game. But the Party remains the sole potent force able to mobilize resources in the service of progress and change.

One must appreciate that Gorbachev is the product of the changes that have occurred throughout the communist regime. When the Bolsheviks took power only 16% of the total population were urban and 95% had no higher education. In 1985 65% of the population lived in cities There are 272 cities with more than 100,000 inhabitants now and in the last

25 years the number of cities with over one million inhabitants jumped from three to 23 Between 1964 and 1970 16 million moved into towns. Today 61.5% work in industry and 12 5% in agriculture There has been a change in education too. There are now five million at universities with a staff of 500,000, with 28 million having had secondary and technical education and 18 5 million full higher education.

Certainly, in the field of employment and education there has been a real change. Women make up 54% of students at universities and high schools, 40% of those engaged in science and 51% of the workforce itself are women. It is different, of course, in the Moslem Central Asian Republics where women have to fight for their rights. In the Party organisations women have not progressed that far But Gorbachev has been bringing his wife along to televised occasions to show that he supports the emergence of women Other Kremlin leaders kept their wives out When Andropov died it was not known whether or not he had a wife

Of the urban population around 60% are workers and around 40% officials and specialists When Lenin took over there were practically no service industries The Bolshevik regime started with a small crowd of elitist intellectuals, a few industrial workers and a vast rural population ignorant of modern life The Party gave jobs to people who had to learn and understand them while they were at it, the so-called *praktiki,* people who owed their living to the Party. In 1917 the Bolsheviks had 600 party members in Moscow; in 1987 1,134,000. The Moscow Party Secretary disposes of thousands of jobs. This is power! The Party has to exercise control over members but its hard core and leading ranks remain emotionally in the early sixties When Kosygin, then one of the leaders, proposed reforms like those now advanced by Gorbachev he was easily blocked by conservative ideologians who did not want to recognise the changed social structure of the country The Party, the industrial bureaucracy and the administration are one single establishment set in its ways. Plans come from the top and different departments and ministries rarely have contact at their own level. It is mostly 'vertical'. The Party has basically turned into a bureaucratic body. Gorbachev wants it to start returning to its original political role and this is why he quotes Lenin as often as he can in order to acquire legitimacy

He needs this to gain support from the mass of younger Party members many, too many, of whom have joined to get jobs and promotion He needs their support against the opponents of *perestroika* who do not want the changes Gorbachev has in mind, who do not want to carry out the new instructions and feel certain that they have a good chance to wear down Gorbachev before the 1991 Party Congress

Gorbachev needs the tacit support of the majority of the 19 million Party members right through the Soviet Union. He must discredit the opposition, in the first place by bringing into the open the hundreds of cases of corruption It is symptomatic that a son-in-law of Breshnev and former Deputy Minister of Interior, Churbanov, is on trial for corruption this month with 500 prosecution witnesses and 110 volumes of evidence

produced against him He may face the death sentence while his wife, Breshnev's voluptuous daughter Galina, has been stripped of all privileges. In the name of *glasnost,* permissible openness that is, there has been a carefully orchestrated campaign against Stalin and Breshnev, a denunciation of the periods of Personality Cult and Stagnation. Crimes of the Stalin regime and serious failings of the period of Breshnev are being gradually revealed This is in order to make the Party and general public identify opposition to *perestroika* with support for Stalin's and Breshnev's policies. But, inevitably, all this is doing damage, most likely irreparable damage, to the image of the Party and this is being held by some against Gorbachev. Added up, the Stalin and Breshnev periods are 48 years of the 70 years of Soviet rule

Stalin's crimes, the mass murder of the old Bolshevik Party elite especially, are being revealed, though Trotsky has not been touched on yet. However, Gorbachev's visit to Poland has shown the limits and risks of such a policy. Gorbachev had been expected to make some mention, however carefully circumscribed, of the Katyn Massacre, when on Stalin's instructions around 4,000 Polish officers were massacred and buried in a forest only to be discovered by the Germans in 1943. But he did not do so.

The reason is an obvious one The Katyn Massacre could only happen because of the Hitler-Stalin Pact that partitioned Poland again and produced the annexation of the three Baltic republics, Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania. That pact would also have to be denounced as a crime But this would go a long way towards justifying the demand for independence for the Baltic republics, which is already voiced in Estonia by the new Popular Front movement outside the Estonian Communist Party, and murmured in the other two republics And it would eventually raise the question of the post-war Polish border No Soviet leader can afford to take such risks either over the withdrawal of the 65,000 Soviet troops from Hungary, aired at the July 1988 Warsaw Pact Summit If Soviet troops are to be withdrawn from Hungary or cut significantly then why not from Czecho-Slovakia, where they were sent 20 years ago or from East Germany and Poland? They are all loyal Pact members. The heads of the Warsaw Pact governments and Communist Parties are fully aware of this.

The conflict between Armenia and Azerbaidjan that goes rumbling on and on can also be traced back to Stalin As Commissar for Nationalities it was under his auspices that the Nagorno-Karabakh enclave with its Armenian Christian population was allotted to Moslem Azerbaidjan in 1923. That conflict without a real settlement as yet has shown how damaged the image of the Party really is. Strikes and mass public protests went on for months, it was hardly noticed in the West, that once a week convoys from Armenia brought food and other supplies to the enclave under protection through Azerbaidjan territory throughout the period of strikes This is new It is significant that a Russian had to be sent to get the two Republics to start co-operating again

There are a hundred ethnic groups and nationalities in the Soviet Union and the Congress acknowledged that inter-ethnic relations have become

'entangled' and collisions between them can only be settled by the 'greatest possible accommodation'. The Kremlin leadership has been forced on to the defensive. The overall situation bears some resemblance to the last years of the Austro-Hungarian Empire before World War I There is a similar process of erosion of the image and authority of the source of power, the Habsburg Crown and the Communist Party There is a similar ongoing struggle on all levels, economic, political, social, of the various ethnic groups and nationalities against the Centre.

This is why a real international crisis could become dangerous Gorbachev needs visible success. Yet, in the foreign field there is little prospect The Afghan venture is now seen as a costly error committed by the Breshnev set up. The efforts to play a role in Africa and Latin America are markedly toned down Even Cuba is given less support In Asia, support for Vietnam and North Korea is being reduced. No support, for instance, has been given to the boycott by North Korea of the Seoul Olympics. In the Middle East Moscow is as anti-Israel as ever but wants the Arabs to react only, not to act As for the Gulf Moscow lets the West take the risks The Warsaw Pact allies are kept under surveillance but are not used any longer as pawns in the slow disarmament game with the West. One feature of the situation is the decline of influence of the Communist parties outside the Soviet Bloc. The political punch has gone out of them One psychological reason is *perestroika* and *glasnost* Communist parties in key countries like France, Italy, India are now on the sidelines which makes a difference to Soviet foreign politics

After Ligachev's speech it is bound to be months until we know whether Gorbachev is succeeding. But it is plain now that things have changed and that the post-Breshnev generation will begin to put the questions.

[Leo Muray was East European Correspondent of the then *Manchester Guardian* from 1947 to 1951. He later became Diplomatic Correspondent of the *Liverpool Daily Post* (1964-1985) and now contributes a weekly diplomatic column]

FROM ADDICTION TO LIBERATION

by Mary Beasley and the Rev. David McGough

DRUG abuse, although now displaced by AIDS in the newsworthy ratings, continues to rear its head as a leading social problem Firstly, there is the obvious human — and financial — cost, often being a hidden factor behind crime; secondly, it has contributed to the spread of AIDS

In September 1984, *Contemporary Review* (No 1424 Vol 245) published an article entitled 'Drug Rehabilitation — The Missing Factor'. This described a Christian drug rehabilitation project in New York with an exceptionally high success rate Research into the comparative success rates of a number of rehabilitation programmes in the US attributed its success to its emphasis on spiritual, as well as physical, psychological and vocational rehabilitation

The importance of a caring community was seen as crucial to the long-term recovery of addicts While some become addicted through peer-group pressure and curiousity, many do so to dull emotional pain arising from broken relationships, usually in childhood Ideally, in view of Christian teaching on responsibility towards the 'marginalised', the churches should be that caring community, but in practice they often fail to bridge this gap Recently, comments made by the Prime Minister at a meeting of the Church of Scotland, may be seen as an interesting alternative to the following comments

The identified need was for Christians to re-evaluate their view of areas where the alienation which is often at the root of drug abuse abounds, and to recognise, in the Incarnation, a model for being a caring presence.

A copy of 'Drug Rehabilitation — The Missing Factor' was sent to the Roman Catholic Archbishop of Birmingham, the Most Reverend Maurice Couve de Murville, with a view to discussing comparable work being undertaken in the Birmingham Archdiocese among both alcohol and drug abusers It was decided that, as the existing rehabilitation facilities were only as successful as the quality of aftercare, the focus should be on providing support for recovering alcohol/drug abusers.

Three project workers now live in an inner city area of Birmingham notorious for drug and alcohol abuse, and other symptoms of emotional deprivation Their brief is to befriend recovering alcohol/drug abusers, who might otherwise have no-one to turn to other than their former drinking/drug taking associates when loneliness or depression set in, and be catalysts encouraging other Christians to a greater awareness

This is essentially a two-way process By introducing people from parishes and other Christian groups to agencies working with homeless alcohol and drug abusers, it is intended that this should contribute to their own renewal in line with the Church's teaching.

Firstly, it gives practical expression to the Decree on the Apostolate of the Laity by giving lay men and women responsibility within the

Church. Secondly, by bringing them alongside those who are the victims of social and emotional deprivation, it brings home the Church's teaching on the 'option for the poor', challenging the individual's own attitudes and the relevance for his/her faith.

The goal is to restore people, previously rejected by family and society, to a sense of their own worth through integration into a body which, through looking to its own renewal, is better equipped to serve

In addition to the practical task of building bridges between the churches and agencies concerned with rehabilitation, the applicability of recent trends in theology to this area of work has been studied.

At first sight, the seed-ground of Liberation Theology is a far cry from the world of addiction Many dismiss the situation of the addict on the basis that it is self-induced. Take for example the teenager who comes from a stable family, but out of curiosity begins to experiment with addictive drugs, and then finds himself/herself 'hooked', or the ambitious businessman whose drinking gets out of hand as the pressure builds up. It can indeed be argued that there has been an element of choice.

But if we look at it from another angle, a different picture emerges Take for example Bob whose mother, a single girl in Ireland, had felt unable to look after him herself in view of the stigma attached to unmarried mothers, and had placed him in an orphanage soon after birth He never knew his father, and his mother only visited so occasionally that he didn't realise who she was He was brought up in institutions with a punitive regime Emotionally disturbed, he had problems with bed-wetting — for which the punishment was to be forced to stand for long periods during the night in a cold dormitory At the age of eighteen he was expected to be ready to fend for himself He came to England from Ireland in search of work, but his bed-wetting problem resulted in being unable to remain in any hostel or lodgings He took to 'skippering' — sleeping in derelict houses. As work became scarcer, his drinking got out of hand and eventually he took to washing down barbiturates with surgical spirits to dull the pain of loneliness and rejection.

Bob's story is typical of many people on 'skid row' The pattern is one of early family breakdown — or a single parent unable to cope because of views on illegitimacy prevalent in many places — poor institutional care aggravating the sense of rejection, consequent inability to form satisfying relationships, and finally being socially and emotionally inadequate to cope with a greater degree of independence than is expected of most 18 year olds when the time comes to face the adult world

While it could be argued that, even there, there is an element of personal choice, such a person is a victim of circumstances largely beyond his control Nor is his/her immediate family entirely to blame; it is likely that there were a variety of factors, emotional, social, economic and even political, bringing such pressure to bear on the parents, or very likely the single parent, that breaking point was reached

Seen in this light, there is a parallel between the deprivation of the Third World and that of many 'skid row' drug/alcohol abusers To an

extent, they are the victims of circumstances, be it seen as emotional, social, economic — or even political — not of their own making. Hence the value in looking at liberation theology when considering our approach to the latter.

Theology is not always the mysterious science that experts may present It is an attempt to make sense of human experience in the light of the Gospel, it seeks to enlighten our relationships to God and to each other. This is the path Liberation Theology has sought to follow As Christ Himself, the eternal Word, became enfleshed in the ordinary and the mundane, so liberation theology unfolds the Gospel from the depths of impoverishment

Radical questioning of — and response to — the causes of deprivation comes from an identification with its victims. As with poverty in Latin America, the seed-bed of Liberation Theology, so with the effects of deprivation nearer home; the incarnation is the key.

A complacent acceptance of the *status quo,* a distancing of oneself from the situation, is always the safest option, but it can lead to the condoning of the underlying injustice. The rich who complacently accept that the 'poor are with us always' may unconsciously cause the imbalance of poverty Those who see addiction as self-imposed may be blind to the wider causes of 'addictive' situations.

The Liberation Theology to which we have referred takes its name from the Old Testament *Exodus* In terms of importance, the *Exodus* deliverance is to the Old Testament faith what the Resurrection is to the new The God of Israel reveals himself as Liberator

> I have seen the affliction of my people who are in Egypt, and have heard their cry because of their task masters, I know their sufferings, and I have come to deliver them out of the hands of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land to a good and broad land, a land flowing with milk and honey *Exodus* 3 7-8

Succeeding generations of Jewish faithful, down to this day, have celebrated their liberation in the Passover. Whenever they come together in celebration, they are challenged by these words

> Remember this day, in which you came out of Egypt, out of the house of bondage, for by strength of hand the Lord brought you out of this place *Exodus* 13 3

What is confessed in the Jewish celebration is something more than the historical enslavement of their fathers long ago What is confessed is the perennial enslavement which makes of some the perpetrators of oppression and of others the victims of oppression and injustice

The history of Israel constantly recalls that the oppressed can become the oppressors

> You must not afflict and oppress the stranger, for you were strangers in the land of Egypt *Exodus* 22 20

At this earliest stage care for the impoverished is not seen in terms of duty, but as the expression of our relationship with God. We are the strangers and the enslaved saved by the God whose revelation is liberation.

To perpetrate oppression, either consciously or unconsciously, is to deny the roots of our own relationship with God While some are suffering from the emotional deprivation that contributes to escape into alcohol and drug

abuse, and other behavioural problems, the rest of us are a part of the fallen human race in which the cause can be seen. Therefore if we are to confess the God of the Exodus as the Living God of liberation, then we can do so only by questioning our own attitudes

There was a time in theological and scriptural circles when it was fashionable to think of the emergence of a social conscience as something which developed comparatively late with Israel's writing prophets. Before this there had been only the unfeeling letter of the Law

Nothing could be further from the truth. The essence of the Law had always been situated in the graciousness of the God who had revealed himself as liberator This God had become enmeshed in the chain of human events precisely because he had heard the cry of the oppressed

How easy it is both to read and teach the commandments of the Old Testament — to take them as a rule for life — without hearing the preliminary self-revelation of the one who commands

> I am Yahweh your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt and the house of slavery *Exodus* 20 1-2.

A concern for justice and peace that has become peripheral is easily compromised In Israel's history justice was the first casuality as economic reality made of society a kingdom and a power — a power that divided the rich from the poor, the oppressor from the victim.

Some parishes do make collections, or gifts from the harvest festival, to institutions caring for such deprived people. While that is laudable, it should not stop there. If it does, our relationship to God and each other is reduced to duty The children of Israel went along this particular path There was a tendency to see the creation of peace and justice in terms of 'good works' Such good works were seen as something additional — not the essential manifestation of all that belongs to a people 'chosen' out of bondage

There is always the tendency in human nature to blur a divine word whose starting point is our own enslavement and God's deliverance. The more we are removed from our own need for deliverance, the closer we are to denying the needs of those who cry out for justice. Thus the prophets of Israel constantly challenged the complacency of later generations whose social development disenfranchised the impoverished Zechariah provides but one example:

> The Word of the Lord was addressed to Zechariah as follows Apply the law fairly, and practise kindness and compassion towards each other Do not oppress the widow and the orphan, the settler and the poor man, and do not secretly plan evil against each other But they would not pay attention They turned a petulent shoulder They stopped their ears rather than hear *Zechariah* 7 9ff.

If we see such prophetic witness as no more than social reform, then we miss its whole impact. At its heart lies our own insecurity and the compassionate God who is the liberator from our own poverty. In this light, the impoverished and oppressed are not a problem to be solved, but a visible sign of the enslavement from which all are redeemed.

The call of God's people was rooted in their experience of God as liberator They, as his people, were called to establish the rule of justice

and peace that spoke through that experience

We will summarize the whole history of the Old Testament by saying that the people and their rulers failed to live up to that high calling. Not only did they fail to live up to it, but they came to realize that its realization lay beyond the possibilities of their broken faith, and would be realized only in the Lord's annointed

> For there is a child born for us, a son given to us, and dominion is laid on his shoulders, and this is the name they give him Wonder counsellor, the Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace Wide is his dominion in a peace that knows no end for the throne of David and his royal power, which he establishes and makes secure in justice and integrity *Isaiah* 9 5ff

Isaiah goes on to proclaim the mission of this figure that is to come

> The spirit of the Lord has been given to me and the Lord has annointed me He has sent me to bring the good news to the poor, to bind up the hearts that are broken, to proclaim liberty to captives, freedom to those in prison to proclaim a year of favour from the Lord, a day of vengeance . *Isaiah* 61 1-2

We perhaps wince at that final note . A day of vengeance for our God. But if Jesus is the fulfilment of the liberator God, then we should not be surprised that we cannot so emasculate his message that it embraces everybody, oppressors included.

The Messianic hope not only asserts that the coming Messiah will deliver the oppressed and the enslaved It also asserts that it will be the poor who will recognize and greet the Messiah at his coming.

The gospels express this most clearly in Mary's Magnificat presented in Luke's gospel

> My soul proclaims the greatness of the Lord and my spirit exults in God my saviour, because he has looked on his lowly handmaid He has put down princes from their thrones and exalted the lowly The hungry he has filled with good things, the rich sent empty away He has come to the help of Israel his servant. mindful of his mercy *Luke* 1 46ff

As we penetrate further into the message of Jesus and the New Testament, it is the teaching of Jesus concerning the Kingdom that most illuminates the issues of justice and peace

The Kingdom of God is above all else the revelation of the graciousness of the Father's relationship with each one of us Just as the Old Testament had rooted the demands for justice and peace in the self-revelation of the liberating God, so the NT roots the establishment of God's kingdom of justice and peace in the God who is revealed as Father

Matthew's sermon on the Mount gathers together from chapters five to seven the teaching of Jesus on the Kingdom. It is an inaugural address, a programme of life for all those who would both belong to that kingdom and proclaim it.

It challenges at every stage the attitudes of broken humanity that are the seeds of injustice and oppression

One of those attitudes that we want to highlight from the sermon on the mount is the tendency of fallen humanity to proclaim its own self-sufficiency and to confirm that self-sufficiency by its own aquisitiveness.

We can even do that in our relationship with God Instead of allowing God to be our saviour, we reduce salvation to a kind of cash economy, in which we earn our salvation through our good works. We go even further. Not only do we earn our salvation through our good works . we save

other people through our good works

That was the attitude that Jesus challenged when he invited us to call God our Father, to see ourselves in a position of total dependence on the Father To see all that we are and do as flowing from the graciousness of God who is Father, rather than anything we do to be deserving of him.

The tendency is to trust in ourselves and what we can do . and that is what Jesus challenged

> In your prayers do not babble as the pagans do Do not be like them Your Father knows your needs before you ask him .. You should pray like this Our Father ...

What is revealed is the relationships of total dependence upon the Father as the basis of God's kingdom of peace and justice Anything that speaks of the assertiveness of self-reliance is excluded.

> Do not store up treasure on earth
> Do not worry about your life and what you are to eat
> Do not parade your good deeds before men so as to attract their notice

The poor in spirit, the gentle, those who hunger and thirst for what is right, the merciful. all those embraced in the beattitudes, are those whose most fundamental attitudes have been challenged by the kingdom

If we agree with the statement above that 'Theology .. is an attempt to make sense of human experience in the light of the Gospel, it seeks to enlighten our relationships to Go and to each other .' then theology is a fitting discipline against which to consider our approach to caring work, such as that outlined in the introduction.

When considering the Church's teaching on our responsibility towards the 'marginalised', it is relatively easy to accept, for example, the handicapped or the starving in Ethiopia as such While some would question thinking of the alcohol/drug abuser in the same way, the above demonstrates that those on 'skid row' are in many, though by no means all, instances more the victims of circumstances beyond their control than of any rational decision to abuse alcohol/drugs. Hence the validity of the parallel drawn between them and Israel enslaved by the Egyptians, and of subsequent exhortations to Israel reminding her of her responsibilities to the afflicted.

Therefore, a precondition for any approach to this work must be that we are fellow-travellers in need of liberation. Failure to admit this, and to treat such caring as peripheral, indicates that we are accommodating, and enslaved by, the same self-seeking attitudes which led to their situation

Identification with, as well as care for, the oppressed therefore becomes an integral part of our relationship with God. Hence the emphasis in the project on an 'incarnational' approach, whether this is taken as literally as by the full-time workers, or whether it is through the ways all concerned seek to build relationships.

This contrasts sharply with the tendency towards an 'us' and 'them' attitude in many social caring agencies. It is commendable that profes-

sional standards and skills are being taken as seriously in the caring professions as in others such as law and accountancy. Nevertheless, there is a danger that, in an agency concerned with social caring, the differentiation between the professionals who have the skills and the clients who need them can degenerate into an attitude of superiority on the part of the former, particularly when the latter tend to come from the lower end of the social scale This can lead to a denial of a shared humanity, and hence need for liberation, and above all a denial of the Incarnation and what the Church stands for It thus lays itself open to accommodation with thinking on social issues that fails to recognise the underlying causes of oppression

Hence, for the caring this project seeks to foster to be in line with the Church's teaching on care for the 'poor', it must re-examine the latter, in particular the model of the Kingdom, as a challenge to renewal for everyone involved While the knowledge that can be gained from relevant professionals must be used, it must also be recognised that the 'secularisation' of the caring professions has taken the motivation for such caring away from its true origin, and may at times result in identification with the oppressors, as happened with Israel.

It is for this reason that the essence of the project's work lies not only in the effecting of links between parishes etc and rehabilitation agencies. That is but the start The real work is acceptance that this is a two-way process, fostered by ongoing study and sharing

With Israel the motivation for, and quality of, care for the afflicted was dependent on her relationship with the Lord. When economic progress pushed such caring to the background, there was a challenge Today, with the increase in victims of the social pressures we have described visible on 'skid row', and the decrease in concern and resources, the same challenge may be heard

---

[Mary Beasley works for Father Hudson's Society, the Roman Catholic social work agency for the Birmingham R.C Archdiocese, co-ordinating work with the project for recovering alcohol and drug abusers The Reverend David McGough has been Lecturer in Scripture and Director of Studies at Oscott College, Sutton Coldfield, until 1986 He is now parish priest at Kingstanding, Birmingham]

THE FAR RIGHT IN SOUTH AFRICA

by John A. Wiseman

THE major political cleavage in South Africa remains that between the white government, dominated by the National Party, and the black opposition, much of which is forced to operate at or beyond the limits of formal legality From the perspective of the latter the evolving reform programme of the government is seen to be both too slow and too partial even when it is not simply dismissed as fraudulent. For most credible black leaders the changes are seen not as genuine progress towards power sharing but rather as pragmatic attempts to modernise certain aspects of racial domination However, different groups in South Africa give the impression of looking at the changes through opposite ends of a telescope What appears small and insignificant change to most black groups appears enormous and threatening to sections of the white community

Whether one views the reforms as real or cosmetic it remains true that they have had a very dramatic effect on one of the most important subplots in the South African drama, the fragmentation of white, and especially Afrikaner, political unity. The growth of the far right, in antagonistic response to government racial policies, has now reached such proportions that it cannot be left out of any assessment of the possible directions of political change in South Africa The results of the 1987 general election and, more particularly, the March 1988 bye-elections inevitably raise the question as to whether the most likely political change in the short or medium term could be the take-over of state power by the far right which would have profound implications.

In South Africa the term 'far right' describes that part of the political spectrum which opposes any diminution of white political control or any attempt to weaken racial segregation It is predominantly, but by no means exclusively, Afrikaner in composition and exhibits, to a greater or lesser extent, an attachment to separate Afrikaner ethnic identity. In recent years the far right has thrown up a large number of political and cultural groupings of varying size, often with overlapping memberships, but if one concentrates on the prospects for winning state power only three need be seriously considered.

On the extra-parliamentary level the most significant movement is the Afrikaner Resistance Movement *(Afrikaner Weerstandsbeweging—AWB)* of Eugene Terreblanche. The AWB, which has a substantial following and membership amongst Afrikaners of the Orange Free State and the Transvaal, is fiercely racist and reactionary, rejecting any compromise on the classical principles of 1950s apartheid. The AWBs presentation of itself is self-consciously melodramatic with uniforms, flags, songs and symbols bearing an uncanny similarity to those of the Nazis (even P. W. Botha has labeled it neo-Nazi) Partly through its youth wing (the Storm Falcons) it offers violence to those it perceives as threatening white Afrikaner

interests, a category which for the AWB includes the National Party. A number of its members have already been charged with plotting terrorist offences including the assassination of black leaders, and the breaking up of the meetings of white political parties not on the far right has become a regular occurrence

How seriously should one take the AWB? The answer would have to be, perfectly seriously but not as a contender for state power. The potential of the AWB for violent disruption and murder is great but it does not have anything like the coercive power to attempt a *coup d'état* in pursuit of its aims The South African Defence Force is a sophisticated military machine and, despite some evidence of far right sympathies in the lower ranks, is loyal to the NP government. The military elite and the ruling political elite are very close in outlook There is simply no way that the para-military AWB could successfully confront the SADF. Despite its dramatic posturings there appears little chance of the AWB constituting anything but a noisy and, at times, violent distraction from the real battles for political power in South Africa.

The ballot box still remains the route to political power in South Africa Although claims to democracy are negated by the unwillingness of successive governments to extend the franchise to most of the population elections within the white community do determine who governs the state. Furthermore, within these narrow racial limits, the elections are fair and unrigged with a high level of participation and allow for the emergence of a parliament which can be said to accurately reflect white political thinking, however unrepresentative it is of the population as a whole Any attempt to assess the potential of the far right to win control of the state must focus on the electoral potential of the political parties of the far right

There are two political parties on the far right, the Conservative Party (CP) and the Herstigte Nasionale Party (HNP) although, as will be shown, the latter could be in the process of fading away as an independent force and may ultimately merge with the vastly more important CP. Both parties were created, at different times, from dissident factions within the ruling NP The HNP was created in 1969 in opposition to the pragmatic and 'outward looking' foreign policy of the government when four NP MPs defected to form the new party The incident which precipitated the break was the inclusion of a Maori in a New Zealand rugby team touring South Africa To most outsiders the incident appears trivial in the extreme but for the far right Afrikaner nationalists it represented an unacceptable symbolic crack in the principle of total racial segregation The HNP has continued to oppose any move away from total apartheid and has stressed the need to retain Afrikaner domination (as opposed to a more inclusive white domination) in South Africa

The creation of the CP over a decade later in 1982 was again the case of a right wing faction breaking away from the NP but this time it was a much larger and more influential faction The issue which caused the split was opposition by the right wing to the creation of a tri-cameral

parliament which included Coloureds and Asians (although without giving them any real power). The leader of the faction, and of the subsequent party, was Andries Treurnicht who was NP leader in the Transvaal and a cabinet member A total of seventeen NP MPs broke away on this occasion. Other senior Afrikaners who defected from the NP at this stage or soon after included Carel Boshoff, the Chairman of the Broederbond and son in law of the former Prime Minister, and architect of apartheid, Hendrik Verwoerd Thus the CP included an influential section of the Afrikaner establishment and could not be seen as simply a rogue splinter grouping In terms of adherence to classical hardline apartheid the stance of the CP largely overlaps with that of the HNP but the former is less ethnically exclusive Although in terms of leadership and support it has remained predominantly Afrikaner the CP regularly appeals to English-speaking white South Africans to support its cause. A tendency towards anti-Semitism is its only qualification on the goal of white unity Clearly the CP has presented and continues to present a much more formidable electoral opponent on the far right than the HNP.

An examination of the electoral support for the two far right parties, concentrating especially on the most recent evidence, provides the best way of assessing their potential importance as challengers for government power in South Africa. The HNP can be dealt with fairly briefly because its electoral challenge has always been weak and is getting progressively weaker In the 1970 election its four MPs all lost their seats. Since then the HNP has only won one seat and that was in a bye-election in Sasolburg in 1985 and largely as a result of a temporary pact with the CP In the 1987 general election the HNP refused any pact with the CP and with candidates in over half the seats won just over 3% of the national vote and nowhere came close to winning a seat. In the March 1988 bye-elections the HNP lost three quarters of the votes it had received in 1987 in Standerton (gaining a miniscule 1 7%), did slightly less badly in Schweizer-Reneke where it lost only one quarter of its 1987 vote (but polled just 3 3%) and, unlike 1987, the party failed to field a candidate in Randfontein As all three bye-elections were in the Transvaal where prior to the formation of the CP the HNP had received its best results it is obvious that in the contest for the allegiance of the far right electorate the HNP has been increasingly dwarfed by the CP. The HNP clearly poses no threat to the ruling NP but it remains as a minor irritant to the CP by claiming a small share of the far right vote. It arguably 'cost' the CP four seats in 1987 by letting in the NP in constituencies which had a far right majority. Political expedience would point to a pact or a merger between the HNP and the CP (something which the AWB has encouraged) but if this does not come about the trend points very clearly to continued HNP electoral decline.

The reverse would appear to be the case for the CP which is, at present, in a period of ascendant development. The 1987 general election was the first since the creation of the CP and the party succeeded in replacing the liberal Progressive Federal Party as the official opposition in parlia-

ment. Fielding candidates in 126 out of 166 constituencies the party gained 26.7% of the national vote (giving the far right parties a combined share of approximately 30%)· had it contested all constituencies, even where it was rather weak, its share of the vote would have been higher although by how much is a speculative point In winning 22 seats it was still somewhat dwarfed by the NP total of 123 seats although under proportional representation it would have done much better (which is one reason why PR is unlikely to be introduced). Support for the CP was regionally diverse with all its victories coming in the Transvaal, a strong showing in the Orange Free State, but relatively weak in Natal and the Cape Related to this is an ethnic imbalance in party support. It has been estimated that something approaching half of Afrikaner voters supported the far right (mainly CP) in 1987 together with around 8% of the English-speaking electorate. One of the ironies of this is that the NP, traditionally the party of Afrikaner nationalism, found itself dependent on strong English-speaking support to stay in power in 1987.

The success of the CP in 1987 is particularly striking when one considers the disadvantages it faced. As the ruling party the NP enjoyed all the advantages of an incumbent government over the timing of the election and the tailoring of the legislative programme to reflect electoral interests The CP fought the election in the context of a mass media overtly favourable to the NP. Government control over the media, especially the electronic media, which was enhanced by the existing state of emergency is a factor normally considered in relation to the government's struggle with anti-apartheid opponents to the left of it but the far right faces the same problems of media hostility

To bring the picture up to date it is necessary to examine the March 1988 bye-elections It is clear from the results that the momentum favourable to the CP in 1987 was still apparent These bye-elections were all in constituencies which the CP had won in 1987 but the CP not only held the seats but increased its majorities in all three. Swings to the CP were 4% in Standerton, 1% in Schweizer-Reneke and 9% in Randfontein The latter was particularly important not only because it represented the biggest swing but because Randfontein is an urban constituency whereas it had been assumed that the CP performed better in rural areas Up to and including the 1981 election these had all been 'safe' NP seats. Prior to the bye-elections the government had attempted to cut the ground from beneath the far right through a series of tough measures including the banning of the anti-apartheid United Democratic Front and military raids into neighbouring Botswana Whilst it could be argued that these measures failed in the electoral sense it is also possible to suggest that the CP victories would have been even greater had not the government displayed its iron fist approach to opponents of apartheid immediately prior to the elections

What then are the portents for future change in white South African politics? The evidence clearly suggests that from the perspective of anybody wishing to see a move away from apartheid, whether revolutionary

or evolutionary, to dismiss the far right as a protest backlash of little real significance would be wishful thinking of the most dangerous type The CP clearly has a large and growing basis of support amongst white South Africans and the possibility of it forming a future government has to be faced. To predict national results from bye-election results is a hazardous business (even when they confirm already established trends) but it must be noted that a swing on the scale of Randfontein would leave the CP with over 60 seats in parliament which would destroy the previous hegemony of the NP. If one assumes that parties to the left of the NP retain their current levels of support this would leave the NP with a bare overall majority although it would clearly remain in power due to the logical impossibility of the liberal left and far right co-operating by combining their parliamentary forces. Even this scenario assumes no further growth in CP support beyond what appears to be its present level. However, this may not be realistic if President Botha continues on his minimal reform programme His announcement of the possibility of co-opting some blacks into his government (although it involved no prospect of real power sharing) was deliberately timed for after the bye-elections to deny the far right an election issue which would almost certainly have increased their support Although these changes appear minimal to the outsider they were interpreted by the far right as further evidence that the government is 'selling out' white interests in order to placate international opinion. Because what people believe to be the case is often more important than what actually is the case such perceptions have to be taken seriously in attempting to understand the political dynamics involved in a particular situation

The likelihood of CP growth is dependent to a large extent on the direction taken by the NP government. The evidence suggests that any softening of apartheid is likely to result in increased CP support amongst the white electorate If the CP could succeed in its aim of winning more English-speaking support to its cause, especially in its weak spots of the Cape and Natal, it is not impossible that it could become the largest single party in parliament although on present trends it is doubtful if it could envisage an overall majority. If this were to happen parties to the left of the NP would then be involved in the dilemma of having to decide whether they could bring themselves to support the NP in order to keep out the far right. If, on the other hand, President Botha were to undercut the CP by stalling or even backtracking on the reform programme he could probably put a stop to the growth of the far right parties, as was clearly his intention before the bye-elections. This would mean a defeat of the far right political movement through a victory of the essence of far right policies Either way the prospects for the peaceful dismantling of apartheid appear to be receding in the face of the far right advance; indeed many would argue that they are already non-existent

Although the forces of the far right may not have the potential at present to become the government they are likely to remain an important part of the complex political equation in South Africa. White politics is

WORDSWORTH THE TAX COLLECTOR

by A. D. Harvey

IN 1813, William Wordsworth the poet was appointed Distributor of Stamps, responsible for the levying of a variety of excise taxes, in Westmoreland. His district was later extended, covering the whole of what is now Cumbria by 1831; he gave up the post in favour of his son in 1842 This aspect of his career is of course fairly familiar and indeed is often used to flesh out portrayals of Wordsworth as a pretentious bore and political turncoat

Modern scholars' notion of the precise nature of Wordsworth's official labours are mostly derived from the sneer of Joseph Hume in the House of Commons in March 1821.

> The distributors of stamps do not discharge their duties in person, but by deputy, and the consequence was, that when an idle poet (Mr Wordsworth) was appointed one of their number, he minded little in what manner his deputy made his profits, provided he received his share of them
>
> (*Parl Debates* n s vol IV col 1407)

Since, however, a number of Wordsworth's routine letters to the Board of Stamps and letter-book transcripts of over 160 letters from the Board of Stamps to Wordsworth during the period 1813-1833 are preserved in the Public Record Office at Kew, modern scholarship can perhaps make some advance on the prejudiced remarks of Joseph Hume

We do not have the complete story, of course The letter-book covering Wordsworth's induction into office in 1813 no longer exists, and in mid-1833 the administration of the Inland Revenue was reorganised, this being followed by a change in office procedure the last out-letter book was left only half-filled, and the subsequent office records have not survived. Nor do the files of in-letters include Wordsworth's no doubt eloquent and pathetic responses to such communications as

> After the repeated Notifications which have been made to you (and particularly with reference to the Board's circular Letter of the 24th September 1821), they are much surprised that you have made no remittance on account of your Sales and Collections for the current Quarter, and I am to desire, that you will give some explanation of your neglect of duty and likewise make a very considerable payment forthwith
>
> (3 June 1826 — IR 44/2 p 438)

At their peak, the letters from the Board of Stamps were coming to Wordsworth at a rate of one a month, and many of them were merely notifications of receipt of payment or hand-written circulars (there was also a steady trickle of general printed circulars) Others were only routinely vexatious:

> The Comm^rs have received a complaint that upon an application to your Sub-distributers at Appleby & Elsham, no printed forms for Legacy Receipts could be procured — I am directed to desire you will immediately furnish your Sub-distributers with such an assortment of these forms as to prevent any further disappointment in this respect [1]
>
> (18 Nov 1813 — IR 43/5 p 123)

and

> I am directed by the Comm^rs to acquaint you that they do not permit their Distributers to send up any Articles whatever to be stamped upon credit
>
> (10 Feb 1814 — IR 43/5 p 199)

and:

> I am directed by the Commrs to desire you will as soon as possible return to the Office the useless part of your Stock of Stamps pursuant to there [sic] letter of the 21st July last, as your delaying to send them up interferes very much with the Arrangements made at the Office for doing this business.
>
> (8 Sept 1817 — IR 43/7 p 481)

It is clear, however that Wordsworth's supervisory duties, though not onerous, were not completely negligible; and on occasion he was obliged to waste a considerable amount of time on pettifogging details. thus, when he took over the Ulverston district in 1823, the Secretary of the Board of Stamps wrote.

> I am directed by the Commissrs of this Revenue, to desire you will ascertain, whether the Sum of Twenty Shillings paid on the 8th December 1818 to Mr Stephen Tyson of Ulverston Subdistributer to Mr Robt Hesketh for stamping an Agreement between Margaret Brewer and Ralph Brewer, has ever been accounted for
>
> (8 July 1823 — IR 44/2 p 116)

Moreover, the official rebukes, especially for late payment of his accounts, were sufficiently frequent for it to seem likely that the poet's heart sank and his stomach tensed whenever a letter from the Board of Stamps was delivered into his hands Thus, for example, after less than a year in office, he was late in sending in his receipts from Legacy Duty:

> I am directed to express to you the dissatisfaction of the Commrs at this instance of neglect, on your part, and to desire you will explain what was the occasion for it.
>
> It is of great importance to the Revenue and to individuals, that the business of the Legacy Duty should be conducted with regularity and dispatch, and I am directed to refer you to the printed Instructions of December 1811, and to require your punctual observance of them in future.
>
> (21 February 1814 — IR 43/5 p 215)

Frequently, the Secretary in Whitehall waxed sarcastic, in the best jack-in-office manner, as when the poet was asked, amongst other things·

> To explain what it is in the return of your Accounts that renders it necessary to report the Cash in Hand at any time, as greater than *it actually is*?
>
> (26 Sept. 1818 — IR 43/8 p.326)

His attempt to make his payments in country banknotes (frequently not easily negotiable in London) instead of bills on a London bank, provoked this reaction:

> I am directed by the Commissioners to inform you, in answer to your Letter of the 14th Instant, that they cannot make a distinction for which they perceive no grounds, between your District and every other in the Kingdom
>
> (19 Sept 1821 — IR 44/1 p 316)

Poor Wordsworth! But doubtless he was able to pass on some of the flak to his underlings, at any rate, the Board felt obliged to point out, after the visit of an Inspector, that 'it appears you allow a very small remuneration to your Subdistributors' — and they were still complaining nine months later (27 Nov. 1828 — IR 44/5 p 131 and 22 August 1829 — IR 44/6 p 138)

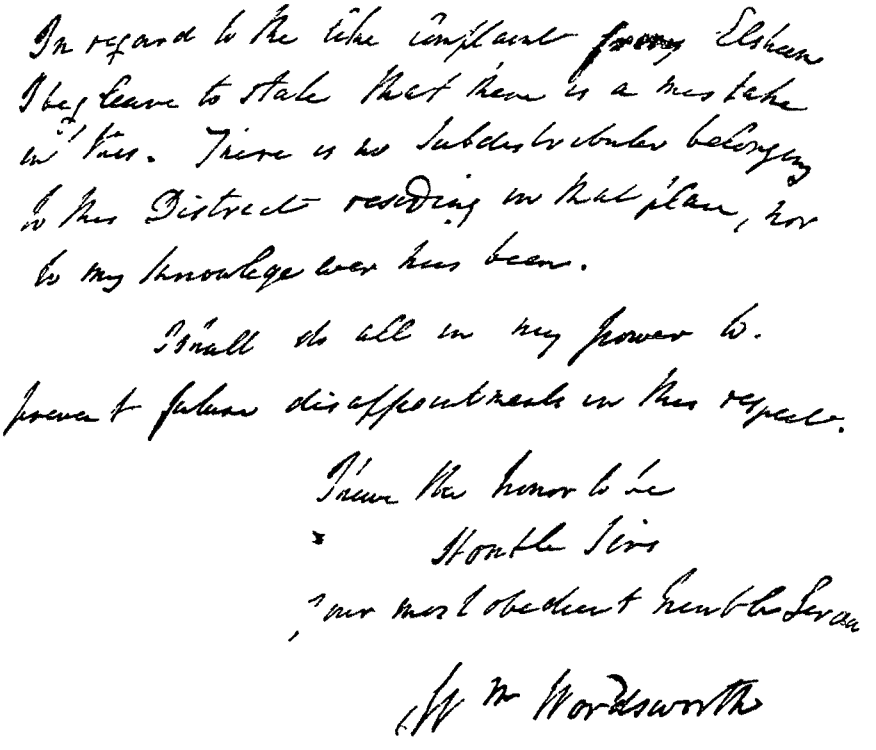
It should not be thought, however, that Wordsworth was regarded officially as bad at his job The enlargement of his district (and income) in 1831 during a Whig government — Wordsworth by this time was known to be very Tory — can be explained in a variety of ways; but the fact that, despite the increased volume of money which was to pass through his hands, the Board of Stamps did not require any increase of his sureties of

£11,000 suggests a degree of satisfaction with his performance. these sureties had to be renewed with the extension of his district so it would have been no problem to increase the amount (15 February 1831 — IR 44/7)

A final evaluation of Wordsworth's career as a tax collector would require a comparison of the letters written to him by the Board of Stamps with those written to the hundred-odd other Distributors in office during his period This would require not merely superhuman patience but, ideally, overalls and gauntlets, as the filthy condition of the Board of Stamps records, especially the decayed leather bindings of the letter-books, renders them a good deal more objectionable to handle than the De Selincourt-Moorman-Shaver-Hill edition of Wordsworth's letters, which prints what survives of the poet's side of this correspondence (Printed with acknowledgement to the Public Record Office)·

---

1 Facsimile of Wordsworth's reply (acknowledgement to Public Record Office)



In regard to the late complaint from Elsham
I beg leave to state that there is a mistake
in it. There is no Subdistributor belonging
to this District residing in that place, nor
to my knowledge ever has been.

I shall do all in my power to
prevent & future discountenance in this respect.

I have the honor to be
Honble Sirs
Your most obedient Humble Servt
Wm Wordsworth

[Dr. A. D Harvey is author of *Britain in the Early Nineteenth Century* (1978), *English Poetry in a Changing Society 1780-1825* (1980), and *Literature into History* (1988) He was Editor of *English Literature and the Great War with France* (1981).]

TWO ENGLISH POETS IN EAST EUROPE: 1. SHAKESPEARE IN THE GERMAN DEMOCRATIC REPUBLIC

by Joachim Bohlmann

WHETHER William Shakespeare is the greatest dramatist of all time, as not a few believe, what can be taken for granted is that the great English poet and playwright has made the strongest impact on world literature This is certainly true of his influence regarding German culture. What began with an intense appreciation by Johann Joachim Eschenbach and Christoph Martin Wieland in the 18th century, has continued until today

In the German Democratic Republic (GDR) the work of William Shakespeare features prominently. According to statistical data of 1986 Shakespeare, with nineteen of his plays, topped the list of playwrights performed most at GDR theatres The thirty-five productions were shown three hundred and thirteen times and drew almost 160,000 visitors in that year *As You Like It* saw nine productions that season, followed by *The Taming of the Shrew* and *Romeo and Juliet* with four productions Much more important than mere figures is the quality of the productions and the response from the audiences

The late Dr O Lessing emphasised Shakespeare's model role for German national theatre Schlegel, Tieck and Baudussin made excellent translations of Shakespeare's works into German An analysis of Goethe's works reveals that he, too, was strongly influenced by Shakepeare. All this resulted in the great British dramatist being dealt with in Germany in the 19th century as though he was a national classical writer This situation continued throughout the 20th century when Max Reinhardt and, later, Erwin Piscator reformed the bourgeois theatre Even Brecht, despite his opposition to traditional stage productions, did not qualify his respect for Shakespeare which found expression in his own adaptation of *Coriolanus*

It is the realism and deep humanity in the works of William Shakespeare which kept him as the focus of attention in the process of shaping socialist theatre in the German Democratic Republic after 1945 *Hamlet, Prince of Denmark* was among the first new stage productions of the Berlin-based *Deutsches Theater* following World War II It inaugurated a new conception aimed at presenting classical texts as contemporary plays

Guided by classical translations, Rudolf Schaller has rendered new versions which take the most recent alterations in the German language into consideration New translations of Shakespeare plays into German by Anselm Schloesser and E S Lauterbach have also widely influenced adaptations at GDR theatres Today, a new generation of talented translators, among them B K Tragelehn, Maik Hamburger and Eva Walch, dominate the scene. Their translations have provided the basis for new

productions of Shakespearean dramas not only in the GDR but also in the Federal Republic of Germany, Austria and Switzerland However, publishers still keep mainly to the accepted classical translations when bringing out new editions of Shakespeare's works

Under the curricula of general schooling in the GDR, pupils study at least one of Shakespeare's plays Hence, *Macbeth, Romeo and Juliet* and *Hamlet* among others are familiar to them. No wonder that children's and youth theatres include Shakespeare in their repertoires as, for instance, the adaptation of *A Midsummer Night's Dream* by GDR writer Franz Fuehmann, who died a few years ago

Shakespeare's influence on contemporary dramatists of the GDR is also evident. One example is Peter Hacks, whose entire activities have shown close links with the Shakespearean concept. Spectacular in the best sense of the word have been the adaptations by Heiner Mueller, who also proved his great talents as stage director for Shakespeare plays when he produced *Macbeth* at Berlin's *Volksbuehne* With *Hamlet-Maschine* and *Anatomie Titus Fall of Rome Ein Shakespeare-kommentar,* Mueller has created new dramas for contemporary theatre.

Though much tribute is paid to William Shakespeare in the GDR, the fostering of his artistic credo is far from idolatry What makes him so appealing to the young is the unconventional manner of dealing with problems which appear to be contemporary. Sound common sense, international understanding and safeguarding of peace — pivotal issues of the times we live in — find their expression in various ways in Shakespeare's plays and provoke unending discussion This also makes the many stage productions of Shakespeare plays so exciting from both artistic and ideologic points of view.

Weimar's *Deutsches National Theater,* for example, recently presented *Hamlet, Prince of Denmark* in an almost modern version In 1988 the company will stage *Antony and Cleopatra* Shakespeare-Project, at its theatre in the town of Scherin in northern GDR, (stage director Christoph Schroth), recently produced two of Shakespeare's plays — *The Winter's Tale* and *Romeo and Juliet,* giving them topical messages Also exemplary is Manfred Wekwerth's production of *Troilus and Cressida* at the Berlin Ensemble. That version has already been shown during a guest tour of Great Britain. All these productions have been received with much interest and acclaim and have drawn large audiences.

[Joachim Bohlmann writes on arts subjects for *Panorama DDR*]

2. BYRON IN RUSSIA

by Boris Gilenson

GEORGE Gordon Byron was extremely popular in Russia, just as were his great compatriots William Shakespeare and Charles Dickens Byron has become part of Russian and Soviet culture.

Millions of readers turn to his books in the course of their life, beginning in secondary school, when they study his *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage*, side by side with the works of Pushkin and Lermontov. It is no exaggeration to say that Russia has cherished Byron as its own son. He is an author who has commanded many generations of Russian and Soviet admirers, including famous Russian poets and the first Russian literary critics When he lost his life in Greece, Russians mourned his death and dedicated poems to him Decembrist Bestuzhev wrote in his journal 'I nearly wept for Byron'. Expressing general feelings, poet Vyazemsky noted 'It seems like a moral loss . . . One feels a kind of emptiness . . .'. Pushkin dedicated to Byron some unforgettable, inspired lines in his poem 'The Sea'.

All the most distinguished people in Russia admired Byron His anguish, satire, irony and lyricism evoked grateful response in Russia and, as if sensing the devoted love of Russian readers, Byron was interested in Russia and knew its history rather well for his time. In his poem, 'The Age of Bronze', he predicted a great future for the distant country. A prominent Russian scientist Klimenti Timiryazev (his mother, incidentally, was an Englishwoman and he was familiai with English culture), mentioned that fact in a booklet written in 1919 The description of the storming of Izmail by the Russian troops under the command of Suvorov and Don Juan's stay at the court of Catherine II evoked lively interest in Russia

Many Russian and Soviet poets translated Byron Vasili Zhukovsky was the first His translation of 'The Prisoner of Chillon' was a major event in Russian literature. Work on that poem seemed to change Zhukovsky Belinski wrote 'Zhukovsky's translation of "The Prisoner of Chillon" echoed in one's heart like the stroke of an axe . . . Here, for the first time, the strength and might of the Russian language are powerfully felt . . Every line of Zhukovsky's translation is full of immense energy . . ' Pushkin also welcomed that translation for Byron's poetry inspired Pushkin His southern poems evinced a Byronic influence. Pushkin and some of his Russian contemporaries regarded the romantic hero in Byron's poems as an expression of moral, political and social struggle against the prevalent social order. Pushkin read Byron attentively and made some very shrewd comments. He had Byron's portrait in his study in the village of Mikhailovskoye where he lived in exile; although his poetry was different from Byron's. Optimism was typical of it To Pushkin, the school of Byron implied mastering some of his ways and inner resistance, even struggle, against his idol. This resulted in Pushkin eventually overcoming 'Byronism'.

Belinski, like Pushkin, was an ardent admirer He called Byron 'a mighty and deeply subjective spirit', and 'a giant, proud and staunch personality' Lermontov also read Byron's poems avidly. He used Byron's lines as epigraphs to some of his early poems. Subsequently, he translated some of the poems It was not an over-literal rendering Lermontov contrived most forcefully to convey the energy and the tragic elements of Byron's poetry.

Almost every poet of Pushkin's time responded to Byron's poetry in some way. To Kuchelbecker, Byron was 'the bard of courageous souls.' To Ryleyev, he was 'a noble spirit, the light of the age'. Tyutchev, a subtle, lyrical poet, described Byron as 'a mighty and majestic rebel in the world'.

In the period succeeding the age of romanticism, Byron remained active in the movement leaning towards the democratisation of Russian culture and the liberation of the people from the Tsarist despotic rule. Thus, translations from Byron, which began in the twenties of the 19th century, quickly grew in number and aptitude. There were so many translations and translators that by the beginning of the 20th century it became possible to publish Byron's complete works with expert comments.

Byron's philosophy became known to Russians thanks to the fine translation of Turgenev, poet as well as novelist. In the early 20th century, the dramas, 'Manfred', 'Cain' and 'Heaven and Earth' were translated by Ivan Bunin, an outstanding man of letters who subsequently won a Nobel prize Bunin's translations are a combination of the subtle art of recreating the stylistic models of the original and the inspiration of the master. Moreover, Bunin sometimes vied with Byron, offering his own stylistic versions.

Two more great Russian poets of the early 20th century, Valeri Bryusov and Alexander Blok, also translated Byron. In many aspects they were artistic antipodes, and each admired different aspects of Byron's talent. Bryusov liked Byron's solemn, highly emotional tone related to classicism This can be seen from his choices for translation: 'On leaving Newstead Abbey', 'I would I were a Careless Child', and 'Lachin y gair'. Bryusov's Russian verse flows smooth and fluent. Alexander Blok chose the lyrical poems Those were early works, full of earnest meditation, or occasionally merry and playful. 'Imitated from Catullus', 'Imitation of Tibullus', and 'Fragment'. Blok also translated Byron's wonderfully laconic and tense last masterpieces, 'Love and Death' and 'Journal in Cephalonia'.

Many editions of Byron's work have come off the presses in Soviet times. In the harsh period of the civil war and economic dislocation Maxim Gorky launched his bold plan of issuing a *Vsemirnaya Literatura* (World Literature) Series, in which he wanted to include the best works of all nations and times A volume of Byron, translated by the leading poets and commented on by scholars, was one of the first publications in the series. Subsequently, in the 200-volume series *Biblioteka Mirovoi Literatury* (World Literature Collection), the successor to Gorky's *Vsemirnaya Literatura,* a volume of Byron's works was included. It contains his most popular poems 'Childe Harold's Pilgrimage' and 'Don Juan'. Over the past 70 years the Soviet Union has acquired a fine collection of Byron's translations, thanks to the effort of the best translators and experts in the English language. Translations by Samuil Marshak are 'poetic' He brilliantly conveys the grandeur in the poem 'She walks in beauty' from *Hebrew Melodies.*

One of the best translators in the new school of the Soviet translation

of poetry was by Wilhelm Levik He translated from almost all European languages and devoted particular attention to Byron Other notable translators were Boris Pasternak, Mikhail Zenkevich and Vladimir Lugovskoi Some translations evoked heated discussions One of them followed the publication of Shengeli's translation of 'Don Juan' in 1947 Georgy Shengeli, an expert in prosody and English poetry, had worked on Byron for many years He translated the eastern poems. While striving for a maximum of exactitude, he had both achievements and failures. A new translation of 'Don Juan' by Leningrad poetess Tatyana Gnedich evoked great interest Having fallen victim to groundless repression, Tatyana began working on her translation in confinement When she was released she published her translation (in 1959) Byron's lines ring true and easy. Kornei Chukovsky, honorary doctor of Oxford University, called Tatyana's translation 'an unexpected joy'

Although our times are different from the past century, the great English poet is still widely read in the USSR In 1981 a four-volume edition of Byron's works was issued with a print-run of 600,000 copies. The two-volume edition of 1986 was 500,000 copies The leading Soviet publishing house, *Khudozhestvennaya Literatura,* marked the bi-centenary of the poet's birth by issuing another two-volume edition The same publishers have been working on a collection *Byron Memoirs of Contemporaries* The USSR has never published such a collection before Progressive publishers continue to introduce a new reading public to Byron's prose A volume of political writings and some letters and diaries not previously translated will be issued by other publishing houses in Russian and other languages of the USSR, thus commemorating the bi-centenary of Byron's birth.

[Professor Boris Gilenson is a Doctor of Philology in the University of Moscow, USSR]

CORRESPONDENCE

UNILATERAL DEVOLUTION A ONE-SIDED VIEW

Dear Madam,

I refer to Michael Ancram's article, 'Unilateral Devolution and the Constitution' in *Contemporary Review* (Vol 252, No 1468) It is, in my opinion, too one-sided

If we apply the circumstances between England and Scotland to other countries we will get another view of the matter.

Suppose France and Switzerland were to join in a Union whereby both countries agreed to form a new Parliament, called the United Parliament of France and Switzerland This new Parliament to be held in Paris, in the same building and under the same rules as the previous Parliament of France, and that it would consist of eight French MPs to every one Swiss MP. There would be no Parliament in Switzerland

Suppose further that at the time of this new Union less than one percent of the population had a vote, and that after the United Parliament gave everyone a vote the Swiss said that there should be an Assembly in Switzerland to deal with purely Swiss affairs Suppose the French replied that this would mean Unilateral Devolution as France was quite satisfied with things as they were, and that the French ignored the Swiss argument that with an eight to one majority France already had Unilateral Devolution

That is the position between England and Scotland. Should not this version of the situation be put alongside Michael Ancram's article so that a proper assessment of the situation could be made?

Yours faithfully,

Udingston, Glasgow. PETER THOMSON

'GIANTISM' AND THE EEC

Dear Madam,

I find it difficult to answer the Rev. John Papworth's letter (No. 1470, Vol 25) because I agree with almost everything he says. 'Giantism' is the major problem in the modern world — whether communistic or capitalistic — and that it will remove our liberties if we are not extremely vigilant. I thought that that was the thrust of my article (Vol 252, No. 1465) We do, however, have to ask what is the cause of giantism but it is not possible to go into that here?

I have some hopes that the European countries may be able to discover a better way of living together than either the United States or the Soviet Union have developed. Europe's unique history and culture could equip the European countries to do so. It will certainly not be through a 'unity' in the governmental sense in which John Papworth uses it.

In my article I quoted Christopher Tugendhat as saying:

1 'The faith that was prevalent at the time of the Community's birth in

large, centralised units and the efficacy of "planning" has been destroyed by experience.' (a)

2 'Most people don't want to be run from Brussels.' (a)

Tugendhat, in my opinion rightly, looks towards Switzerland for a solution:

'If that point (the need for decentralisation) needs to be spelt out in the case of Switzerland, a confederation that has evolved over hundreds of years but in which the canton rather than the confederation remains most people's focus of loyalty, how much more it needs emphasising in the context of the Community.' (b)

I myself like the Nordic Council and would wish to see the Community adopting that model. If it did so there would be no need for Britain to withdraw It would hardly be consistent with the Rev John Papworth's own principles to withdraw from the Community and leave a giant superpower to develop on the Continent of Europe Britain has a role to play in seeing that such a giant structure does not develop

(a) Christopher Tugendhat's Montague Burton Lecture.
(b) *Making Sense of Europe,* Christopher Tugendhat, p.194, Viking 1986.
(c) The general theme of this reply is developed more fully in current issues of *New European*

(Editor, *New European*) Yours faithfully,

14 Carroun Road, London SW8 1JT. JOHN COLEMAN

AN OPEN LETTER TO THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR EDUCATION FROM THE PRESIDENT OF THE ROYAL SOCIETY AND THE PRESIDENT OF THE BRITISH ACADEMY

Dear Secretary of State,

We write to express the hope that the Education Reform Bill, in the form that it receives Royal Assent, will provide for the continued advancement of learning in conformity with the highest ideals of academic tradition in the UK.

In its present form, there are features with respect to higher education that give us cause for concern It seems to us vitally important that changes be made to the Bill so that the proposed Universities Funding Council has included in its remit the duty of presenting to the Secretary of State well-informed advice on the needs of universities. We are also concerned that the UFC's powers to lay down conditions to universities should be confined to those activities whose funding is derived from the UFC and that universities should remain at liberty to pursue activities supported from other sources, especially innovative ones.

We stand ready to meet you at any time and to provide any further information you might seek.

Yours faithfully,

President of the Royal Society SIR GEORGE PORTER
President of the British Academy SIR RANDOLPH QUIRK

Literary Supplement

DR. DAVID OWEN ON THE NATIONAL HEALTH SERVICE

Our N H S David Owen Pan, London.

This authoritative and provocative book by David Owen is especially timely appearing as it does close to the fortieth birthday of the NHS Dr Owen is, of course, especially well qualified to write on this theme coming from a medical family, holding positions in two medical specialties and having been a Minister of Health

The book starts by describing the main features of the NHS The extensive range and personal nature of the available care are stressed and much praise is given to the concept of the family doctor which is unique internationally Owen stresses that the respective roles of local authorities and health authorities need to be more closely delineated This is especially so in relation to care of the elderly, the mentally ill and the mentally handicapped The role of general managers is then briefly discussed with special reference to leadership in the local health service and as defenders of the patient's interest

The sections on the medical and nursing professions discuss their nature as well as their influence. With respect to doctors most of the ground covered is familiar and has been much discussed by the media in recent months Topics reviewed include the necessity for the practice of medicine to involve the whole person, further contacts of General Practitioners with hospitals, the advantages to the profession which would accrue were hospital doctors trained in health economics and the means whereby a medical audit could enable doctors to take more responsibility for the resources which they utilise

The chapter on the nursing profession is of considerable interest Great strides have, of course, been made here in the last decade, with nursing now becoming a major influence within the NHS Only very recently have nurses been able to achieve a fair financial reward, now the emphasis must obviously be on partnership between doctors and nurses, the two professions working side by side with each other According to Owen the fundamental priority either within the hospital or in primary health care must be to end the traditional difference of status between nurses and doctors

The book contains further information much of which is important, for example, there are thoughtful and provocative chapters on market forces within the health service, a comparison of the British NHS with similar services overseas, the chronic problem of waiting lists, the issue of community care and the pivotal nature of preventative medicine and health promotion

Dr. Owen is to be congratulated on a thought-provoking and highly contemporary book Its readership should be wide and it should be especially relevant to members of local health authorities, hospital administrators, community workers, general practitioners and members of government departments notably the DHSS

JOHN A LORAINE

MERRY ENGLAND

Celebrating Our Heritage. A Journey through Christian England Joanna Bogle With illustrations by Ursula Nash Marshall Pickering 160pp £5 95

Joanna Bogle is a devoted, enthusiastic and very English Roman Catholic. This attractive little book of hers offers the reader, and the tourist, a series of happy pilgrimages with all the fun Chaucer for one added to the edification The English Tourist Board should commend it So should Christian leaders of all denominations At Launceston in Cornwall Mrs Bogle salutes not only the Pilgrimage of Grace and the martyrdom of St Cuthbert Mayne but the imprisonment under Cromwell of the Quaker George Fox and 'the evangelical fervour of the Wesleyans'

This is a joyous book The author rejects the phrase 'post-Christian society' as a boring, pessimistic cliché She recognises the decline in worship and morality but demonstrates in more than a score of English counties the essential Christianity of 'our heritage' Christianity, she contends, underpins our laws and explains many of our customs (Do you know the origin of the word 'tawdry'?) 'Our Parliament still starts each day with prayers ' Since the publication of the book the House of Lords has voted that religious education should be 'mainly Christian' 'The great feasts of Christmas and Easter are marked as annual national holidays ' (But alas for Whitsun which may, or may not, coincide with the pagan Spring Bank Holiday!)

In an opening chapter England's Protector, St George, is depicted as much more than a fairy-tale figment; and Arthur whom Mallory and Tennyson romanticised from his historical context appears as champion of Romano-Christian civilisation against the pirates and barbarians

Ursula Nash's drawings brighten a lively text Space is thoughtfully provided for the reader's notes But an index would have been welcome

JOHN BIGGS-DAVISON

THE ANTI-SEMITIC BACKGROUND TO THE HOLOCAUST

Approaches to Auschwitz The Legacy of the Holocaust Richard L. Rubenstein and John K Roth SCM Press Ltd £12.95

This book is the joint work of Richard L Rubenstein, Professor of Religion at Florida State University and John K Roth, Professor of Philosophy at Claremont-McKenna College The former is a Jew, the latter a Christian It is a large work which could serve as a text book for anyone anxious to be informed about the Holocaust and this means anyone interested in the history of this century It is an uncomfortable event which cannot be avoided and finally ended the late nineteenth century myth of progress The authors do not pretend that they have exhausted the subject In addition the book can be regarded as a reference book for particular attitudes to the Jewish question For example the Dreyfus case is well known and also the fact that Emile Zola played a part in it, but here the details can be found and the French background

At times throughout history the Jews have been regarded as an alien presence and so the authors look back on the historical roots of anti-semitism in the Greek-Roman and early Christian worlds They see a recurring pattern of attempted conversion, expulsion and annihilation Things changed at the Enlightenment but during the nineteenth century there was a swing back. In the late nineteenth century it was in Russia that the Jews mainly suffered. in the twentieth it was in Germany which had previously favoured them Of the nine million Jews in Europe in 1939, six million perished Other countries with some exceptions contributed to this by returning Jews to Germany during the 1939-45 war The near destruction of a race took place in a cultured country, outstanding in art, music and literature The process had begun in the first century when there was reference to the 'satanic nature of Jews who did not accept Jesus' Anti-semitism is traced back to the Early Fathers, to St Augustus and Luther It is suggested that the Holocaust was the outcome of the Lutheran tradition One wonders if this is quite fair Certainly Bonhoeffer was no supporter of Hitler Others have considered the causes as obscure, possibly connected with Hitler's own personality and certainly with false ideas of racial purity Nevertheless genocide occurred in a country influenced by Christianity and there are awkward questions to be faced In the Christian soul searching, however, there could be a further problem, that any critical political comment about present day Israel, a state which is one result of the Holocaust, could be regarded as anti-semitic

In considering the impact of the Holocaust on Christian thought American theologians have led the way, prompted by the fact that there are more Jews in the United States of America than in any oher country The USA has usually been anxious to admit persecuted peoples, but this did not happen in 1943 and 1944 It would seem that the situation was not properly reported Some in the Christian world consider that Jews continue to be over sensitive and too occupied with things that happened fifty years ago Some Jewish people consider Christians lacking in feeling and not anxious to share responsibility Clearly the wound is deep and bitter In addition there are theological differences Christianity believes that man is fallen and has to be redeemed by the crucifixion Jews think that he has ability to choose between good and evil As a result attitudes to forgiveness are different

This is a challenging book dealing with delicate questions At the moment of writing this review (July 1988) Jewish and Christian theologians are meeting at Oxford to look into the origins of anti-semitism and the way it has been affected by doubtful Christian traditions

LAURENCE TANNER

THE EMPIRE AT BAY

The Empire at Bay The Leo Amery Diaries, 1929-1945 Edited by John Barnes and David Nicholson Hutchinson £19 95

This is the second volume of the diaries of a politician whose career was dedicated to making the British Empire a coherent and permanent force in the world He was a man with clearly thought-out convictions and a deep intellectual purpose· therefore it is hardly surprising that his political life was one of frustration.

Amery will never be acclaimed as one of the great diarists of British history He dictated his diary each night which gives it an immediacy but perhaps made him discreet in his description of people

However Leo Amery's diary is far more important as an historical document than either the Nicolson or 'Chips' diaries It is almost devoid of society or literary gossip The diary — or at least the large selection gathered here — is almost exclusively concerned with politics Much of it is centred on Amery's devotion to the Imperial ideal It will be of great use to anyone interested in studying the history of the British Empire and the nations that evolved from it

However the most fascinating part of the diary covers the war years in which Amery served in the Cabinet as Secretary of State for India Amery was fascinated by his old friend Churchill However much he admired him, Amery could not forget that Churchill had been the younger boy at Harrow who pushed him in the swimming pool Throughout the war, Amery was often critical of the way Churchill conducted his Cabinet His constant complaint is that Churchill was too prone to treat the Cabinet to elegant lectures on whatever topic currently fascinated him Amery had long been suspicious of America's economic power as a threat to the Empire and he felt that Churchill had too great a sentimental devotion to the States Nor did he ever really veer from the view about his old schoolfellow which he wrote in 1929 when they were both on a ship to Canada 'The key to Winston is to realise that he is mid-Victorian, steeped in the politics of his father's period. It is only his verbal exuberance and abounding vitality that conceal this elementary fact about him'

One fascination of diaries is that the reader often knows what is going to happen and can observe men recording unconscious omens of their fate Thus on this trans-Atlantic voyage one topic of conversation between Amery and Churchill was how they would face execution Such a tragedy was to enter Amery's own family sixteen years later The editors have wisely included 'An Explanation' by Amery written after the execution of his elder son for treason He was hanged in 1945 for making broadcasts for the Germans denouncing the politics of the Cabinet of which his father was a member It is a masterly little piece of writing, showing how someone can get caught up in tragedy

Leo Amery was the type of statesman who tried to discern significant trends in international politics Unlike most British politicians of his period, he had a great interest in Europe, particularly Austria, and travelled and read widely to keep himself informed As such, his diary is of great value to anyone who wants to know more about central Europe as well as Palestine and India in these fateful years

The editors have provided long introductions to each section of the book and each of these is well worth reading on its own as it sets Amery's diary in the light of later scholarship The weight of these diaries, both the physical weight of the over 1,000 pages and the weight of the selections, may not make this book holiday reading Yet it will add greatly to the knowledge and understanding of anyone interested in the history of our own tragic century

RICHARD MULLEN

THE PLACE OF SEXUALITY IN HARDY'S NOVELS

Women and Sexuality in the Novels of Thomas Hardy Rosemarie Morgan Routledge £22 50

Dr Morgan takes up the cause of Hardy's splendidly unconventional, often sexy, heroines in their struggle for happiness and fulfilment in a world where all rules were made by men The book is lively and feminist; but, sadly, Dr Morgan overstates her case and gives ammunition to hostile male reviewers most obviously in her treatment of *Far From the Madding Crowd*

She argues that in order to get his gloriously unvictorian heroine and early instalments of the story into Victorian drawing-rooms where novels were read aloud to the family, Hardy forestalled Mrs Grundy's censure by putting it into the mouth of the boorish Gabriel Oak Good point; but from Oak's seeing Bathsheba and her aunt from above 'as Milton's Satan first saw Paradise' and other clues, Dr Morgan decides Oak is not just the boor we all find him at the start, but a satanic force menacing Bathsheba, and finally breaking her 'fearless spirit' The ministering angel's name Hardy gives him and the fact that three times he saves Bathsheba from disaster count for nothing with Dr Morgan She even sees the storm scene as devised to expose Oak's 'mercantile mentality', flatly contradicting Hardy's own elucidation of 'palimpsest' as an image to suggest the complexity of human motives

Had Hardy's aims been what Dr Morgan imagines, he could hardly have devised a scene less appropriate the storm highlights the pair's need for each other, their fitness to struggle together, and their courage and perseverance It could not but increase the regard each had for the other All this is contrasted with the uselessness of Troy lying helpless in the barn with the others he has made drunk

Experience teaches Oak tact, self-knowledge, consideration for others (consider Fanny's coffin) and when, rejected by Bathsheba, he saves up for a start in life elsewhere who but Dr Morgan would blame him? Less obviously, is she not unfair to Bathsheba, who also grows in self-knowledge, courage and resilience (not that she was ever un-resilient She resented Oak's criticism but never let it damp her independent spirit for long)? In saying that Bathsheba is 'nullified' at the end, is this not seriously to underestimate her character?

To me it seems that Dr Morgan is denying, as Hardy never did, the give-and-take, the necessary compromises and ironies of real living Discussing *The Return of the Native* she prefers Eustacia, the 'model goddess', to Tamsin, the 'model woman', and although we can agree with her here and recognise that Hardy, despite himself, had much sympathy for Eustacia, the contrast Hardy had in mind was between Eustacia and the flesh-and-blood down-to-earthiness of a Tess Eustacia, if called by the names of goddesses, would have thought it her due, Tess disliked it 'Call me Tess', she told Angel Dr Morgan demands everything for her heroines, ignoring Hardy's belief that happiness comes from not expecting too much

Compensating for the 'heresies', Dr Morgan has many illuminating insights, especially in her shrewd analysis of Sue's and Jude's weaknesses and their frustrations amidst the iniquitous laws that then prevailed concerning women and marriage a reminder, this, of how much Hardy's books, particularly *Tess* and *Jude*, helped later to change public opinion

'Heresies' don't discredit the book (who wants all the old stuff dished up?) nor does Dr. Morgan's feminism What the 'heresies' do discredit is the method of selecting details and deducing from them an author's 'real' aims, when, clearly, different details would yield a different conclusion

Satan or guardian angel? It's not the critic's choice, it's the author's; and the whole book, the general trend of the story, not the phrase or image, will give the answer, and dictate how far, or how literally, an image should be taken Hardy himself several times pointed out that one finds or perceives only what one wants, or is prepared, to perceive For one such quotation (from *Far From the Madding Crowd*) I am indebted to Dr Morgan ' we colour and mould according to the wants within us whatever our eyes bring in' Poor Gabriel Oak is 'coloured and moulded' according to the feminist 'wants' within Dr Morgan to put a clumsy yokel in his place The feminism is not at fault that indeed makes *Women and Sexuality in the Novels of Thomas Hardy* a real contribution to Hardy studies The blame must go to an absurd critical method that gives too much rein to the feminism and encourages Dr Morgan to overstate her case

ROY MORRELL

THE LAWRENCE LEGEND LIVES ON

Images of Lawrence Stephen E Tabachnick & Christopher Matheson Jonathan Cape £12 95, *A Touch of Genius The Life of T E Lawrence* Malcolm Brown & Julia Cave J M Dent & Sons, Ltd £14 95

It is not surprising that new books on T E Lawrence should appear in 1988, the centenary of his birth Exhibitions are taking place in the Bodleian Library, Oxford and in the National Portrait Gallery In addition, Lawrence, like Queen Victoria or Oscar Wilde, is a perennial favourite the public interest never wanes Like those other two, Lawrence has his own *culte* following which stretches round the English-speaking world and beyond

Books about Lawrence have tended to fall roughly into two camps: the adulatory and the deprecating Since the *Sunday Times* revelations about his masochism in the 1960s, new books tend to justify their appearance either because of new sources or new approaches Both of these books can be considered on the basis of their approach rather than on any new hoard of hitherto unknown manuscript collections

Few non-political men left so many papers behind them and few have had so many of them used in biographies as Lawrence Of course, few people have spent so much of their, and their friends' time in analysing their own personality This is perhaps why a certain type of reader finds him such an attractive character The more his 'secret life' is revealed, the more he is seen both as a mischievous *poseur* and a lovable and loyal friend The end result is that he becomes even more attractive

Images of Lawrence is more a compendium than a biography and for those who are widely read in the literature of Lawrenciana it will prove interesting fare It is divided into three parts the first is a short but straight-forward, uncritical biography The second is an extended book-review which surveys the books, films, and documentaries about Lawrence from the first, Lowell Thomas, to a 1985 television programme The third assesses his achievements as an

archaeologist, soldier, diplomat, and writer Although some of the photographs (compiled by Christopher Matheson) are new little else is and occasionally one realises that the writer is not well grounded in Lawrence lore· on page 163, for example, he says Lawrence attended the funeral of Queen Alexandra What in fact he attended was an RAF church parade on the day of the Queen's funeral

A Touch of Genius is written by Malcolm Brown who worked on two television documentaries on Lawrence, he was helped by Miss Julia Cave, another BBC producer One can overlook the occasional error, like referring to a clergyman as 'Revd H D Littler' although one suspects Lawrence would have been wrily amused One cannot overlook the lack of any critical questioning The writer repeats yet again the charming story which Lawrence passed on to the credulous that he, like Carlyle, had lost the manuscript of a *magnum opus,* (in this case *Seven Pillars of Wisdom*) and had had to re-write it from memory He accepts without questioning the highly over-written account of the 'Deraa Incident' which Lawrence included in his *Seven Pillars.* He also accepts without questioning that Lawrence was adroit in handling Middle Eastern affairs after the War He does not point out that Lawrence fully shared the Foreign Office view that Britain should carry on supporting Feisal and not Ibn Saud, history ruthlessly proved both Lawrence and the F O wrong

Lawrence was and remains a fascinating man for certain readers To others he must be a prime example of one of Oxford's most peculiar products the undergraduate who never grows up

JAMES MUNSON

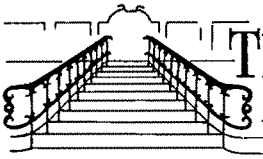
SHORTER REVIEWS

Whale Nation (Jonathan Cape £15 00 Paperback £8 95) This is a very remarkable volume on the life, death, slaughter of the whale and the commercial use of its remains, contrived by Heathcote Williams It is superbly produced All these aspects are shown in a great number of photographs, both in colour and black and white, supported by verse Mr Heath-

cote Williams' poem, linked with the illustrations, is an evocative, moving and dramatic account of this wonderful animal in all its ways, against the environment of the sea, and after its slaughter the use of its remains in factory, home and hospital The poem is followed by an anthology on 'the nature of whales' This consists of prose writings from science and literature which cover again the life and environment of the whale This is a remarkably comprehensive study which requires to be read and digested, although some may prefer more orthodox prose treatment of the subject

Elizabethan-Jacobean Drama (A & C Black, £18 00) In this latest New Mermaid Background Book, Professor G Blakemore Evans of Harvard University has produced a useful contemporary anthology on the work of the theatre during this fruitful period in the history of English drama. The volume is in two main parts It is first concerned 'through excerpts from contemporary opinion and official documents etc' with various aspects of the 'little world' of the theatre in the context of the period These include the public attitude to the theatre and the actual workings of theatre companies The second part relates to the 'world and the theatre' These excerpts are designed to show the life and outlook of ordinary people which 'provided an ever fruitful slice of real-life materials to the dramatists' during this period. 'Formal selections from Shakespeare have not been included' on the grounds that for the most part readers would be familiar with any selections and his inclusion would have 'necessitated the omission of many less well known but worthwhile witnesses not otherwise easily available' Professor Evans has edited the sections with introductory notes and comments on the material. There is a useful glossary, as well as an index

The Sun at Noon (Coronet £3 95) This paperback edition of Dick Wilson's 'anatomy of modern Japan' will spread the knowledge of a country which is still an enigma to many Westerners The book is about the lives of people and characteristics of modern Japanese institutions The author argues that westernisation after the war is now to some extent giving way to a revival of old Japanese culture. For example, in discussing Japan's economic structure, he concludes that 'there is no question of industry or commerce swinging over to a Western model and thus becoming intelligible to Westerners' On the other hand he also considers that Japan's economic prosperity has now reached its zenith and may well decline This book is based upon the author's many visits to Japan and his study of its social and economic life



The Next Stage Company

16 TRYON HOUSE 17 MALLORD STREET LONDON SW3 6AJ

01-351 2246

will present ROBERT EDDISON and JUDY CAMPBELL

in the first London production of

ONE THING MORE

by CHRISTOPHER FRY

Directed by the author and Joan White

All Saints Church, Old Church Street, Chelsea S W 3 on
TUESDAY, 1st NOVEMBER (All Saints Day) at 8 00 p m
and WEDNESDAY, 2nd NOVEMBER (All Souls Day) at 8 p m

All enquiries - Please telephone Joan White 01-351 2246

THE JOURNAL OF

TERRORISM RESEARCH

In Association with the Research Foundation for the Study of Terrorism

Editors: David C Rapoport, University of California, Los Angeles, Paul Wilkinson, University of Aberdeen **Associate Editors:** Gerard Chaliand, Ecole Nationale d'Administration (ENA), Paris, Ronald Crelinsten, University of Ottawa, Canada, Ehud Sprinzak, Hebrew University of Jerusalem, Israel **Book Reviews Editor:** Martha Crenshaw, Wesleyan University, Connecticut

THE JOURNAL OF TERRORISM RESEARCH

1988 Subscription Rates £58 00 Institutions, £33 00 Individuals
Frequency Four times per year 1988 - Vol 1 No 1

FRANK CASS JOURNALS

Gainsborough House, 11 Gainsborough Road, London E11 1RS

Tel: 01-530 4226 Fax: 01-530 7795 Telex: 897719

13 DEC 1988

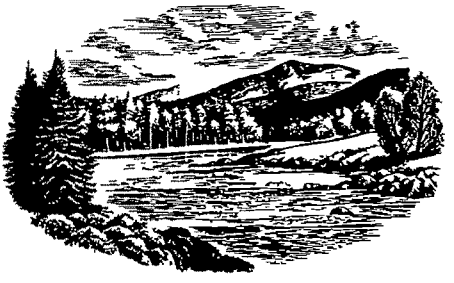
CRAIGENDARROCH

ROYAL DEESIDE

Set in 29 acres of wooded hillside overlooking the Dee Valley and only 8 miles from Balmoral is Craigendarroch Luxury timeownership lodges furnished and fitted to the highest standards are set in small groups amongst the trees

The 4 star Country House Hotel awarded 5 crowns highly commended by the STB combines old fashioned standards of comfort and service with all modern conveniences The Hotel restaurants are supervised by Bill Gibb, Scotland's Premier Chef

The adjoining Country Club offers facilities including indoor swimming pool, spa bath, saunas, solarium, squash, snooker, trimnasium, Health and Beauty, games room, and creche, while in the grounds there is a 75 metre dry ski slope and tow



For more information on Timeownership, Self Catering rentals or Hotel accommodation please write to -

CRAIGENDARROCH

Braemar Road, Ballater, AB3 5XA
Telephone 0338 55858, Telex 739952, Fax 0338 55447

Printed by MANDEVILLE PRESS, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ, and published by the CONTEMPORARY REVIEW CO LTD, 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG
Telephone 01-831 7791 All business matters should be addressed to the publishers

Contemporary Review

122nd YEAR OF PUBLICATION

OCTOBER 1988

AUSTRALIAN ABORIGINES: THE STRUGGLE CONTINUES
Keith D. Suter

THE MANDATE OF FRANCOIS MITTERAND IN AFRICA
Fashola Olajide

IS THE INTERNATIONAL DEBT CRISIS OVER?
Nigel M. Healey

EDINBURGH FESTIVAL — 1988
Laurence Green

and other articles together with an eight-page Literary Supplement

£1.30

Contemporary Review

incorporating The Fortnightly

October 1988 Vol. 253 No. 1473 Founded 1866

Contents

		Page
Australian Aborigines: the Struggle Continues	Keith D. Suter	**169**
A View of Angola	Patricia Morris	**178**
The Mandate of François Mitterand in Africa	Fashola Olajide	**183**
Is the International Debt Crisis Over?	Nigel M. Healey	**188**
The Future of Neutrality	Peter Johnson	**194**
Official Secrets and the Ethics of Promise-Making	Hugh V. McLachlan	**200**
Bulgaria	John Elsom	**205**
Cinema: A Quarterly Review	David Shipman	**209**
Edinburgh Festival — 1988	Laurence Green	**213**
LITERARY SUPPLEMENT		
Quarterly Fiction Review	Rosalind Wade	**217**
Non-fiction Reviews Betty Abel, L. Muray, Rosalind Wade.		**221**
SHORTER REVIEWS		**224**

Editor:
ROSALIND WADE, O.B.E.

Associate Editor:
BETTY ABEL

Editorial Advisers:
PROFESSOR ESMOND WRIGHT
PROFESSOR PAUL WILKINSON

Fine Arts Correspondent:
ERNLE MONEY

Music Correspondent:
DAVID FINGLETON

Finance Director:
LEONARD SKIPP

© 1988. Published monthly by the Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG, England, and printed in England by Mandeville Press, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ. U.S. Mailing Agent: Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 2323 Randolph Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Second Class postage paid at Rahway N.J. Annual subscription (including postage); U.K. £18.50, U.S.A. and Canada $65.00. Rates for all other countries on application. Copies can be sent by airmail outside U.S. and Canada: extra costs given on request. U.S. Postmaster: please send all address corrections to 'Contemporary Review', c/o Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Contemporary Review. (ISSN/0010/7565)

Contemporary Review

Founded 1866 **incorporating The Fortnightly**

October 1988 **Vol. 253** **No. 1473**

AUSTRALIAN ABORIGINES: THE STRUGGLE CONTINUES

by Keith D. Suter

'THE eyes of England are upon us', wrote a correspondent to Victoria's *Port Phillip Gazette* on 22nd April, 1840, warning fellow colonists that the 'tale of Aboriginal wrongs' was well known abroad Almost a century and a half later the same warning could be issued The current controversy is over the bewildering deaths of Aborigines while in police custody or gaol Meanwhile, as white Australians are celebrating their bicentennial so new research is creating an amended picture of pre-European Australia The focal point of controversy remains land rights, though here also new developments are of great significance Finally, as in 1840, the eyes of the outside world will continue to provide problems for the Australian Government — as it campaigns to help the oppressed Blacks overseas so it remains vulnerable to counter-criticism that it is not doing enough to help its own Third World at home.

Dying in prison or in police custody is not an Aboriginal or even an Australian phenomenon. For example, during 1966-77, there were 631 deaths in English prisons and from 1970 to 1979 there were 274 deaths in English policy custody A common cause of death, especially while in police custody, is choking due to drunkenness. English police officers are obliged to take drunken people to hospital only if they are unconscious. Otherwise they are left alone in cells to 'sleep it off' and some then choke on their vomit

In the past two years, Australians have been shocked by the publicising not only of the number of Aborigines who have died in police custody and prison but their alleged method of death Indeed (unlike the English pattern) more Aborigines have died in police custody than in prison — even though the Aboriginal prison population is higher than the police custody one. The controversy — which is still running hot as this article is being written — contains four features worth noting. the number of people held, the reasons why they are held, the campaign initiated following the death of John Pat, and the Australian Government's eventual decision to create a Royal Commission

Australian Aborigines, as an ethnic group, may well be the world's most imprisoned people In 1981 the imprisonment rate for Australia generally was 67 people per 100,000. Yet the rate for Aborigines was estimated at between 500 to 1,000 per 100,000 of their population The most extreme

example of high Aboriginal imprisonment rates is thought to be Groote Eylandt. Imprisonment rates there are 7 to 8 times the Northern Territory average or 25 times the national average. And in 1982-83 all except two prisoners were Aborigines. Although Aborigines represent only 1-2 percent of Australia's total population they account for 30 per cent of all prison inmates. Imprisonment rates vary between states. The 1976 census showed that in NSW the Aboriginal rate was 600 per 100,000 while in Western Australia the rate was 1,300 per 100,000 Non-Aboriginal rates were 60 per 100,000 and 81 per 100,000 respectively. In 1979/80 the average rate of Aborigines imprisoned in Western Australia was 30 percent higher than in South Australia and three times higher than in NSW.

One of the first deaths to be well publicised was that of John Pat, aged 16. He died of head injuries in a West Australian police cell on 28th September, 1983. Five police officers were charged with beating John Pat, kicking him in the face, dragging him to a cell and abandoning him there without medical attention. Despite the testimony of Aboriginal witnesses to the incident, the five officers were acquitted and the Aborigines arrested with John Pat that night have faced charges of aggravated assault against the police and been convicted.

My Uniting Church colleague, the Rev. Charles Harris (an Aborigine) wrote recently about his experiences:

> In my 20 years of ministry amongst Aboriginal and Islander people, I have constantly come in touch and contact with police harrassment, police intimidation and injustices meted out to the Aboriginal people On one occasion whilst working in the inner city suburbs of Brisbane, I was forced to call all heads of churches and heads of police departments to sit down together with the Aboriginal community because at that particular time things were very explosive and it could have developed into a bloodbath in the city of Brisbane between Aborigines and police officers The incident arose out of police officers bursting into a house without a warrant and pushing over a well known and respected lady of the Aboriginal community. She was pushed aside with such force that she fell and hurt her back The police didn't have a warrant, they just barged in They were looking for somebody who had done something and had come to this house to look for him and the incident occurred The lady was highly respected and when the Aboriginal community heard that this had happened they went berserk and beat up a couple of police officers very badly The police retaliated and went to a mob of Aboriginal people who were drinking at the bank of the river This was about 2am when they swooped down on the people drinking They grabbed hold of them and held them in the Brisbane River. It was a cold bleak winter's night and a lot of people could have been killed or drowned on that occasion

The mistreatment of Aborigines, especially by police officers, is not, then, a recent occurrence Indeed, it could be argued that the pattern was commenced in 1788, when the colonisation of Australia began. However, almost all white Australians managed to overlook the problem.

It is an indication of the renewed Aboriginal capacity for fighting back which has, since the mid-1980s, seen the creation of a campaign to make the Black deaths in custody a major issue. John Pat's death led to the formation of the Sydney-based Committee to Defend Black Rights. It was established initially to draw attention to the denial of justice for Aboriginal people as exemplified by the events surrounding Mr. Pat's death.

The Australian Government's problem was that the deaths were taking

place in institutions controlled by state governments Some inquiries were established by those governments into what was happening. This was not considered sufficient by the increasing public concern and even the conservative media Throughout 1986 and into 1987, the Government came under increasing pressure to establish a Royal Commission — ironically, the first enquiry was established 150 years earlier when the British House of Commons set up a select committee to investigate alleged mistreatment of Aborigines By mid-1987, Aborigines were dying in police custody or prison at the average rate of one per fortnight.

In August 1987 the Prime Minister, Bob Hawke, announced a Federal-State Royal Commission to examine the circumstances of the deaths of 44 Aborigines since 1st January, 1980 and any other deaths that might occur during its term. Mr. Justice Muirhead was appointed as Royal Commissioner. The only time he previously made the headlines (and he disliked the personal publicity intensely) was in 1982 as the judge who sentenced Lindy Chamberlain to life imprisonment for the alleged murder of her daughter Azaria. Mrs. Chamberlain has since been set free (the total cost of the legal proceedings is said to have been A$26 million [£16 million]) Mr. Justice Muirhead's appointment was welcomed since he has a close knowledge of Aboriginal affairs He has been asked to report by the end of 1988 At the very least, the Royal Commission is proof that the Aboriginal experience of Australian law is at long last back in the public arena

While Aborigines are being killed or committing suicide in gaols, so a new perception of their past is being developed The Aboriginal present may be grim but the Aboriginal past is stunning

When I first arrived in Australia in 1973, the official government briefing material advised that Aborigines had inhabited Australia for 10,000 years. During the past 15 years, that figure has gradually been enlarged. It is now widely accepted as 40,000 years In early 1988, however, Dr Stephen Webb, a biological anthropologist at the Australian National University (ANU), argued that the figure may well be 70,000 years.

In short. Australian Aborigines constitute the world's oldest civilisation The evidence of this civilisation has been available to the recent migrants (that is, people who arrived after 1788). But most such migrants did not look for it and so did not see it As one Christian missionary, Johann Flierl, wrote of the Aborigines in January 1886: 'They have not had much contact with humans . .'

'Australian history' begins in most textbooks with the explorations of early European navigators and then the creation in 1788 of the first permanent planned European settlement History is taught to most Australians as the history of Europe, especially British history, and of their descendants in Australia It is the history of the dominant nations — written for them and by them. Aboriginal history is out on the margin.

40,000 years of Aboriginal history dwarfs all other civilisations Abraham, for example, arrived in Palestine a mere 3,900 years ago. Stonehenge is a recent piece of civil engineering being aged only 3,800

years. European colonisation (since AD 1788) as a percentage of Aboriginal history is a minute 0.5 per cent. 1988 may be white Australia's bicentennial — but for the Aborigines it is their 200th 'bicentennial' Or is it?

Dr. Webb has argued that Australia's first settlers may in fact have arrived here from Java 70,000 years ago His research is part of the new attention being paid to Australia as an archaeological growth area. Because so much of it is largely unexplored, it provides fresh opportunities to learn more about the origins of humankind.

Until a few years ago, it was assumed that Aborigines hopped from one island to the next through present day Indonesia and Papua New Guinea and landed in Northern Australia (the Northern Territory and Queensland's Cape York). The 'land bridge' connecting Australia to Asia existed until about 7,000 years when the ending of an ice age meant a melting of the ice and a rising of water levels It was assumed that they lived around the fertile coastal areas. They did not move into central Australia until about 12,000 years ago.

That theory is now being revised. About 22,000 years ago, Aborigines had a campfire near Alice Springs, almost at the geographical centre of Australia The campsite was discovered recently by Mr. Michael Smith, a visiting fellow at the Australian National University How did the Aborigines get there? Back to Dr. Webb. he has said that sea levels between 100,000 and 40,000 years ago were so low that people could have walked from what is now Papua New Guinea The Gulf of Carpentaria was quite often 'Lake' Carpentaria, a vast land-locked freshwater body that formed when the sea fell low enough. These early explorers followed the waters running into the great inland sea which Europeans thought existed but which is in fact now underground around Lake Eyre. With thousands of years at their disposal, they continued expanding out across the continent, reaching Tasmania (which was still joined to the mainland) about 20,000 years ago

By the time the British arrived in 1788 Australia was a thriving civilisation. It was populated by about 760 different tribes, each of which had its own language and history. It is perhaps almost as risky to speak of 'Aboriginal history' in general terms as it is to speak of 'European history'. The European continent (about Australia's size) has its own 'tribes' and clans which, while being European, prefer to be identified in their own right rather than as 'Europeans'.

In 1788 Aborigines were healthy, well-organised people who had succeeded in living on the world's oldest, flattest, driest continent They were certainly doing better than the malnourished, diseased, criminal, sadistic flotsam washed up on the continent in 1788 Unfortunately, the latter had a more advanced technology, a greater ruthlessness and were to write the history of the 'discovery' of Australia

Once again scholarship in the last few years has begun to provide a fresh history of Aborigines First, there is the estimate of how many Aborigines inhabited Australia in 1788 In 1880 it was put at 150,000.

Since the 1930s, the figure has been accepted as being around 300,000. In 1987, however, Professor John Mulvaney (ANU) and Dr. Peter White (Sydney University) put the figure at around 750,000 An implication of the new figure is that the extent of Aboriginal deaths is even worse than suggested by the 1930 figure Between 1788 and 1900 the number of Aborigines fell from 750,000 to 50,000 — the population was decimated.

The decimation was not necessarily by modern technology. To survive in Australia (as the early settlers soon learned and as bush fires, floods and cyclones still remind us) is no easy task Over the thousands of years, Aborigines acquired a genetic disposition which, among other things, gave them one of the world's best faculties of hearing and eyesight and an ability to survive extreme temperatures. What they had not acquired, however, was a natural immunity to smallpox, colds, sexually transmitted diseases, leprosy and malnutrition Many Aborigines died from introduced diseases and from being pushed into less fertile areas.

A second research area has revealed the extent of Aboriginal resistance to colonisation. The traditional view is that Aborigines up put little resistance to colonisation since they lacked modern technology and so the colonisation process was comparatively easy (if terminal for Aborigines). Professor Henry Reynolds (James Cook University of North Queensland) is among the new wave of historians who have studied contemporary documents to find the extent to which early settlers feared for their lives. Aborigines may have been outgunned and outsmarted (they were, for example, tricked into accepting 'presents' of blankets taken from smallpox corpses) but they did not go down without a struggle Some accounts even talk of settlers having to fight a 'guerrilla war' against Aborigines.

The full extent of the resistance had to be obscured from Britain's view. If potential British investors knew just how risky life was in the colonies, they would have been even more reluctant to invest there. If potential migrants knew what awaited them, they might have preferred Canada or India instead If humanitarian people knew in Britain just what suffering was being inflicted on Aborigines in the name of British civilisation, they would have put pressure on the British Government to curtail the violence.

A third myth is that Aborigines had the land for at least 40,000 years and 'did nothing with it'. This claim is not proclaimed quite so loudly nowadays There is a growing, if grudging, recognition that Aborigines may have had some good ideas after all

Two centuries of European settlement have seen the transformation of the continent. The land has been cleared, dry land farming is practised in Australia on a scale unknown elsewhere on the planet, cities are growing (indeed Australia was — despite its rural image — the world's first modern urbanised nation), mineral wealth is being dug out of the soil, the offshore land is being drilled for oil and gas A former primitive Stone Age continent now sustains one of the world's wealthiest populations — Melbourne's Toorak suburb claims to have more Rolls-Royces per capita than any place on earth.

A few month's ago (just before the Bicentennial clean up) I visited Captain Cook's 1770 landing place at Botany Bay. If it had looked as bad then as it did in 1987, Captain Cook may well have kept on sailing Artefacts of modern civilisation littered the location — empty containers washed ashore from the Bay. Meanwhile, the Murray River System (one of Australia's major waterways) is becoming increasingly salinated, the continent's top soil is being eroded; the rain forests are being exported to Japan (the Japanese cut down everyone's trees except their own); about two million Australians live below the official poverty line. The 'lucky country' is currently short of luck

The importance of history is seen in the continuing debate over Aboriginal land-rights Aborigines were nomads because they knew that this was the best way to avoid over-exploiting the natural resources. But they were not aimless wanderers, they had set routes within their tribal areas. This concept of lifestyle was alien to 18th century Europeans, who claimed that these were just savages who knew no better Land clearing meant removing trees, animals and Aborigines As one Tasmanian newspaper *(The Colonial Times)* said on 1st December 1826 'The Government must remove the natives — if not, they will be hunted down like wild beasts and destroyed'.

Crown Land was set aside for use as Reserves by Aborigines This was not an early form of recognising Aboriginal ownership to at least some of Australia's territory On the contrary, since it was assumed that Aborigines were a dying race, it was necessary for them to live — and die — out of the public eye. The Reserves were usually in areas unsuited for, or not desired by, white settlers

Since 1945, however, the land rights issue has gained momentum Having been evicted from good arable land to apparently useless land, it has since been discovered that some Reserves contain considerable mineral wealth Corporations now want to gain access to those Reserves. Second, Aborigines represent a growth industry for such professions as anthropologists, prehistorians and archaeologists These require live Aborigines and the preservation of sacred sites for their careers Third, and most significantly, Aborigines are no longer a dying race — and neither are they now content to be silent about their oppression. The struggle for land rights has become a rallying point for their activities.

Recent research has uncovered evidence to support a fresh perspective on the whole legal debate over land rights. The prime court case is *Milirrpum v Nabalco Pty Ltd and the Commonwealth of Australia* (1971) — often called the Gove Case After World War II some companies tried to get access to the bauxite deposits on the Gove Peninsula. Traditional owners in the area objected to the Commonwealth Government (which still controlled the Northern Territory's internal affairs) allowing a bauxite mining lease without their permission They sought writs confirming that they were entitled to the occupation and enjoyment of their land free from interference, an injunction to stop Nabalco's bauxite mining operations and a declaration that the 1968 NT Mining Ordinance was invalid

Ten senior Aboriginal traditional owners from eight clans appeared as witnesses in the case before Mr. Justice Blackburn to demonstrate their relationships to the land. At the individual level, land is the source of a person's identity. When a person is born, the spirit is said to come from a particular place in the landscape so that throughout life the person will have a special link with the totemic being associated with that place Thus, land for Aborigines has a spiritual significance totally unknown to European tradition It has also, of course, an economic significance somewhat similar to European tradition: a source of food, water and minerals. The religious significance confers group identity, while economically it provides the group with its livelihood.

Mr Justice Blackburn said that the central question was whether the doctrine of original native title existed at common law and applied in Australia in 1788. He found that it did not and never has formed a part of the law of any part of Australia. He found that the relationship of the clans to the land was not what Europeans call ownership, saying that the clans had not shown to his satisfaction that they were linked to the same land in 1970 that they had been in 1788. Aboriginal rights had never been expressly recognised and, in any event, if they existed, they had been terminated by the NT Mining Ordinance of 1968.

At the back of everyone's mind was the question: what would happen if Mr Justice Blackburn had found in favour of the Aboriginal application? The Commonwealth Government, in siding with Nabalco, recognised that for the judge to have accepted the Aboriginal application, would have unsettled the property law of the entire continent. That is why the 1971 Gove case remains significant.

Queensland's Henry Reynolds and others are now looking afresh at the Gove Case's legal reasoning If occupation of a few square miles around Port Jackson was taken to equal possession of the entire continent, then all Aborigines became British subjects on 26th January 1788 — in which case, their property rights were to be protected by the Crown. Indeed, research into the records at London's colonial office has revealed that the British Government accepted that natives should have some property — such a policy was being followed in, for example, Canada and New Zealand Australia's colonial governments evidently thought they could get away with their disobedience to Whitehall long enough for Aborigines to die off and so cease to present a legal problem for the governments.

Unfortunately for the governments, the Aborigines did not perish entirely. The governments' full back position was that, in fact, Australia was *terra nullius*: empty and unoccupied To support that claim, the myth was developed that the Aboriginal population was small in 1788, had no real connections with the land and put up little resistance to the colonials.

This takes us back to the importance of research into Australia's history Aborigines were killed not because they were black or savage but because they owned the land. Australia was not *terra nullius* Either Aborigines acquired British citizenship on 26th January 1788 (in which case their property rights as Britons should be recognised) or successive

colonial and state governments ignored imperial policy on negotiating with natives in colonies (in which case their property rights as non-Britons administered by Britons should be recognised). In short. this is a legal minefield, which could see the High Court eventually overturning the 1971 Gove decision

Meanwhile the struggle for land rights continues in the political sphere. When the Hawke Labour Government came to power in 1983 there was talk of some form of national land rights act In 1984 the West Australian Labour Government, aware of the scare campaign being mounted by mining companies, warned its colleagues in Canberra to drop that proposal. The Hawke Government has not revived that proposal The lack of Labour support for land rights is particularly crucial since a Labour Government would normally be expected to be far more partial to Aboriginal views than a conservative one

The Government perceives that Aborigines no longer have as much public support One reason for this is the change in the political atmosphere and economic situation since the early 1970s The liberal mood has withered away in the face of the economic recession Second, the mining industry's extremely expensive fear campaign even managed to convince some people in country areas that their freehold land would be threatened by a national land rights law (which it would not). Third, Australians tend to be impatient for quick political results. They are aware of the greatly increased sums of money being spent on Aboriginal social services and yet little progress is being made There is, in short, a perceived backlash against more government handouts for Aborigines

A federal Labour backdown on Aboriginal land rights may help Labour's strategy of holding the political middle ground and attracting some conservative votes but it could ultimately be counterproductive. First, Aborigines are now better politically organised than they have been at any time since 1788 They now amount to about 3,000,000 persons (out of a total population of 16 million) They have access to the mass media, international organisations (like the United Nations) and are building links with other oppressed minorities such as American Indians They are now more sceptical (with good reason) of politicians' promises and know how to lobby to get results.

Second, the Labour Government is running the risk of alienating traditional Labour voters Throughout 1987 and 1988 local, federal and the NSW state general election have seen swings against Labour. Labour supporters' disillusionment with Labour governments is based more on economic and social policy in general rather than Aboriginal Land Rights. But a backdown on Aboriginal land rights has alienated some middle class Labour support.

Third, the Hawke Government (like the Whitlam and Fraser Governments) has been critical of French colonialism in the South Pacific and South Africa's *apartheid* policies Australia is vulnerable to a counter attack from France and South Africa over its treatment of Aborigines

Finally, as in 1840, foreign public opinion is taking an interest in

Aboriginal affairs One example is the visit, in November 1986, of Pope John Paul II to Australia, especially his address to Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander people at Alice Springs on November 29. The Pope praised their culture and expression of contact with God which was fashioned over thousands of years and endures to this day 'Your "Dreaming", which influences your lives so strongly that, no matter what happens, you remain forever people of your culture, is your own way of touching the mystery of God's Spirit in you and in creation You must keep striving for God and hold on to it in your lives.' The Pope stressed that the Aboriginal culture must not be allowed to disappear 'Your songs, your stories, your paintings, your dances, your languages, must never be lost.'

A second example is the London-based Anti-Slavery Society, the world's oldest human rights non-governmental organisation, which in early 1988 published its report *Land and Justice Aborigines Today* Aboriginal unemployment is six times the national average, 90 per cent of Aborigines live in poverty, their rate of preventable diseases such as leprosy, trachoma and syphilis is among the highest in the world and life expectancy is 20 years lower than for whites Infant mortality is four times the national average Aborigines are 22 times more likely to die from infectious diseases, 13 times more likely to die violently and eight times more likely to die from respiratory diseases In desert areas, 25 per cent of children up to the age of four are susceptible to serious illness and retarded development due to malnutrition Only 14 per cent of Aborigines complete secondary school compared to 41 per cent of whites

In short, a great deal remains to be done to protect Aboriginal human rights. Given Australia's higher international profile, this work will be done in the context of increased international attention. Australia cannot, after all, claim to tell nations like South Africa, Chile, USSR and France how to improve their human rights policies when it has such a scandalous situation within its own boundaries. At the very least, substantiated progress needs to be made in the following areas:

- The protection of Aboriginal identity, languages, law and culture.
- Re-assessing mining and exploitation of other natural resources on Aboriginal land.
- Compensation to Aboriginal Australians for the loss of traditional lands and for damage to those lands and to their traditional way of life.
- The right of Aboriginal Australians to control their own affairs and to establish their own associations for this purpose

---

[Dr Keith Suter is Foundation Director of Trinity Peace Resarch Institute.]

A VIEW OF ANGOLA

by Patricia Morris

(based on a conversation in Lisbon with Leston Bandeira, editor of *Africa*)

THE air is crackling with the starched efficiency of an impatient new nanny confident of cleaning up her charges' mess. It is just the sound of the current American-sponsored negotiations between Angola, South Africa, Cuba and the United States to end the war in Angola But the four nations anticipating many more hours at the negotiating table have been equally culpable in creating that disorder.

An understanding of Angola's recent past is crucial to an interpretation of this flurry of activity. However, since history is being diversely rewritten every day, the problem remains as to which version to grab hold of as a touchstone for reconsidering perceptions of current events

In Lisbon I found one knowledgeable commentator who appears to flout attempts to pin him to any one party line. Leston Bandeira, idiosyncratic and staunchly independent editor of the Portuguese newspaper *Africa,* used to live in Luanda and visits Angola regularly His version of Angola's recent history, which he gave me in Portuguese, leaves a disturbing sense of *déjà-vu.*

When Portugal first colonised Angola it had no state programme for settlers or indigenous inhabitants Public administration followed rather than preceded settlement, and most settlers went out there to solve their personal economic problems, not to found a nation. Initially they clustered near the sea ports of Luanda and Benguela, and later spread east without organised support from church or army

The Portuguese government showed no incentive to develop the country's economic potential. In Bandeira's words, it had neither the money, the interest, nor the political will to do so. Rather, it seemed that if any energy were directed from Lisbon to those colonial quarters it was only to impede local projects for innovation and to prevent systematic colonisation In the private sector certain powerful companies with vested interests in the colonies vigorously opposed change

The absence of a state programme had both its pros and cons for the colonised Angolans. A *pot-pourri* Angolan society developed haphazardly and formed educated, mixed-race communities. In Bandeira's view, these, left to grow, could have constructively annulled a main source of the difficulties which generally faced early post-independent Africa. A sense of local identity became possible, an idea of country which had not formerly existed within the artificial social and geographical colonial boundaries All the ingredients were there for the formation of a new nation.

But this was not to be. The process was abruptly halted in 1961 with the start of the colonial war against the Portuguese.

The armed struggle was taken up by two distinct groups One was the MPLA which comprised descendants of mixed Portuguese and Angolan people who were detribalised and had the global sense of Angola as a nation.

The second group was the FNLA which fought in the name of tribal identity, without the sense of being part of an Angolan nation. To the FNLA's black, tribalised adherents, the whites, the mixed races and the blacks educated within Western traditions were anathema. As Bandeira bluntly puts it, the FNLA was 'racist'.

In 1965 a third group appeared. This was UNITA, a break-away faction from the FNLA. It was led by Savimbi, formerly minister of foreign affairs of the FNLA government in exile. He began his defection by collaborating with the Portuguese army. confronting the MPLA mainly in the south-east areas of Luiana, in Cuando Cubango and in Moxico

With the shock of 1961, instead of granting immediate independence to its colony, the Portuguese government expanded its public administration in the hope of countering military actions with economic development assisted largely by the USA, West Germany and Great Britain. For the first time since the 1928 onset of the fascist regime in Portugal, its colonies were opened to foreign investment. Angola's economy soared into a success story.

By the beginning of 1974 the war had almost stopped The FNLA had not fired a shot for nearly two years and the MPLA was riven and weakened by internal disagreements. Although in disarray, the MPLA, the FNLA and UNITA were the three dominant Angolan movements on 25th April 1974, the day of the Portuguese revolution which was fuelled by the military's refusal to continue the colonial wars The three movements operated within a population which, with the exception of some small urban groups especially in Luanda, were politically unenlightened and ill-informed. None of the movements had bothered to extend their propaganda to the big towns.

With the metropolitan revolution and the imminence of independence, suddenly, from April 1974, Angola was in convulsion. There was almost civil war between the MPLA, FNLA and UNITA until August 1975.

The three movements turned three ways for their respective support. The MPLA found allies in the mixed race *petit bourgeousie,* educated and informed whites mainly in Luanda and Benguela, and black and mixed race urban people with some formal education.

UNITA in the first phase was supported by whites who believed it had political force In its second phase UNITA sought credibility amongst the black population (who suspected UNITA of acting only on behalf of the whites) by performing acts of violence and vandalism against urban whites.

The FNLA was supported mainly by Mobutu's Zairean army. They did not campaign amongst the people or explain their policies.

In the midst of the tumult of 1974 a new MPLA (later known as the MPLA-PT or Worker's Party, and stripped of its frontist character) was

formed by town dwellers who had not participated in the armed struggle but who had supported the major sectors of Angola's growing economy The army of the MPLA landed up controlling almost the entire country with the exception of the Huambo region controlled by UNITA

In January 1975 meetings took place in the Algarve between the Portuguese government and the leaders of the three movements An accord was signed to establish a quadripartite administration of Portuguese, MPLA, FNLA and UNITA representatives In fact, says Bandeira, no-one governed anything. The three movements jostled for key positions, each committed to the notion of a one-party state. The MPLA acquired some advantage since its followers were better informed and politically sophisticated

The envisaged elections never took place Had they done so, it seems almost certain that the marxist MPLA would have won them. So it is not surprising that when the FNLA and UNITA reneged on the agreement and began to fight for total control of the country, they were supported by western powers

In August 1975 the South Africans, with CIA backing, invaded Angola for the first time, installing themselves at Chitano near the south-west border. In October 1975 they advanced to Lubango, then to Benguela, and by November 1975 they were at Porto Amboim, less than 150 miles from Luanda

At the same time from the north the FNLA, supported by the Zairean army, reached Quixeito near Luanda.

Under this state of siege, during that November, Luanda declared independence at the same time as the FNLA and UNITA declared independence in Huambo.

But, Bandeira points out, the MPLA leaders responsible for the declaration of independence, some of them guerillas unaware of non-military issues, or people who had lived in exile, were thoroughly ignorant of Angola's post-1961 social and economic reality· they had had no organised scheme to ensure that they were well informed. Nor were they interested Factions formed within the MPLA between these new arrivals in Luanda and those who had lived in Angola building the MPLA's political foundations Some groups turned to racism or tribalism in attempts to achieve positions of power in the movement.

The result was a massive exodus with resounding repercussions by MPLA cadres who had always lived in Angola, who directly or indirectly supported the economy and who would have ensured the continuation of education, production and services.

A new *weltanschauung* evolved with the promise of foreign aid People who favoured independent Angolan projects were levered aside by those who favoured foreign aid projects and their concomitant imported income and ideology.

Particularly after 1977 Cuban and thus Soviet intervention became decisive factors Neither the Cubans nor the Soviets, says Bandeira, understood or took into account the realities of Angola before they

imposed their schemes As a result they systematically destroyed the existing structures without substituting a plan for economic development. 'The first government of the MPLA was a catastrophe'. It functioned only in ideological terms, oblivious of the population's minimal needs for development. Power was centralised in Luanda, and the other towns forgotten.

It was in that context that the war intensified. From November 1975 the MPLA with the support of Cuban troops began liberating the country to the north and to the south In March 1976 the South Africans were driven back to the Namibian border, but they held Chitano. 'They built a dam at nearby Ruacana', Bandeira explained, 'So they will never move out.'

UNITA and the FNLA had made an alliance but they broke it in January 1976 at Lubango and from March 1976 the MPLA had the run of the field But the MPLA repeated its old mistakes For example, in the formerly UNITA-controlled Huambo region the MPLA simply acted as an occupying army without making constructive contact with the inhabitants of the region. As a result UNITA's guerilla actions drew support from the local people

Again, from March 1976 the MPLA refused to enter into a politics of national reconciliation and refused to welcome large numbers of important UNITA members who wanted to join the MPLA.

The MPLA seemed to prefer open conflict to reconciliation. The explanation lay in their stubborn belief in the one-party state and their overestimation of the apparent strength and security granted by the support of foreign powers. Soviet ideology was not amenable to reconciliation At the same time the Cubans and the Soviets actively opposed groups trying to organise things 'in an Angolan way'.

The MPLA adopted the theory of the class struggle which was, Bandeira believes, to put it mildly 'ridiculous' You cannot speak about the class struggle in a country where there is no working class in the Marxist sense and which discounts 85% of the population which is rural and peasant They nationalised everything including tiny commercial enterprises and destroyed existing circuits for the distribution of goods between urban and rural areas It became impossible to live in the towns.

In 1976 Savimbi jetted off to Johannesburg in his private plane. By 1979, with South African support, he was roosting at Jamba in the south-east and began the war which destabilised the country on the one hand, and which on the other hand, provided the MPLA with an alibi for its incapacity to govern Angola.

Given Bandeira's views, which to my own ears would ring with cynicism were they not couched in the coolest non-partisan terms, what future does he envisage the Angolans making for themselves? His answer was characteristically unsentimental: 'At present the future doesn't depend on the Angolans It depends mostly on South Africa The first question to be solved is the Namibian one. Angolans are going to have to let SWAPO fall and let Namibia be "independent" in the South African way. SWAPO

will have to accept elections with the other Namibian parties Angola also has to solve the Zaire problem Zaire has an important role in all this'.

And what about the present plans to move the Cubans out of Angola? Bandeira replied that it is difficult to imagine Angola without Cubans. As US President Carter said in 1975, the Cubans are a stabilising force in the area It's a political problem that the Angolans can't solve on their own. The question of the withdrawal of the Cubans is only a tool that South Africa and the US use to pressurise Angola

But it's possible to conceive of a political framework in which the MPLA could devise another line of action. If the Soviets guarantee to the Americans that they will not interfere in Zaire, and if the South Africans succeed in allowing elections and independence in Namibia — albeit in the South African way — then it is possible that another type of political struggle may be possible in Angola. The country could develop something resembling a capitalist western economy. You see, it's got no other alternative. Angola produces nothing, and exports only oil

As the Cubans are a stabilising force their departure *could* trigger armed conflict between the different groups in Angola. It should not be difficult for the South Africans, the Americans or the Soviets to accept the Cuban presence in Angola if the aforementioned changes were made And of course the Cubans would have to abandon the imperialist aspect of their presence. If they mix with and work with the people as Angolans, as immigrants, they could greatly benefit Angola. It is a huge country with only six million inhabitants. It is 14 times bigger than Portugal which has 10 million inhabitants There is plenty of room for many more people in Angola.

All these conjectures and possibilities still stand With the present and unexpected negotiations over the future of Angola and Namibia still in progress, the ultimate future of these troubled areas is not easy to predict

---

[Patricia Morris is a free lance journalist living and working in London and Johannesburg She broadcasts on the World Service and contributes to African journals.]

THE MANDATE OF FRANCOIS MITTERAND IN AFRICA

by Fashola Olajide

THE rose François Mitterand deposited at the Pantheon in memory of Victor Schoelcher on the day of his investiture, the appointment of Mr. Claude Cheysson as Minister of External Affairs, Mr. Jean Pierre Cot as Minister of Co-operation signified on one hand, his commitment to the cause of the Third World and on the other a planned, deliberate and sustained effort to pursue policies entirely different from that of President Valéry Giscard d'Estaing. Under Giscard d'Estaing, France maintained good relations with most of the French-speaking countries of Africa and developed cordial relations with the non French-speaking African states such as Mozambique and Angola. African affairs played a major role in some of the factors that contributed to the unpopularity of the Giscardian regime. One section of the Parisian press was extremely critical of his numerous visits to Africa, his position in the western Sahara crisis, his governmental relations in South Africa and, the most decisive blow of all, the diamond affairs between him and Mr. Jean Bodel Bokassa.

With a seat in the Security Council, a substantial nuclear strength, a demographic force of 54 million inhabitants, backed with numerous colonies; we can say France has at her disposal the human and material resources to carry out her foreign policies It is important to know that external relations remain the exclusive responsibility of the President. Article Five of the Constitution of 1958 stipulates that the President is the guardian of national independence and territorial integrity· the specific prerogatives invest him with the powers of nominating ministers and ambassadors. Article Fifty-Two states that he negotiates and ratifies international treaties and the Head of Government keeps him informed of all international negotiations.

The principles of Franco-African relations laid down by General de Gaulle in his *Memoirs d'Espoir* stated: '... the co-operation consists of edifying decidedly the relations which exist between France on one hand, and an important part of mankind in Africa on the other hand, that uses French as a common language and which in monetary terms is the franc zone' Mr. Pierre Messemer, in an article in the *Revue de Défense National* of May 1963 fixed the orientations of French military policy as follows: 'internal security is under the responsibility of the local authorities, but on their demand, France can give a helping hand French forces have the mission of co-ordinating defence activities and act as complementary forces in case of local aggression or subversion. The infrastructures are principal and secondary military bases'.

Looking through the socialist 1981 presidential programme one reads: 'Revising the treaties of co-operation with the former colonies, giving special attention to the frontline states, making a clear and distinctive

stand on South Africa and a reform of the Ministry of Co-operation, by putting all the countries of the Third World on the same footing'.

The first major event was the declaration of the Secretary of the Socialist Party on the 20th of May 1988 showing that his government would do everything possible to stop all kinds of relations with South Africa On the 8th of July 1981 the Prime Minister in his parliamentary declaration stressed that his government would fight relentlessly for the defence of human rights and would not compromise on tyranny or immediate gain

Another important occasion was the visit of Mr. Regis Debray in August 1981 to the frontline states. The visit of this close adviser to President Mitterand was important because it paved the way for the signature of the financial protocol signed during the visit of President Mugabe to Paris in 1982, followed by the establishment of the mixed commission to facilitate the adhesion of Mozambique to the convention of Lome

The government again showed courage in its efforts to uphold certain traditions dear to the revolution of 1789 by working seriously for the release of some members of parliament who attempted to form a second political party in Zaire. The declaration of the Minister of Co-operation not to participate in any official ceremony in honour of the late Ahmed Sekou Toure (though changed at the last minute) during his visit to Paris is another testimony of the determination of the government to respect human rights. One of the greatest successes of François Mitterand was his historic visit to Algeria in the autumn of 1981 when, before the Algerian parliament he declared 'the past is gone for good, let us now look towards the future', but the most important development was the signature of a vast programme of economic co-operation favourable to Algeria.

The best method of assessing and understanding the mandate of François Mitterand is to examine the promise made to revise the treaties of co-operation with their former colonies and the reform to put all the countries of the Third World on the same footing Cameroon was the first country to express a firm determination against the policy of revision because, before the government settled to direct the affairs of the state, Cameroon requested government assistance with a possible war during the border crisis with Nigeria When the government finally settled, they withdrew the 'Green Berets' responsible for the personal security of President Dacko; the post of Security Adviser attached to President Bongo was cancelled and many officers serving south of the Sahara received instructions not to intervene in the internal affairs of these two countries The much talked about revision of the policies of co-operation did not take place, due to serious opposition from those concerned and the first example that comes to mind was the case of President Bongo who promised to employ the same officers as mercenaries if they were withdrawn

Apart from the fact that the Minister of Co-operation did not operate on

the same wavelength as certain strong Francophile African leaders, some accused him of being too directive The reform of the Ministry of Co-operation failed due to strong opposition from some African countries and, reading one of the Francophile declarations of Ambassador Robert, the position of some of those concerned is clearly indicated. 'They are going to sprinkle French aid to English speaking and Portuguese speaking countries, to the detriment of the privileged status accorded to the Francophone countries. In the process of giving little to those who have nothing and who would never be satisfied, we are going to deprive those who did not have enough, and we are going to annoy everybody, I'm afraid this is a bad thing'

In the long run, when the law to reform the Ministry of Co-operation was published in the Government Gazette, it was without the signature of the President (under French institutional tradition the signature of the President adds a certain weight to the law) who must have changed his mind after a marathon visit to Africa. Any Paris observer would notice the change in Franco-African relations after the departure of Mr. Cot and in the course of an official visit to Gabon in January 1983 President Mitterand tried to allay fears of some African leaders in these terms, 'It is me that determines the external affairs of France It is not prohibited for my ministers to think in a different way or to have an opinion but it is not possible to implement or execute any major policy in this area without my permission'.

Another important development was the firm continuation of the government to continue the policy of having fruitful relations already started under President Giscard with the young states of Africa, by opening up avenues of bilateral relations with non-French speaking countries south of the Sahara. Mr. Cot visited Accra in August 1981 but it was the optimistic tone of his visit to Lagos which is worth mentioning He stated that the border dispute between Nigeria and Cameroon, the impossibility of securing an audience with the Nigerian president and the protocol error during the visit of President Shagari precipitated his visit to Nigeria After explaining the role of Nigeria in the region, Mr. Cot concluded 'President Shagari received me warmly and in the course of our friendly discussions we established a wide range of consensus on major international issues and bilateral relations I left him optimistic about Franco-Nigerian relations It is, however, regrettable that in the book published by J Pierre Cot, after his departure from government, he did not explain most of the reasons for his departure from the government of Mr. Pierre Mauroy There were enthusiastic gestures against the regime in Pretoria, but the most courageous was the decision of the government of Mr Laurent Fabius to impose sanctions on new investments in South Africa and the recall of his ambassador in Pretoria '

The problem of the presence of France in Chad started in the summer of 1983, after the fall of Faya Largeau and Abeché which became banner headlines in the Parisian press Unfortunately, at the same time, the spirit and the aspirations of French diplomats and managers were elsewhere.

The declaration of Mr Claude Cheysson on the 24th of June 1983, before the microphone of Europe 1, is a good illustration, 'This attack on Faya Largeau is a lost desert oasis in the war of two leaders'.

Throughout July no Paris observer of French political life could say whether the French would send troops to Chad. Because of the general inconsistencies in government declarations, for instance, today there are no foreign troops in Chad, the next day, we have a treaty of co-operation with Chad; the day after, we are not going to do what the Americans did in Nicaragua and Honduras. But suddenly, during the week commencing 6-7 August 1983, we have heard that the operation Manta was on its way to Chad Most Parisian commentators attributed this sudden decision to a meeting between General Vernon Walters and François Mitterand. The fact was that it would be shameful for France before international public opinion not to aid Chad in a crucial period; yet the process of the withdrawal of French troops from Chad manifests a certain reluctance, because almost immediately after Mr Fabius formed his government he gave the 'go ahead' to his Minister of External Affairs to negotiate the withdrawal of French troops from Chad, under the highest possible degree of secrecy. After a series of toing and froing between Tripoli and Paris, the twelve lines communiqué issued in the two capitals on the 17th of September 1984 generated a furore and consternation in the Chadian capital because the Chadians were not informed of the withdrawal of French troops or the Franco-Libyan treaty.

After the legislative elections of March 1986 François Mitterand appointed the liberal leader Mr. Jacques Chirac as Prime Minister. Under this system of power sharing between a socialist president and a liberal prime minister, there were no divergences on Franco-African relations. In a short period of two years the government of Mr. Chirac expressed, as the previous governments had done, a firm determination to improve relations, strengthen the already existing links and to be closer to the interests of the Francophone countries

In one interview to diplomatic correspondents of *Le Monde* Mr. Chirac stated that the main orientations of his government are to increase the volume of French aid to Africa, encouraging all the initiatives of the Paris Club in respect of the debts of these countries. He tried to strengthen the already existing links initiated by the Giscardian regime and his first trip to Africa was to the Ivory Coast, a gesture to reassure Abidjan of his government's support.

Under this system of power-sharing Franco-Nigerian relations have been growing from the state of deadlock to a further improvement in bilateral relations. If we consider the visit of the former Nigerian Foreign Minister and the visit of the Nigerian Head of State in 1986, the choice of Paris by the same person for his medical care and, most recently, the conference organised in Lagos between the Nigerian government, UNESCO and the French government on African Literature, the choice of venue is understandable In real terms its means the breaking-off of diplomatic relations between Nigeria and France. The role of France

during the Nigerian civil war and the border dispute with Cameroon are now in the past while French economic penetration in Nigeria is growing (although it cannot be compared to Anglo-American interests).

With the frontline states, the French government moved gradually from its traditional support for UNITA to that of the Luanda-based regime. The visit of President José Dos Santos was described as positive: the decision of the government to support Angola's adhesion to the IMF are signs of new developments in Franco-Angolan relations. Again, the visit of President Joachim Chissano to Paris and the visit of the French Minister of External Relations to Maputo indicate the areas of economic and bilateral relations explored and are proof of the government's firm commitment to the cause of the Third World

After the withdrawal of French troops from Chad in 1984, under this system of power-sharing, the main problem in Franco-Chadian relations was the landstrip of Aouzou.

Firstly, in the course of a joint press conference in July 1987, President Habré declared that Chadians want the totality of their land, but in a pacific way. President Mitterand was very clear in his answers by saying that France is proposing an international settlement for this particular problem. Secondly, when the Chadians attacked Aouzou the government did not hesitate to issue a statement saying that the Elysée has nothing to do with the affair and that it was a purely Chadian responsibility. The interview of the Minister of Defence, Mr André Giraud, to the journal *Du Dimanche*, saying 'there is no question of sending one single soldier to Chad' confirmed the rumour that French aid to Chad was suspended after the Aouzou attack, but we later heard that it was restored after the intervention of Mr. Chirac

In a period when French political life was polarised between electoral fever and political scandals, Mr. Michel Aurillac published a book entitled *Africa at Heart* In this book the Minister of Co-operation was pleading the case of Africa, explaining that the priority of his government is still the championing of countries with which they have treaties of co-operation and that French military interventions are only at the request of these governments.

He hinted that it is fundamental to avoid putting African countries in a situation of perpetually receiving aid, and it is therefore necessary to have a policy of co-operation and development orientated towards constructive and self-supporting projects

Using the Libreville January 1987 Conference as an example, Mr. Aurillac also informed us that African entrepreneurs exist; that they are demanding from government fewer interventions of the state and increased incentives to facilitate their participation in the economic destiny of Africa

---

[Fashola Olajide is a political commentator living and working in Paris]

IS THE INTERNATIONAL DEBT CRISIS OVER?

by Nigel M. Healey

THE so-called 'international debt crisis' first came to the fore in the summer of 1982 when Mexico unilaterally announced it was no longer able to 'service' (i e pay the interest charges and scheduled capital repayments) due on its multi-billion dollar external debt, much of it owed to a small number of US and European 'money-centre' banks Within months, other Third World governments which had also heavily borrowed abroad in the 1970s began to follow suit. From Brazil to the Philippines, from Argentina to Nigeria, developing countries suddenly found themselves with insufficient foreign exchange earnings to service their growing mountains of external, dollar-denominated debt (see Table 1).

It gradually transpired, to the horror of all concerned, that the top fifty money-centre banks had lent so much to the Third World that formal default by three or more of the most highly-indebted countries would have bankrupted almost all of them, potentially bringing down the entire Western financial system in their wake. So began a period of frenzied activity in which Western governments, central banks and multilateral agencies like the International Monetary Fund (IMF) and the World Bank desperately sought ways of avoiding a global, monetary Armageddon.

Six years on, there now appears to be a widespread feeling in the West that the crisis is over. The banks have successfully devised innovative techniques to reduce their exposure to the Third World (by effectively 'selling off' unwanted loans), while at the same time setting aside more adequate reserves against default on the loans they retain The IMF, which has co-ordinated many of the negotiations between debtors and creditors, has been able to extract promises from the former to 'adjust' (i e import less and export more) as the *quid pro quo* for easier terms from the latter Thus, it is claimed, in 1988 not only is widespread default now containable, but the probability of such an outcome has been greatly reduced

In contrast, this article argues that the present situation is in many respects far more dangerous than it was in 1982 As the banks have strengthened their position, their incentive to continue offering concessional terms to hard-pressed debtors has reduced, making them tougher bargaining partners On the other side of the negotiating table, the debtor countries are increasingly coming to realise that they face decades of austerity during which their economies must remain oriented to generating the foreign exchange surpluses necessary to service an ever-growing debt burden Despite cutting imports by one-third since 1982, and paying over $150bn in debt service to the banks over the same period, the Third World's debt has carried on rising to stand at approximately $1tr ($1000bn) today (see Table 2) Already, attitudes have begun to harden and several

of the smaller debtors, notably Bolivia and Peru, are currently in de facto default

To understand the changing nature of the international debt crisis, it is important to be clear about its immanent causes. Borrowing external funds to finance economic development is not of itself a problem, nor is it even a recent phenomenon The spectacular growth of the USA up to 1914, for instance, was almost wholly paid for with European savings Difficulties only arise when, for whatever reason, accumulated external debt outstrips a country's ability (its 'debt capacity') to service it. This might happen either because a country takes on debt in excess of its debt capacity or because circumstances alter to reduce its debt capacity

One useful way of classifying the causes of debt problems is to distinguish between internal 'mismanagement' and external 'shocks'; that is, between causal factors which are (in principle, at least) under the control of the debtor government and those which are not. Internal mismanagement simply implies inappropriate domestic policy which either allows too much debt to be incurred or permits funds to be used in a way which fails to increase the borrower's debt capacity (in the sense of strengthening its economy) in line with its growing debt obligations.

The former possibility may arise where governments inadequately monitor external debt accumulation by domestic residents — a particularly egregious example is Nigeria — or where control mechanisms to arrest excessive foreign borrowing function ineffectively. In Turkey, for example, the government has proved unable to prevent its quasi-public bodies seeking credit overseas. More familiarly, however, internal mismanagement involves using funds in a non-productive fashion.

In the past, borrowed funds have financed the importation of luxury consumer goods for high-income elites (e.g. Chile) or military hardware for the armed forces (e g Argentina), rather than the purchase of capital equipment necessary for development. Where capital projects have been financed, these have sometimes been high-prestige, 'white elephants' of dubious economic value (e g. nuclear power stations in Brazil and the Philippines) Most damning of all, external funds have on occasion been used to maintain an over-valued exchange rate, which has allowed wealthy residents to buy artificially-cheap US dollars for investment overseas ('capital flight'). While the Mexican government has accumulated over $100bn foreign debt, for example, the Mexican private sector has amassed comparable dollar deposits in the US banking system.

Although specific examples of internal mismanagement in the Third World abound, such forces should give rise to a random pattern of debt problems with the incidence of debt servicing difficulties distributed relatively evenly across borrowers and across time. The startling feature of the post-1982 crisis, in contrast, was the way that it affected almost all Third World countries simultaneously Since it is implausible to suppose that half the world's governments lurched into reckless domestic policymaking at the same time, the implication is that the fundamental cause of the current crisis lies in an external shock which affected all

debtor countries at once

Once the search for an explanation moves outside the debtor countries themselves, the picture becomes much clearer On the international scene, the events of the early 1980s were historically unprecedented. The sharp rise in oil prices in 1979 reignited global inflationary pressures, to which Western governments (notably, the US, the UK, Germany and Japan) responded with the policy prescriptions of the newly-fashionable 'monetarism' Essentially, this involved smothering inflation by damping down domestic demand with huge interest rate hikes

For the Third World, this combination of events proved catastrophic The demand for, and hence the prices of, their staple exports collapsed as their main consumers in the West slid into politically-engineered recession, while interest rates on their outstanding debt rocketed (the bulk of Third World debt is dollar-denominated and carries a floating interest rate which reflects prevailing market rates) One after another, Third World countries were inexorably squeezed into financial crisis.

With hindsight, therefore, it is clear that the fundamental cause of the present debt crisis was the sharp deterioration in the global economic environment at the beginning of the decade, rather than an epidemic of government profligacy across the Third World. In the light of this fact, it is interesting to re-examine the putative 'success' of the measures which have been implemented to avert disaster to date.

The IMF has played the key role in managing the crisis since 1982, in the sense of acting as an 'honest broker' in the negotiations between debtor governments and creditors Its approach has been based on two key considerations: firstly, that in the short term, since the debtor countries are unable to service their outstanding debts, they require additional loans to enable them to avoid default; and secondly, based on its traditional presumption that debt problems are invariably the result of internal mismanagement (despite overwhelming evidence to the contrary in this case), that in the longer term the only solution is a reorientation of domestic policy ('structural adjustment') in the debtor countries to restore economic solvency

The IMF's financial resources, however, were and remain wholly insufficient for the task of providing enough money to finance the debtors through the adjustment period. Hence, it has adopted a 'carrot and stick' technique in its dealings with both the banks and the Third World. By promising the banks that it will ensure an eventual return to solvency in the debtor countries (the carrot), and warning them that unless they co-operate the IMF will wash its hands of the whole affair and let the banks go to the wall (the stick), the IMF has been able to coerce already over-exposed banks into lending additional funds to ensure that their loans continue to be serviced. Similarly, by holding out the promise of further money from the banks (the carrot) the threatening international isolation in the event of default (the stick), the IMF has managed to force far-reaching, medium-term adjustment programmes on the debtor countries.

To date this approach has 'succeeded' to the extent that widescale defaults and bank collapses have been averted But there are three important reasons for believing that this situation cannot continue indefinitely. The first is that as the banks reduce their exposure to the Third World, their incentive to continue so-called 'involuntary lending' is weakened. If formal default would bankrupt the bank, then its only short term option is to continue lending to ensure that the debtor country has the funds to pay the interest and thus keep alive the fiction that the bank's balance sheet is sound. Once default is containable, there is no need to persist with this creative accounting.

All the major money-centre banks have dramatically improved their balance sheets over the last six years. They have done this in a number of ways. Although involuntary lending has added to the stock of outstanding loans, the banks have devised various techniques for disposing of earlier loans, albeit at a discount. 'Buy-backs', 'debt-equity swaps' and 'exit bonds' are all essentially means of selling a loan the bank no longer wants to a third party more prepared to take the risk of default. At the same time, the banks have made massively greater provision for default by withholding profits to build up loan-loss reserves.

The second flaw in the present strategy stems from the IMF's refusal to view the debt situation as the result of an external shock. Its preoccupation with internal adjustment is completely inappropriate and ultimately doomed to failure Even if there were scope for adjustment within an individual country, the same cannot logically be true of the Third World taken as a whole. One country's imports are another's exports. If Argentina cuts its imports, it buys less from Chile, Brazil and Mexico, which in turn must embark on further rounds of austerity themselves — leading to an endless, downward spiral Another problem is that many Third World countries export the same raw materials, for which world demand is limited. The huge IMF-inspired increases in the Third World's output of coffee, cocoa and copper have depressed prices, often leading to lower export revenues despite the higher export volumes

These 'fallacies of composition' apart, the logic of internal adjustment is also dangerously misconceived on other grounds. Adjustment means no more and no less than that Third World countries restructure their economies so that they can start servicing their debts in full (rather than partly by new borrowing) as quickly as possible. However technical the IMF's jargon, there is no escaping the fact that cutting imports and increasing exports means that the real living standards of the world's poorest populations are dramatically reduced to generate the surpluses needed to pay debt service. In many cases, such cuts are socially unacceptable and 'IMF riots' have swept the Third World countries which have implemented the Fund's recommendations most faithfully.

Worse still, because imports are so crucial to the process of development, adjustment policies which stress import compression typically stifle economic growth In almost all Third World countries, real investment has fallen since 1982, often leading to the collapse in the nascent export

industries which once held out hope for the future IMF policies can thus lock debtor countries into low- or zero-growth situations in which only continued austerity will ensure that debts can be serviced over time.

Taken together, these factors suggest that neither the banks nor the debtor countries are likely to continue playing the game according to the IMF's rules much longer Increasingly, the money-centre banks are finding themselves in a position where they can 'tough it out', no longer needing to throw good money after bad to keep the bank regulators from their doors Similarly many Third World countries are beginning to realise that they face decades of economic stagnation and internal unrest, during which income and wealth will flow massively — and regressively — to the West In a situation where future bank loans will be swamped by debt service payments, the benefits of formal default (retention of debt service payments for domestic uses) start to outweigh the costs (exclusion from overseas credit markets)

The third and final flaw in the present approach is that its 'success' has depended to a large extent on the partial reversal of the global economic forces which originally triggered the crisis in 1982 Over the last six years, interest rates have followed inflation down from the peaks reached at the beginning of the decade, while deficit spending by the US administration has led the developed world out of recession, boosting the demand for raw materials and offsetting the decline in the Third World's export earnings

However, neither of these favourable trends looks set to continue into the 1990s The rapid expansion of the US economy has caused an unprecedented deficit on its balance of trade, to the extent that further growth appears unsustainable in the medium term The same nervous fears about the robustness of the US economy which sparked last October's Wall Street crash have also underpinned the speculative selling which has pushed the dollar down in recent months Eventually, the US must cut its 'twin' budget and trade deficits (which will reduce the demand for Third World exports) or force interest rates back up to attract international capital to the dollar (which will directly increase the Third World's debt servicing costs) Either way, the real losers will be the debtor countries who can only watch their fate being decided by events on Capitol Hill.

In conclusion, it is clear that the international debt crisis is far from over. While the banks have taken advantage of the six year breathing space during which a generalised default has been avoided to strengthen their position, the debtor countries are in a worse situation than ever. Their outstanding debt, in both absolute terms and as a percentage of GDP, is considerably higher than it was in 1982 Similarly, debt service takes a higher proportion of export earnings than it did when the crisis first struck Continued 'solvency' has been bought only at the cost of painful import compression, which has slashed living standards and stalled the process of economic development in the Third World.

The Third World now faces an indefinite period of debt slavery, in which their economies will remain artificially restrained to make room

for large scale resource transfers to the richest nations on earth This state of affairs is not the result of profligacy and incompetence by corrupt Third World governments, but rather overwhelmingly the consequence of global economic forces orchestrated by Washington, Tokyo, Bonn and London In practical terms, the international debt crisis has given the West the green light to continue raping the Third World of its resources, with IMF officials performing the role of the colonial administrators of old Whether the Third World will tolerate this new imperialism much longer, and whether the trigger for renewed crisis is pulled by the banks or the debtors themselves, remains to be seen.

Table 1 — The Most Highly-Indebted Debtor Countries

Country	Total Outstanding Debt ($bns) End-1987	Interest as % Export Earnings End-1987	Average % GDP Growth per annum 1980-87	Average % Per Capita Consumption Growth per annum 1980-87
Brazil	114 5	30 2	3 5	1 1
Mexico	105 0	32 7	0 3	-2 7
Argentina	49 5	33 1	0 0	-1 3
Venezuela	33 6	22 5	-0 7	-4 6
Philippines	29 0	19 0	-0.5	-1 0
Nigeria	27 0	11 6	-3 4	-6 5
Yugoslavia	21 8	7 7	1 1	-0 5
Chile	20 5	29 5	0 9	-2 2

Source World Bank

Table 2 — The Changing Third World Debt Situation

	1982	1983	1984	1985	1986
Debt Service[1] as % GDP	25 0	24 7	23 1	26 1	29 0
Interest as % GDP	14.3	15 0	15 0	17 1	18 7
Net Transfers[2] ($bns)	3 8	-7 5	-17 5	-26 1	-26 9
% Growth of GDP p a	-0 6	-2 9	2 3	2 9	2 9
% Change in Investment p a	-14 9	-20 5	0 3	4 9	2.7
% Change in Exports p a	-5 0	1 7	12 3	-0 5	-2 7
% Change in Imports p a	-14 3	-20 2	-2 4	0 1	-0 7

Source World Bank

Notes:

1 Interest payments plus scheduled repayments of capital
2 New bank loans less debt service payments

[Nigel M Healey is a member of the Policy Research Unit, Department of Economics and Public Policy at Leeds Polytechnic]

THE FUTURE OF NEUTRALITY

by Peter Johnson

IN the aftermath of the Second World War neutrality has had a poor political image and, by and large, a bad press. Politicians of the NATO powers have often been hostile, sometimes vitriolic. John Foster Dulles, when US Secretary of State, said that neutrality was 'an immoral and short-sighted conception'. Neutrals were originally excluded from the United Nations and Mrs. Jean Kirkpatrick, as US envoy to the organisation, believed that 'he who is not with us, damned well ought to be!' The idea is still widespread that the free countries of Western Europe who stay outside the Alliance are 'free riders' under the American umbrella

Western disapproval of neutrality is often tempered by a history of good relations between individual nations The Soviet attitude, however, is dominated by the Leninist dogma that the interests of communism prevail over all other considerations, moral or otherwise. Where the Soviet Union has seen benefit in the support of neutrality, as in the cases of Austria and Finland after the war, it has given full support but in general the attitude is less favourable. Russia insists 'that world peace can and will obtain only in a totally communist world' where, of course, neutrality would have no place. Consequently, if neutral countries are to serve the cause of peace, they should lean towards the Eastern bloc, which they signally fail to do.

Soviet support of a neutral stance was active in the early 1950s in the special circumstances in Scandinavia and Central Europe The offer then made of a 'united and neutral Germany' was treated by the West as merely an attempt to forestall West Germany joining NATO It was vague on the political aspects of unification and has not been renewed.

Soviet interest in using neutrality as a tool to further its interests came to an abrupt halt with the Hungarian uprising of 1956. Kruschev's decision then to reverse the withdrawal of Soviet troops from Hungary, which the new revolutionary government had requested, was less due to dislike of the proposals for reform than to the Hungarian declaration that it would adopt a policy of military neutrality. This probably raised a bogey of a 'domino' effect spreading among the East European members of the Warsaw Pact

Mr. Gorbachov, in the course of the quickfire succession of panaceas he has offered to the world, has seemed to give a blessing to the neutralisation of Afghanistan, but the full implications of the suggestion, if it is meant seriously, have not yet transpired.

The reaction of the European neutrals to the attitudes of the superpowers has been, predictably, to keep a low profile in the more controversial issues in international life The Swiss referendum called to decide whether the country should apply for full membership of the United Nations gave a negative answer. This signalled, not Swiss indifference to the organisation but public distaste for entering the highly politicised

arenas of the General Assembly and the Security Council. The Swiss play an important part in the technical and specialised agencies of the UN, but the public clearly feels that it would be prejudicial to Swiss neutrality to get involved in the wider issues which confront, and often divide, the UN.

A number of the neutrals who were not as fortunate as the Swiss in the World Wars have sought, or in some cases have been forcibly accorded, the 'protection' of one of the great Alliances Turkey has abandoned the neutrality she maintained until almost the end of the Second World War when she joined her traditional allies in the West. Spain, after a century and a half of neutrality, has lately, with some reservations, joined NATO Is there then any substance, apart from the faith of their peoples, in the dogged belief of the surviving European neutrals not only in the rectitude of their stance but in its wisdom and value to themselves and the world? Or is it merely a refusal to face reality? Has what some see as an 'opting out' of responsibilities any contribution to make towards solving the world's problems?

There is no simple answer to these questions

What might be called the 'well-being factor', an imaginary measure which could take account of material prosperity, moral satisfaction, political stability, service to the poorer countries of the Third World and the mental and spiritual health of the nation, would probably be higher in most of the neutral countries than elsewhere But this is a wide generalisation without guaranteed relevance.

The most publicised of the international activities of the European neutrals is the provision of facilities for meetings and conferences between the super-powers and, to a lesser degree, between others involved, often with the super-powers as indirect participants in disputes or negotiations. The preference for holding such gatherings on territory not overly committed to either side is natural, but the influence of the host country is not often very significant. Some of the Conference on Disarmament in Europe meetings, which are held in neutral capitals, have been exceptions, largely because the neutrals themselves have been full members of the Conference.

A second important activity is that of providing military units for United Nations peacekeeping forces This the neutrals do on a scale often out of proportion to their resources. Their presence in trouble areas is naturally seen as less provocative and more in keeping with United Nations impartiality than would be those of alliance countries who are likely to be, however indirectly, partially involved with one or other of the disputants Neutral contingents have many times acquitted themselves with honour in such enterprises, confronting difficult and dangerous circumstances with coolness and justice.

The practical role of the neutral countries in processes of arbitration or conflict resolution, such as the *contradora* initiative in Central America, has so far been disappointingly small. This is partly in keeping with their low profile policy but also because of disinclination in a polarised world to submit voluntarily to any such process

To conclude from the above that neutrality, if not dead, is irrelevant ignores the important role which the neutral states, by virtue of their geographical situations, play in the great confrontation in Europe

In the Northern sector, where the Soviet build-up of naval and air strength has been dauntingly great, Sweden occupies a key position With her thriving democracy and a mixed economy, she belongs in essence to the free world of the West. Often under pressure, both external and internal, to complete that adherence by joining the military organisation of NATO, Sweden has, with the overwhelming support of her people, resolutely refused to change her stance This in spite of some historical hostility to Russia and a strong opposition to the communist ethic

In spite of the efficiency of her armed forces and her appreciable armaments industry, Swedish adherence to NATO would, on balance, weaken rather than strengthen the Western Alliance The Soviet Union would certainly be alerted, if not actively alarmed, if there were NATO forces in Sweden In such circumstances the possibility is strong that she would activate her defence arrangements with Finland under the 1947 Treaty. This would add enormously to the tension in Northern Europe and make for another twist to the upward spiral of the arms race.

Such a scenario, which is mercifully highly improbable, serves to illustrate the high service Swedish neutrality does to the stability of Northern Europe Whatever apprehensions the Swedes may have about the excessive military power of the great neighbour across the Baltic, and about the objectionable submarine activities in their home waters, they are justified in having faith that neutrality is their safest policy option.

Switzerland, with a long democratic tradition is very strongly capitalist and even more embedded in the Western camp than Sweden as regards finance and industry The prospects of her relinquishing her long held policy of neutrality, however, are negligible

Her geographical situation is not so critical as that of Sweden and it is an admitted weakness of the Western Alliance that the long Austrian/ Swiss neutral wedge in its centre inhibits communication and reinforcement between the Central and Southern fronts Nevertheless the benefits her neutrality brings to Europe, if different, are still substantial.

Because of her long neutral tradition and her association with the Red Cross and the original League of Nations, Switzerland has been in some ways the most prominent and forceful of the neutrals in international affairs, in spite of not being a United Nations full member She has supported many efforts at war prevention and, with such names as Geneva and Locarno on her territory, Switzerland has become something of an international symbol of peaceful aspirations. A Europe without a neutral Switzerland at its centre would be unthinkable

Yugoslavia is the largest and most populous, but also the poorest of the major European neutrals, and the only one who has actually broken away from one of the hostile blocs She occupies an important strategic position and her fragile stability, engendered by her diverse and quarrelsome nationalities, have caused Western observers at times to suspect the

Soviet Union of contemplating action to bring the Yugoslavs back into the Moscow orbit

Any such action would be of great concern to NATO and could present a threat to communications with the Middle East But the Soviet Union, painfully disengaging from Afghanistan, is unlikely to court a new guerilla war, nor will Mr Gorbachov willingly compromise his peaceloving image for the sake of bases in the Adriatic.

Austria and Finland, whose neutralities are enshrined in treaties endorsed by the Soviet Union and some members of NATO, also occupy key geographical situations Both countries are vulnerable from the East but politically and economically lean to the West With the agreement of a Soviet leadership a good deal more aggressive than the present, solutions of formal neutrality were hammered out after the war In Finland, where Western influence was less effective, the condition is often denigrated as 'Finlandisation', implying virtual subjection to Moscow The Finns, fiercely independent and under strong but practical leadership, have come to terms with their condition which probably serves them and Europe better than any other which would have been even remotely possible.

In both countries the terms of agreed neutrality impose quite severe restrictions on defence capabilities, either numerically or in the prohibition of categories of weapons. Both put a brave face on their predicament and try to present a defence profile of credible dissuasion of aggression It is at least much to the advantage of Europe that no foreign forces are permitted on Austrian or Finnish soil

The provision by Malta of some 'civil' facilities for the Soviet marine is useful to Russia and slightly galling for NATO, but the islands no longer have their old value as an advanced base and the Maltese are hardly likely to risk a renewal of their ordeal of the 1940s by joining either military alliance now.

Ireland has often been on the receiving end of invitations and pressures to join NATO If it were not for her hostility to Britain it might seem a natural step, since she is Catholic, anti-communist, pro-American and the only member of the EEC not a NATO member Her neutrality complicates Atlantic strategy, as it did in the Second World War, although less importantly because of the longer ranges of modern ships, submarines and aircraft. It is, however, the overwhelming choice of her politicians and people that she stands pat on De Valera's principle of neutrality. Irish contingents have given prominent service in UN Peacekeeping Forces and Irish thought, stimulated by the anomaly of her position in the EEC, is a lively factor in neutralist theory and discussion.

All these countries, in their separate ways, make a contribution to European security and peace, but we now have to ask ourselves whether the concept of neutrality can build significantly on this not over-large base There are four avenues along which the prospects are promising.

First, there is now need of a permanent forum in which declared neutrals can talk to one another, test ideas and explore possibilities for action. There have been tentative efforts in this direction· eg the grouping of 'like

minded states', but a more formal body, bringing closer and sometimes confidential contacts between the European neutrals, would make their policies more positive and enable their voice to be heard more clearly in the world.

The Hague Convention and the Declarations of London and Paris, all in the region of 100 or more years old, are confined, in dealing with the 'legal' aspects of neutrality, to the behaviour of states during a war. In an increasingly polarised world and at a time when the very definition of war is open to doubt and interpretation, much wider guidance is needed on the definition and principles of neutrality. There is need for a statement of the rights and duties of neutral states, and of other countries towards those neutrals, not only in declared war but in peace and in the grey areas of revolution, cold war, terrorism and undeclared war which now lie between peace and war This is a matter for full international consideration which admittedly will be difficult, but not impossible, to initiate. What, for instance does Mr. Gorbachov mean when he proposes a neutral Afghanistan? Can this, if implemented, serve as a model for other disputed areas?

From these two steps there should emanate a third, specific recognition of the status of neutrality at the United Nations as an important step in the processes of peace and disarmament Some amendment of the Charter to bring the organisation into line with the composition and circumstances it now faces is long overdue, and recognition of neutrality could well be part of that procedure.

All this will take time but, like all great projects, it will develop its own momentum As the world grows ever more conscious of the dangers inherent in the sheer size of the confrontation of the two alliances, and as the status of neutrality grows, it is to be expected that there will be a cautious expansion in the number of its adherents with the consent and possibly at the instigation of the super-powers themselves The greatest leap forward would come with the accession of a middle-sized power able to add diplomatic weight and experience to the moral position.

If Europeans on both sides peer into the future of their continent, there are two consummations which they can visualise. The first is acceptance of the present military and political divide as permanent, denoting faith in the capacity and will of the super-powers to negotiate arms control and reduction, a process in which the Europeans themselves are likely to play little effective part. The second is to work for a gradual extension of neutrality, negotiated state by state, perhaps on the Austrian model, and presenting such a picture at the end of each negotiation that neither super-power would feel that it had suffered a defeat or won a victory As each European power was added to the neutral camp, the area of nuclear-free, offensive-weapon-free territory separating the sovereign territories of the super-powers would increase and stabilise, according in fact with the true, if concealed, ambitions of the super-powers themselves. The United States and Mr. Gorbachov's USSR fervently wish to decrease the burden of armaments on their peoples, and both believe that the

crucial area of their opposition has shifted away from Europe. Despite their publicly equivocal attitudes, they might both welcome an extension of neutrality in Europe, limited at first, but leading cautiously towards a solution of the crux problem of Germany.

A tentative start may well be made, at least to wider discussion, during the time of testing of Mr. Gorbachov's proclaimed intention to go over to a truly defensive system of national defence. It can only come, however, if ideas of building Europe into a nuclear armed third super-power are abandoned. Europe must find means of defence suited to its own circumstances which will threaten no one but assure its own reasonable safety.

If the old ties of culture and communication in Europe can be renewed without the old quarrels of race and religion (and the new ones of sport), the European constituents of NATO and the Warsaw Pact may come to see a war between any of them as so improbable and distasteful that the super-powers could not impose it even if they would

If neutrality has no future, Europe, the real Europe may have no future either.

[Peter Johnson was Director of Civil Aviation in Germany following World War II and later Attaché at the British Embassy in Bonn He took part in negotiations with the Soviets in Berlin after the Berlin Air Corridor incidents He is at present Defence and Foreign Affairs corresponent of *New European*]

The November issue of *Contemporary Review* includes *The New Afghan Military Balance* by Karan Sawnhy, *Will the Vietnamese Starve?* by Nghiem Xuan Thien, *UNESCO. A Way Out of the Crisis* by Nikea Nikola Soljan and *The Reluctant Countryman. Robert Herrick* by Donald Williams Bruce.

OFFICIAL SECRETS AND THE ETHICS OF PROMISE-MAKING

by Hugh V. McLachlan

IT is sometimes argued that people who have promised never to reveal official secrets are, by virtue of their promise, under an absolute moral obligation never to do so. I want to argue that this is a dubious claim and to consider it as an abstract moral one, for it would seem to be axiomatic that moral principles transcend political boundaries

If we voluntarily make a promise to someone we thereby create an obligation towards him or her to keep it. Nonetheless, not all the obligations that we are under are towards that person, nor are they all derived from making promises They do not become lesser when we make additional promises These other obligations sometimes conflict with and are sometimes more overwhelming than those created by the making of a promise For instance, I might tell some close friends that I have a secret that I wish to confide in them They might promise not to betray my trust I might then say something like. 'Actually, I murdered my first wife and I am seriously thinking of doing the same with my second'. It seems clear, in this instance, that not only would my friends be justified in breaking their promises, they would be morally obliged to do so if they thought my threat was anything other than a rather sick joke.

Often, we make promises to secure some benefit for ourselves and it is the enjoyment of the benefit, as well as merely uttering the words of a promise, which obliges us to keep it For instance, if we borrow £50 and promise to pay it back we are obliged to do so, not only because we promised to but because, if we do not, we are £50 better off at the lender's expense Usually, when we make a promise, we know what we are letting ourselves in for, but to undertake not to reveal official secrets is a 'blank cheque' promise Those making it were in no position to know whether morally or practically they would be able to keep it.

I think it is a feature of the obligation deriving from promises that they are conditional Promisees can release promisers from their obligation to keep their promises If the kind friend who loaned us £50 tells us to keep the money as a gift, we are not obliged to return the money

Imagine a situation where, before being appointed to particular civil service jobs, people make a promise to the effect 'I promise never to reveal any information which I come across in my capacity as a civil servant I promise never to reveal any official secrets' Some people argue that making such a promise creates an absolute moral obligation never to break it Again, this does not seem to me to be plausible I think that ideally no-one should make such a promise No-one can tell in advance to what sort of information he or she will become privy to nor, consequently, whether or not the publication of the information will be morally justifiable or even morally obligatory. It could be argued that promises made to governments are no more morally compulsive than are any other

ones. People have moral obligations towards and concerning people other than governments. They have moral obligations which are prior to that created by making a promise to a government, and such moral obligations do not somehow disappear when a promise to a government is made How can we tell that these obligations can never be greater than the obligation to keep one's promise to a government? Some governments might simply claim dogmatically that they cannot be, but no government can be the final arbiter in matters of morality

Suppose, for instance, that in Germany in the 1930s someone who had made such a promise came across secret plans to set up concentration camps and exterminate German Jews Would anyone seriously suggest that the person is morally obliged to conceal this information simply because of a promise which he or she misguidedly made? Suppose that civil servants discover, say, that an innocent person is serving life imprisonment but that the establishment of his or her innocence would require the civil servants to reveal an official secret Surely, in such circumstances, they would be justified or even obliged to reveal the secret, despite their promise not to do so?

A promise not to reveal official secrets is, at one level, clearly a voluntary one, but it illustrates that there are degrees of coercion If we ask a friend for a loan, we are, presumably, acting quite freely, although even here there might be occasions where people might talk of economic coercion. Towards the other extreme if, at gun-point, we promise not to reveal a secret, then, presumably, the promise made creates no obligation to keep it Often, there are cases in between. Imagine a situation where an employer makes it a condition of employment that all potential employees must promise not to join a trade union or be in any way directly involved in trade union activity Some might say baldly that, if someone accepts employment and makes such a promise, then he or she is obliged to have nothing to do with trade unionism. Others might argue that the situation is more complex. The employer is using a superior bargaining position to secure a promise which, in its absence, would not be made. Perhaps the promise is not a reasonable one to ask for? The promisee is the beneficiary The promiser will benefit in the sense of receiving a job but no more, perhaps less, than if the job had been offered without the extraction of the promise Maybe the promiser was not directly coerced into making the promise, but what if the employer was the only one in the district and the person had dependants to support? What if the employer was the only one who offered employment of the sort the person had set his or her heart on or type of employment for which a potential employee and staunch trade unionist was solely or particularly qualified? Suppose that some employees were to break their promise and secretly join a trade union. While not necessarily condoning it, some people would somewhat temper any moral criticism which they might make of the action Similarly, in assessing the strength of the obligation not to reveal official secrets created by promise-making, some people might want to know more about its context. To what extent was it 'voluntary'? They

might want to question whether the government in question acted reasonably in asking for the promise to be made.

The relationship between promisers and promisees in this context is unusual Individual promisers are identifiable civil servants, but who are the promisees? If we say it is the 'government', what particular government do we mean? What, if any, are the circumstances where the promisee can release a promiser from the obligation to keep the promise? What if a future parliament decided that particular retired civil servants could, or perhaps even should, publicise a specific range of secrets known only to them? Would this decision release them from an obligation of silence or even create an obligation to reveal them? Would one argue that such a supposed parliament could not release the promisers from their obligations since the promises were not made to *them*?

Further complications might arise when the classification of what is and what is not a state secret is variable Some governments might require people to promise never to reveal what they and all future governments of that particular state declare at any particular time to be a state secret. This sort of promise is so unlike our promises of everyday life that it is tempting to wonder whether normal ethical principles apply to it How can any government predict that all subsequent governments of that state will necessarily act wisely, morally or even legally in trying to suppress particular information? Yet people sometimes argue that a promise to keep official secrets should never be broken because of the 'public interest' and/or 'state' or 'national security'

Traditionally, the 'public interest' meant an interest which all members of a society shared equally. At its most basic level, people such as Hobbes and Hume argued that government, in the sense of an ordered society as opposed to anarchy, was more or less equally in the interest of all In actual practice, it is very difficult to think of many political policies which are in this sense in the public interest Perhaps we all have an interest in a sewerage system and pure domestic water supplies, but even here we might not all benefit equally from their provision. Perhaps some remote areas are better served than others? Appeals to the 'public interest', if they do not simply mean a policy of which the advocate approves, usually means something like: 'a policy which overall is the appropriate one given that some people might gain, some people might lose and others will be unaffected by its implementation'.

If it is true that particular secrets should be kept because it is in the 'public interest', then they should be kept whether or not those privy to them have promised to keep them. It is often argued that official secrets should never be divulged because their divulgence is a threat to 'national security', but few secrets fall into this category

Recently, Richard Shepherd MP introduced a Private Member's Bill entitled 'Protection of Official Information Bill' in an attempt to reform section 2 of the Official Secrets Act 1911. (See *Hansard*, 1433, 15 January 1988, pp 563-637) Unfortunately, most of the debate focused not so much on the substance of the Bill but on whether or not a Private Member's

Bill was the appropriate mechanism for effecting legislation in this area. Most unusually in the case of a Private Member's Bill, the Government had a three-line whip against it. Even so, the Bill was rejected only by 271 to 234 Only two MPs, Michael Heseltine and Sir Geoffrey Finsberg, spoke in favour of the Government's position. This position, voiced by the Home Secretary, Douglas Hurd, was that, unknown to Mr. Shepherd, the Government had been working on a proposed reform of the Act and that they would be producing a relevant white paper during the late summer or early autumn and that it was for the best to reject Mr. Shepherd's Bill and await the Government's proposals It is worth stressing that Mr. Hurd offered no criticism of the substance of Mr. Shepherd's Bill nor any indication at all of the likely nature of the promised white paper.

Although the Shepherd Bill was defeated, it was reasonable to assume that its proposals would form the basis for subsequent discussion in the area. Mr. Shepherd noted that·

> The wide drawing of section 2 of the Official Secrets Act 1911 means that the release of every piece of official information could possibly lead to prosecution (*Hansard*, 1433, p.563)

He proposed that a distinction be made between important and unimportant official information and that only important information should be protected by the sanction of criminal prosecution. Even in the area of such protected information, Mr. Shepherd proposed that there should be legal defences for divulging such secrets such that the divulgence should not always be considered a criminal offence The broad sweep of Mr. Shepherd's proposals appeared to be so eminently reasonable that one would expect some future legislation to be based on them. More problematic is the specification of 'important' information and of the legal defence of disclosures. As Mr Shepherd said.

> We wish to distinguish between that information which should lead to criminal prosecution, and general information which needs lesser disciplinary controls Without this distinction, we will not have a free society (*Hansard*, 1433, p 564)

He went on to indicate the sorts of information whose revelation he considers should remain a criminal offence.

> Clause 1 protects information relating to defence, international relations, security and intelligence, whose unauthorised disclosure would be likely to cause serious injury to the interests of the nation or endanger the safety of a British citizen Information is also protected if it is likely to be useful in committing a crime, helping an escape from custody or otherwise impeding law enforcement Certain personal information supplied to the Government, . would also be protected (*Hansard*, 1433, pp 564-565)

In relation to this protected information, Mr Shepherd argued that there should be two legal defences of revealing it. Under his Bill, where either defence applied, no criminal offence would have occurred. The first defence is 'the horse has bolted' and the second relates to the 'public interest'. According to Mr Shepherd:

> Under clause 6 it would be a defence for a person to show that the information he was charged with disclosing had already become publicly available, whether in the United Kingdom or elsewhere That reflects one of the basic premises of the measure — that only disclosures which are likely to cause actual harm should attract criminal penalties A disclosure that merely repeats information which has already been provided would not be an offence, as the harm would have

> been done by the original publication — the contention of closing the stable after the horse has bolted However, the person responsible for the original disclosure would be liable to prosecution under the Bill (*Hansard*, 1433, p 566).

This seemed to me to be totally misconceived as a general defence of leaking secrets for it appeared to be based on a failure to distinguish between information, misinformation and speculation Mr. Shepherd also outlined the second legal offence.

> Clause 7 contains a defence for disclosures which are in the public interest, although I must stress that it is very carefully limited in several respects First, the defence is available only on specific matters crime, fraud, abuse of authority, neglect in the performance of an official duty, or other misconduct It would not be available to someone who merely disagreed with Government policy or claimed that Government policy was not in the public interest . Secondly, there would have to be reasonable grounds for believing that such crime, fraud or misconduct existed Suspicion or conjecture would not do Finally, in the case of a civil servant or Government contractor, although not in the case of a journalist, the defence would be available only if the person in question had previously taken all reasonable steps to draw the misconduct to the attention of the appropriate authorities, using established internal procedures (*Hansard*, 1433, p 566)

It is not clear here whether Mr. Shepherd was suggesting two criteria of defence or one Was he saying that disclosures are justified and should not be criminal if both misconduct has occurred and the disclosure would be in the public interest or that disclosures are justified when, and only when, misconduct has occurred because this would be in the public interest, and to what extent does this tie in with the Government's new White Paper?

Mr. Shepherd classified the information presently covered indiscriminately by the Official Secrets Act (Section 2) as general information, whose disclosure should not be criminal, and information concerning areas such as defence, whose disclosure should remain criminal apart from the exceptions we have considered. Official secrets can also be classified differently. There are (1) those secrets which should be kept no matter what area they concern, (2) those secrets where it does not much matter whether they are kept or not; and (3) those secrets which should be publicised, no matter what area they concern. I would strongly suspect that most of these are in category 2 It might well be just as important to the public at large, even if not to governments, to try to ensure that category 3 secrets are revealed, as it is that category 1 secrets are kept. A problem for legislators is to try to minimise the revelation of category 1 secrets and maximise the revelation of category 3 secrets

To sum up, the present Act commits people to a vow of life-long silence concerning information of which they are not yet aware Although desirable as an improvement on our present arrangements, perhaps *reform* of the Official Secrets Act is insufficient? Maybe we require its *abolition* and a fundamental reconsideration of our attitude to official information?

When parliament reassembles after the long summer one of its major undertakings will be a debate on the Official Secrets white paper and discussion on Section II will be of particular interest.

[Dr Hugh V. McLachlan is Reader in Sociology at Glasgow College]

BULGARIA

by John Elsom

THE Bulgarians love to give, but hate to serve This is not as universal a characteristic as it may seem Some people prefer the detachment of service, where you do as you're told and keep personal feelings at a distance But Bulgarians seem to think that detachment is akin to dislike, and so if they do serve you in a hotel in an impersonal manner, there is an air of hostility and resentment as well; and you start to wonder what is so insulting to them about asking for a second cup of coffee

But if you are invited into one of their homes, or strike up a friendship with a waiter who is trying to learn English, the effect is very different. Bulgarian hospitality is overwhelming If you admire one of their gorgeous little casserole dishes, in a deep brown flaked with a shimmering blue, there is the risk that your host will give it to you on the spot; or you may find an identical dish delivered to your hotel the following morning I was even given a present, a useful wooden pot to put things in, by the driver who took me to the Rila Monastery It was a gesture to prove that we were friends and that he was not *just* my driver.

I went to a puppet theatre and happened to say that my grandson would have loved to have seen the show and would have adored the puppets. Two child-sized rod puppets were given to me on the spot I said that my mother would admire some little handwoven place mats A set was promptly found and given to me At a stage designer's house, like Geppetto's workshop where he made Pinochio, I happened simply to ask about a curious metal object with bells which tinkled on a spinning rod. Rather than explain what it was for, the designer pressed it into my hands as a memento

Such gestures happened all the time, and I found myself going back to the Hard Currency shop to stock myself up with little bottles of whisky, a packet or so of cigarettes, some perfume, because such gifts have to be reciprocated Of course, there was nothing in the giving to suggest that they were expecting gifts in exchange, but it seemed positively embarrassing not to respond in kind. Once the gifts had been exchanged, then the friendship was established The formality disappeared and the fun began.

This was my first visit to Bulgaria, at the invitation of the Bulgarian Union of Actors and with British Council assistance, and so it had some kind of official status But it was certainly not a high-powered affair, one from which great trade agreements could be expected and, as proof, my hotel was not of the glamorous new American-style hotels of Sofia, but the lowlier Hotel Bulgaria. Throughout Eastern Europe, there are three kinds of hotels which Westerners normally visit. There may be other sorts of hotels, for all I know, little guest houses and the equivalent of temperance hotels, where travelling salesmen put up for the night; but my impression is that casual travel is so discouraged that innkeepers get discouraged as well, and no longer maintain the few rooms on the second floor with big lumpy beds and wash-stands with basins, jugs and little cotton towels

There are, however, the Stalinist hotels, built in the 1930s or 1950s, monstrous in size, grandiose in architecture, with a tall central block flanked by twelve storey wings and regularly bedding two thousand and more comrades. They are often called the International or the Intercontinental; and of all hotels in the world, these are most to be avoided. They are, to begin with, very bureaucratic. Somewhere in the North-Western or South-Eastern wing, there is a small room where you leave your passport to be checked, and having found the room and left the passport you worry for the rest of the stay whether you can ever find the room or the passport again. You are given a small card which you hand to the concierge on each floor who will then give you the room key, and when you leave the hotel, you hand the key back to the concierge who will return the small card to you.

Of course, like underground tickets, these little cards get lost; and if you have struck up a good relationship with the concierge, she may arrange for you to receive a second card But if the cold war has suddenly returned or the authorities are clamping down on foreigners, you will have difficulty even getting back into the hotel without your card, before speaking to the concierge; and she might have been told to be wary and decide not to give you another card until all your credentials, including your passport, have been checked again. And if you have a formidable woman determined to show her authority as a concierge, this process of checking can take a very long time.

In Stalinist hotels, the corridors are long and straight, like Roman roads, so that nobody can get ambushed. One of the duties of the concierge is to check that two people do not go into a room intended for one, and that in any case, the right person goes into the right room. You can feel her eyes upon you as you walk down the corridor, clutching your key.

The second group of hotels are equally large, but were built in the 1970s for American tourists, usually in conjunction with some famous chain, like the Hiltons or the Sheratons. These are in startling contrast to the Stalinist hotels, lavish, comfort-stricken, opulent, impossibly expensive for natives and not cheap even for Westerners with hard currency. You cannot actually sit on the settees in the lounges or your bedrooms: you just sink back into a pile of cushions, hoping that somebody will eventually help you up again

In the Stalinist hotels, the hard currency shops are modest and often unrewarding In the American-style hotels, there are shopping piazzas, displaying goods which can be obtained nowhere else in the country. The restaurants and nightclubs have long, impressive menus, and even if you do not always get what you order, and it is badly cooked anyway, the deafening tinkle of the chandeliers and the little bands playing selections from Strauss drowns the desire to complain.

But, judged by material comfort alone, there can be few complaints about the Budapest Hilton or the Sofia Sheraton They are good hotels by Western standards although there is something rather unpleasant about staying in them The contrast between the opulence within and the austerity outside turns you into a living image of class conflict. You feel

like Marie Antoinette just before the revolution. One drink at the bar is an average weekly wage outside, and when your friends visit, they have to be signed in and signed out as if they were the strangers, not you.

The third class of hotels is very strange indeed They are really turn-of-the-century Grand Hotels, which have been taken over by the state and maintained in a style which vacillates between flunkeydom and bolshevism. The Grand Ballroom is filled with trestle tables covered with stained white cloth, on which has been placed a paper or plastic sheet At breakfast, the waiters wear red velvet dinner jackets and bow ties, but if you ask for coffee, they fling you a little packet of the instant stuff and bring round a kettle of (fairly) hot water. The rooms can be magnificent, with mahogany wardrobes where at least fifty ballgowns can be adequately hung, but the room service, unless you have established a special relationship with one of the chambermaids or footmen, is non-existent

Such was the Hotel Bulgaria, where you could live like a lord in exile, poor as a church mouse among marbled halls. Once you had negotiated your key from the desk clerk and waited for a lift (perpetually occupied by those conducting illegal currency transactions) and struggled with the lock to your room, you suddenly entered a suite which, in the old days, could have been occupied by one of the minor Russian princes or an ambassador on holiday, with a stunning view across the square to the cathedral and the parliament buildings, with the National Theatre nearby Sofia is a small capital city, where many of the grandeurs of Prague, old Warsaw and Vienna have been, as it were, miniaturised, no less grand or elegant, but half the size For a visitor, this has its advantages. For once, you have time to see the zoo and the collection of ikons in the cathedral crypt. You are within walking distance of the park, with its statues of the revolution; and the scent of flowers drifts into the main streets, before it gets irredeemably blurred by traffic fumes and tobacco smoke

But I was told not to eat at the Hotel Bulgaria, wise advice, which I took as often as possible, and once outside the hotel, this extraordinary Bulgarian hospitality took over. At the theatre, somebody who knew someone who knew me would come up to ask me where I would be dining that evening, and if I hesitated or murmured something about the Sheraton, then I was promptly asked back to their flat for a slight evening meal, which turn out to be a gargantuan feast. This happened on several occasions, the last being one which I shall never forget

I had been taken to the ancient and beautiful provincial town of Plovdiv, by car through rice fields, where storks and cranes hopped with a preoccupied air, not unlike the waiters at the hotel Having visited the Roman remains, and other tourist attractions, and spent some time at an imaginative puppet theatre which was stacked with children learning about music through puppetry, we were about to return to Sofia; but we decided to have a drink with Ivan Sivina and his friends of the Sivina troupe

Sivina is a gentle, white-haired man, who with his wife and daughter has developed an elegant kind of puppetry, using white cloths, globes and shawls, which in their hands become dancers, clowns and acrobats.

Their delightful show has travelled widely, though not to Britain, and was particularly successful in Los Angeles, an antidote presumably to Californian excess. Sivina's brother has a farm nearby, where we were invited for a slight picnic

It was a warm, but not hot, Balkan evening. The farm garden was shielded from the summer sun by trellised vines; and we sat at a long wooden table outside, Sivina playing the accordion His brother, Georgi, brought out his homemade schnaps, made from figs, which was delicious, and then his wines, a light refreshing white and a sturdy red. Then all kinds of little snacks appeared, sausages, a kind of meat ball, three varieties of local mushrooms pickled in a mixture of vinegar and olive oil, tomatoes, salads which were as far from our lettuce leaves and cucumbers as it is possible for salads to be while remaining salads, with nasturtium leaves, a kind of non-stinging nettles, endives and chives And then we moved on to the grilled chicken, and the rabbit stew, the local cheeses, the olives and the Bulgarian equivalent of the Greek *dolmades*, and then to the bigger fruits, the melons, apples and pears

And as the schnaps took hold they sang very beautifully, for they were professionals, Bulgarian folk songs; and told me stories about the region, and what they did when the Turks invaded, long ago, and recited patriotic poems And then, of course, as the moon was rising, we danced, me clumsily trying to follow the steps. And my driver, all this time, drank nothing, for he had a two-hour drive to face, the gesture of generosity too often overlooked, until in the early hours of the morning, the party broke up, and we returned to Sofia.

By some Western standards, Bulgaria is a poor country and is notable mainly for its wine, its jam, its fine productions at the National Theatre and the Army Theatre, its athletes and, if you like very high temperatures, its summer climate But if you have danced under its moon and survived its generosity, you find yourself asking: 'Where in the world is its like?'

CINEMA: A QUARTERLY REVIEW

by David Shipman

REGULAR readers of this column may recall that I was only mildly enthusiastic about *Jean de Florette,* the first part of Claude Berri's two-film adaptation of Marcel Pagnol's novel *Manon des Sources* I have now seen the second part, named after the book, and I can the more easily understand why these movies have attracted patrons, here and in the US, who don't normally bother with foreign-language films They are, for one thing, like a darn-good read, and Provence in wide screen and Eastmancolor makes you want to head for the Air France office right away At the end of *Jean de Florette* he, Jean, is killed while digging the well which might have given his barren land an irrigation system; the property is sold to Ugolin (Daniel Auteuil) and his uncle (Yves Montand) who with that intention had sealed off the spring which should have watered it Manon des Sources is Jean's daughter, a fey, wild beauty who makes a living up in the hills by poaching and herding goats She's an outcast till courted by the new schoolteacher, and she's set on revenging herself on Ugolin — who, as it happens, is smitten with her — when she learns by chance of his knavery

I must say that I think M. Berri might have done a little cutting to get his duology (a new word, and why not?) into one film, but I rejoiced in the second film, even more than the first, even as I recognised that as craft his work is really rather stodgy And then I saw Pagnol's *Manon des Sources,* made in 1952 and hitherto unseen in this country. It starts with Pagnol at his worst — the townsfolk yarning away for ten minutes in the café, during which time the schoolmaster is told of the events which make up the two-hour-plus of Berri's *Jean de Florette:* thus he learns about Manon (Jacqueline Pagnol) and is prepared to defend her at a quickly-convened kangaroo court when the women of the village hurl imprecations at her. Pagnol implies (as Berri did not) that the hostility towards Manon is because she is sexually provocative and therefore attractive to the male population We are told of a mock-shimmy done to deter one of her suitors, which becomes in Berri a gambol naked through the heather and rosemary like a wild thing. In fact, not one of Berri's changes or omissions is an improvement· gone is a pleasingly satiric scene showing the village *en fête* for the annual blessing of the well; gone is the touching scene where the villagers 'woo' Manon with goods in kind because they no longer think of her as a witch (which they didn't in Berri's film, though set in the 20s instead of the 50s) and know they need her help, gone, even, is Ugolin's moustache — which goes here because he wants to be more attractive to Manon Rellys plays Ugolin much more simply than did Auteuil; and Henri Poupon as the uncle — a far smaller role here than in the remake — is as fine an actor as Montand, but he's not required to be devious in every which way direction. What Berri made was a lugubrious, melodramatic, simple-minded art movie about picturesque peasants; what Pagnol made was a warm often hilarious, human,

unmelodramatic comedy about a particular group of people living in the Midi. His version is also much more modern

But be careful not to quote me on this. Pagnol's film was originally four hours long and that shown at the National Film Theatre was — though it was his preferred version — only three-and-a-half hours; and Berri was not so much remaking it as adapting the novel that Pagnol subsequently wrote from the material He intended, I read somewhere, an *homage*. I think he'd better try again

As for taking liberties, try *Babette's Feast*. The first thing that strikes you is the light of the Jutland peninsula, the barren coast and the hovels huddled together. The first line of Isak Dinesen's short story establishes that it takes place on the edge of a fjord in Norway, 'between tall mountains', in a place looking 'like a child's toy-town of little wooden pieces painted grey, yellow, pink and many other colours'. The obvious reason for the change is financial, since it's clearly cheaper to make a Danish film in Jutland than in a far-away Norwegian town; but if you say that the new setting suits the subject-matter better it is still going against Dinesen's intentions She wanted a pretty little town; Gabriel Axel, who adapted and directed, wanted one that was anything but So he gets it wrong, then: but he has got everything else marvellously right. The pleasures of this film are so immense and so unusual that I will do little more than to warn you that *au fond* the story is horribly artificial, concerning as it does the French servant (Stephane Audran, who was never more magnificent, even when she was being chic for Chabrol) of two devoutly pious, impoverished spinster sisters, she takes it into her head to cook them and their almost-dead parishioners a gourmet meal — and the 'all' in 'the good time had by all' would on this occasion include cinema audiences

Coming out of James Ivory's dreary version of James's *The Europeans* some years ago I heard a woman in front of me saying 'That's what I call a *different* movie' I, who have seen almost ten thousand movies, can say honestly that I've never seen one much like *Babette's Feast*. Ivory's new film, like *A Room With a View*, is a transcription of a novel by E. M. Forster — which in this case I haven't read. Friends said that it was trite and sentimental, Forster dealing with men loving men when that sort of thing wasn't allowed; and I have to say that I never thought a frolic with a gamekeeper was the panacea for the frustrations of the Edwardian upper classes. But *Maurice*, unlike the film of a *Room With a View*, is actually about something — and I assume its effortless superiority is due to the fact that the dreaded Ruth-whatever-she's-called didn't have a hand in the screenplay Ivory and Kit Hesketh-Harvey wrote it, and it just fails to make heavy weather of the matter of coping with unspeakable predelictions when disclosure of them meant social ostracism, jail or both When two Cambridge undergraduates fall in love they fumble emotionally, verbally, but in no other way. The situation resolves itself when they decide that it can only endure if 'pure' — which is not the attitude of Viscount Risley (Mark Tandy). who likes guardsmen Discovered with one

and ruined, he turns to Clive (Hugh Grant), who refuses to testify on his behalf because that would put paid to his own political ambitions. After a nervous breakdown and meditation by a Greek temple he decides that marriage is the answer to his problem, which leaves Maurice (James Wilby), his 'platonic' lover, rather up a tree Mr Grant manages superbly the many facets of Clive — the Greek-minded undergraduate, the false friend, the ambitious Parliamentary candidate, the hopefully-uxorious husband, but it is Maurice's film and Mr Wilby is master of his myriad difficulties. For *Maurice* is a voyage of self-discovery: from Clive's first caress to the gamekeeper's pent-up explosion of admiration he needs to discover what will happen if he gives physical expression to his 'yearnings'. 'What the hell do I do?' is the subtext of Maurice, and the answer, in the film, is not provided by either the family doctor, played by Denholm Elliott, or a hypnotist, wildly over-acted by Ben Kingsley.

Maurice, in sum, is so replete with nobly-motivated repressions and expressions that it may well turn up as the Beeb's Christmas Day offering after the Queen's speech. Not so, I fancy, is the future of *Prick Up Your Ears,* another examination of a homosexual life-style — that of the playwright Joe Orton, as directed by Stephen Frears and written by Alan Bennett from John Lahr's biography. That, as I recall it, showed Orton's idea of a good time as an orgy in a public convenience (on the way home from collecting the *Evening Standard* drama award), and leaving around his diary account of same so that his 'husband' would find it — rivetting stuff but, and I'm sorry about this word, distasteful. Forty years on, indeed, and even then not the stuff for mass audiences Like Tom Driberg, Orton seems to have felt that posterity needed a record of his orgasms, and who are we to complain? — in view of the fact that he and Bennett (along with Peter Nichols and perhaps Michael Frayn) are responsible for the only lasting British drama of the last thirty years Bennett has said that he had to resist writing 'in a sub-Orton kind of language', and if that is so he didn't succeed — but both had/have a dry, laconic way of lambasting pomposity and self-importance The screenplay is a small triumph of economy, charting the relationship of two misfits, Orton (Gary Oldman) and Halliwell (Alfred Molina), and its disintegration when Orton became famous. Unlike Babette, Maurice, Manon des Sources, they're neither strong nor sympathetic protagonists; but the two actors flesh out their characteristics — the pert, cocky Orton, the increasingly melancholy Halliwell As Orton's agent, Vanessa Redgrave is less mannered than in a long while If I have a complaint, it's the use of *By the Beautiful Sea* in the Morocco sequence. It's an American song, little known here. What was needed was *Oh, I Do Like to Be Beside the Seaside,* with its echoes of Donald McGill postcards.

I'm afraid that these four films dwarf most of the others around — and I don't know why I'm wasting your time with *Crimes of the Heart,* unless it's to advise you to avoid it like the plague Beth Henley's play ran a long while in New York where, I imagine, its borrowings from Tchehov and Tennessee Williams (and not only them; I wrote down a dozen other titles)

made it culturally respectable. It has super roles for three major actresses, but together these three sisters do little more than squeal as they reminisce. Sissy Spacek, who made lemonade (doesn't everyone?) after shooting the husband who beat up her teenage black lover; Jessica Lange, sexually fulfilled but a failed singer in Hollywood, taking up again with her Vershinin (Sam Shepard), though he's now happily married with two kiddies; and Diane Keaton, the frustrated lonely one Bruce Beresford directed, trying for figures in an over-familiar Mississippi landscape

This was one of a handful of movies which sunk its production company, De Laurentis, as it looked to last minute salvation from *Blue Velvet* — which it had every right to expect, given the reviews. The public knew better and stayed away I can only say that once again I'm puzzled by the mentality of those who sit in judgement in Fleet Street and elsewhere. Here's a battered old B movie plot about a boy (Kyle MacLachlan) and a girl (Laura Dern) investigating some unknown crime after he's found an ear on a piece of scrubland He becomes fixated on a sultry nightclub singer (Isabella Rossellini), who likes to be beaten while making love — whether by him or her mobster lover (Dennis Hopper) This gentleman at one point dons lipstick and says to the boy 'You're mine' after kissing him — which may be why one critic observed that David Lynch (who wrote and directed) is out conquering new worlds It opens well, with a portrait of Anytown, USA, but its essential junkiness is quickly apparent The performances are embarrassing and in the case of Mr. Hopper somewhat worse than that I'd much prefer Simon Callow as the clergyman in *Maurice,* still hoping he's the reincarnation of Charles Laughton.

Otherwise, I can only recommend, if somewhat wanly, *Planes, Trains and Automobiles,* written and directed by John Hughes, another one who doesn't dazzle you with his originality. Among the old artefacts rehashed is *Heroes,* with Steve Martin as the nice, normal person mixed up in the antics of a slob — John Candy as Henry Winkler Alternatively, they're the Odd Couple — Martin in Lemmon-like fedora and overcoat, Candy is a series of preposterous loud shirts. This actor, new to me, looks like Cliff Osmond, whom Billy Wilder used in a couple of films Osmond was chosen for his resemblance to Oliver Hardy. In this movie Martin is also Stan Laurel. He winds up in Wichita when he hoped to be home in Chicago· getting from one to the other involves him in every mishap a traveller can endure (without, that is, being sky-jacked). As with *The Out-of-Towners,* the joke is in the repetition of disaster, the scale of reversal — though to me, at least, sitting in a burning car and driving the wrong way on the freeway are situations with no humorous potential. My friend Richard Chatten said to me recently, 'When you consider the films of the 80s you have to lower your sights And they're not going to stand up the way the films of the 30s, 40s and 50s do'. I think *Maurice* and *Prick Up Your Ears* will. I'm damned sure that *Babette's Feast* will

EDINBURGH INTERNATIONAL FESTIVAL — 1988

by Laurence Green

EDINBURGH in August is a city bursting with creative vitality and unexpected treats, where the sound of bagpipes mingles with the voices of colourfully dressed acrobats and street entertainers, and where every available building from school-room to church hall proclaims an even more enticing theatrical event. For this is the month of Europe's largest arts festival which in this, its 42nd year, expanded further the number of productions staged

The 1988 festival had a strongly Neapolitan flavour with a farce by Eduardo Scarpetta, the supreme farceur of the 19th century whose work influenced Eduardo de Filippo, performed by a company new to Britain, and a famous mother-and-son act, Peppe e Barra, who brought their own rich tradition of music hall style comedy. The Neapolitan theme also extended into the world of art with a ravishing exhibition of paintings conveying the exhilarating life of this great city in the 17th, 18th and 19th centuries, as well as a remarkable collection of objects from the ruins of Pompeii and Herculanaeum

For those still unable to find anything to appeal to them in the official festival there was, as always, rich pickings to be found on the fringe 1988 was a particularly busy year with over 400 companies mounting some 900 different shows ranging from the provocative 'alternative comedy' *Acts of Gross Indecency* to something called *The Tainted Honey of Homicidal Bees*

The most eagerly awaited production was Yukio Ninagawa's *The Tempest* and it certainly lived up to expectations Ninagawa has set the action on the island of Sado off the north west coast of Honshu, the main island of Japan, which was used as a place of exile during the medieval period It was here that Zeami (1363-1443), the brilliant actor, playwright and critic who established *noh* as the classical theatrical art of Japan, was banished in 1434, and during his years of exile wrote many *noh* plays. It was therefore only natural — indeed a masterstroke — to have the actors rehearsing an amateur *noh* play using the text of Shakespeare's *The Tempest* Doubts loom initially about how a troupe of amateur thespians can mount a thrilling storm scene, let alone get fully under the skin of the characters and convincingly bring the story with its combination of the natural and supernatural to life; but these reservations are soon dispelled as the watching cast and crew quickly become enmeshed in this drama on the uses and abuses of power.

Usurped from his dukedom by his brother Antonio, after having neglected his government of Milan, Prospero was cast abroad in a leaky boat with three-year-old daughter Miranda, but were saved. For twelve years they have lived on the island, where Prospero is master to Ariel, a spirit of the air. Now, by coincidence, a tempest causes Antonio, the King of Naples, Alonso his brother, Sebastian, his son Ferdinand, two other lords, Gonzallo, an honest old counsellor, Trinculo, a jester, and Stefano,

a drunken butler to be washed ashore. Misunderstandings and complications ensue until love and reason triumph.

Ninagawa has — as he did previously with his magnificent *Medea* — created a stunning spectacle without sacrificing the richness and power of the text. The oft quoted 'We are such stuff as dreams are made on' takes visual form when one character draws a sword and his adversary produces a bunch of confetti and by an Ariel flying across the stage on wires or perched on the roof of the island dwelling while an enchanting soprano voice tantalises us from the wings. My only quibble was that the sur-titles were somewhat hazy and difficult to read, placed as they were well above the stage. But this was a small price to pay for a production which managed to be boldly imaginative and exhilarating, weaving a special magic all its own.

Japan triumphed again two nights later when the Matsuyama Ballet staged their exquisite *Giselle*. The ballet is set in feudal Germany. Giselle, a peasant girl, lives with her mother, in a mountain village, and is loved by Hilarion, a local forester. However, Count Albrecht visits the village from time to time, disguised as an ordinary villager, for he too is deeply in love with Giselle who returns his affections. But he is betrothed to the Duke's daughter, Bathilde. It is Albrecht's love for Giselle that keeps her alive, so when betrayed by him her life simply drains away. Yoko Morishita is a delightful Giselle and often seems like a feather floating through the air, tip-toeing through the role with grace and agility. Tetsutaro Shintwu (who also directed the production) gives a strong interpretation as Albrecht and Kazuhiro Kanea is a no less impressive Hilarion. But the real surprise was the Matsuyama corps de ballet: their arm movements, lines and formations were in perfect unison and simply breathtaking to watch.

What is your idea of utopia? An island where there is no government, no crime, no punishment — and no religion perhaps? Well, this is the situation presented in James Bridie's far from ideal comedy *Holy Isle* which was staged by the Brunton Theatre Company to mark the centenary of the author. The play was first produced by Alastair Sim at the Arts Theatre in London in 1942 and sadly appears dated today. The argument it propounds is between two very different imaginary communities off the north coast of Scotland, when King Arthur was at Camelot. Bridie's main aim is to show, through his tale of a young seafarer who discovers a utopian island, the impact of a so-called civilisation on a primitive society, whose simple rustic life keeps their minds on decent essentials. The 'ponderers', the name of the inhabitants of Holy Isle, have no king, no bishop, but a mere guardian of their way of life, referred to simply as 'She'. The set is simplicity itself — a pile of stones that fulfil their function when a fire is lit, and a large white canvas that presumably represents the seashore. The characters serve as cyphers to deliver Bridie's own philosophy about leadership and power — 'If a people cannot protect itself against pestilence, then I doubt if a government will', 'no man is good enough to be another man's servant' But the play is distinguished by an

intellectual wit and touches of poetry ('a distant island ringed by shining sea horses, stands on feet of bronze, on its ancient head coloured blossoms fall') The atmospheric qualities are enhanced by a strong sense of ensemble playing — Vivien Heilbron is particularly good as Queen Margause — and by highlighting certain sections with music. Cut from its 3¼ hour length to a mere two hours, this light-hearted piece might well have won me over; as it is, it becomes repetitive and ponderous.

Better, though, a play with some charm than with none at all, as was the case with the Royal Exchange Theatre Company's production of Shakespeare's *A Midsummer Night's Dream* An ill-conceived venture with some not very distinguished performances, this was a dream to forget!

One of apartheid's most bitterly resented acts was the bulldozing by the South African government 22 years ago of the vibrant multi-racial District Six neighbourhood of Cape Town. Thousands of coloured residents were displaced to far-flung townships on the orders of P. W. Botha, now President of the Republic, and in the early eighties it was a barren windswept no-mans land. As a lament to that lost community — which pointed the way to how the country could have developed — the Baxter Theatre of Cape Town brought their lively show entitled simply *District Six — The Musical* The tenuous storyline, narrated through the eyes of an old blind former resident, centres on the conflict of two brothers, one a ghetto gangland leader, concerned with the destruction of the area and the other a musician, more interested in pursuing his own burgeoning career Written and directed by David Kramer and Taliep Peterson, a white Afrikaner and a mixed race musician who was raised in District Six, the production — which has already been seen in Cape Town and Johannesburg — tries to make up for in energy, rhythm and movement what it lacks in punch As an attack on apartheid it is very tame — its message is universal for any community that has suffered a similar fate But with music ranging from ballad to *kwela, mbaqanga* to jazz, with a dash of capella harmony thrown in and performed with gusto by a talented and committed cast — the dancing is especially scintillating — the show is consistently entertaining and serves a valuable purpose in reminding us of yet another of the South African government's acts of barbarism.

The focal point of the World Theatre Season was the Neapolitan company Il Sipario di Mario Scarpetta's *Miseria e Nobilita* ('Rich Man, Poor Man . . .') by Eduardo Scarpetta. This middle-class comedy contrasts the lives of the poor who are for ever bickering over the money and food they never seem to have and live squalidly in a crowded tenement, with the nouveau riche. An aristrocrat hires slum dwellers to pose as his relations in order to win the hand in marriage of a ballerina, the daughter of a cook. Directed by and starring Mario Scarpetta, a direct descendant of the author and a famous name in Neapolitan theatre, this turns out to be a rather disappointing evening — an amusing but slender farce whose motto is that you must have both rich and poor to make society tick.

The two major discoveries which gave me more pleasure than some of the larger mainstream events in the festival were *Daniel and the Lions* and

Confessions of a Nightingale Daniel, which was performed in the historic Greyfriars Kirk, was a spectacular reconstruction of a 12th century church play, based on the Old Testament tale of the Feast of Belshazzar, his overthrow by the army of Darius, the ominous writing on the wall, and Daniel's miraculous escape from the lions Presented with style and panache by the New York Ensemble for Early Music in Latin, this absorbing liturgical drama provided an off beat and stimulating piece of theatre.

Confessions of a Nightingale, by Charlotte Chandler and Ray Stricklyn, was a witty anecdotal one-man show from America on the grainy life of playwright Tennessee Williams, whom Ray Stricklyn impersonates to the bone. Emerging from a period of prolonged depression, the playwright explains that he has just flown in from Hollywood — 'I stayed too long, four hours!' As a young writer, his agent 'sold' him to MGM for 250 dollars a week, where he was expected to write 'sexy situations for Lana Turner' but, he adds, his dialogue 'was beyond the great lady's comprehension — I only used words with two syllables' With the money he earned he was able to write *The Glass Menagerie* He confides in us about his sexual relationships — his long-time, live-in lover Frank had died of cancer and afterwards Williams suffered a breakdown when he felt abandoned He admits he is a compulsive writer — 'Writing is my life, failure my death When I can't write I am filled with self-loathing . I believe it is the writer's responsibility to put the essence of his experience in his work' With only minimal props — typewriter, table and chairs, artificial flowers, chest and a jug of what looks like bourbon — Stricklyn perfectly conveys the charisma of the man Through details of voice, gesture and movement, he captures the spirit of defiance and vulnerability of Williams, as well as his great sense of humour 'I am really very puritanical about sexual relationships in the theatre', he quips 'I like Dorothy Parker's great line — "scratch an actor and you will find an actress".'

Because of the postal strike the following section contains eight pages instead of twelve

Literary Supplement

QUARTERLY FICTION REVIEW

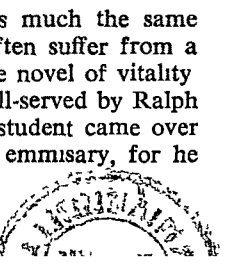
by Rosalind Wade

Café de Paris Nicholas Wollaston Constable £10 95 *Repetition* Peter Handke (translated by Ralph Manheim) Methuen £12 95 *Baumgartner's Bombay* Anita Desai Heinemann £10 95 *The Assignment* Frederich Durrenmatt (translated by Joel Agee) Cape £9 95 *At Risk* Alice Hoffman Macmillan £10 95 *Life Class* Monique Charlesworth Hamish Hamilton £11 95

The summer publishing season has ended with a spate of reasonably interesting novels, although without indicating any particular new trends Many writers still seem to be obsessed with the events or the aftermath of World War II In *Café de Paris* Nicholas Wollaston has chosen for his theme the determination of service men and women on leave to enjoy themselves come what may, disregarding any advice to take shelter from the destructive fury of Hitler's bombs

The delightful cover illustration by Norman Coates sets the scene perfectly in a rather necessary way, for how many people with bomb anecdotes to recount remember the night of 8 March 1941 when the fashionable pre-war night club, Café de Paris, caught a horrific blast? Many of the closely packed dancers and diners — 34 all told — died or were horribly maimed, although some miraculously escaped to carry on with their lives and the war effort, soon to forget the horror that struck so early on Nicholas Wollaston chooses a proved and effective method of embellishing the stark facts — sketching in the backgrounds of a selection of those men and women who congregated in the deep underground restaurant (a bearpit once, so legend has it) — underlining the indiscriminate manner in which some lives are lost and others saved in a disaster of this kind It also serves to reinforce the memories of what life was like in the unequal thirties when few people, rich or poor, had any clear premonition of what was going to become of them, nor did they seem to care, so that 8th March at the Café de Paris might be compared with the last hours of the Titanic Inevitably, with a 'group' structure, the spotlight veers randomly to present a gallery of those unfortunates who foregathered in the ill-fated basement venue, some more convincing than others. By far the most diverting is the poet, Felix Bayne His youthful apprenticeship at an Irish mansion as tutor to a teenage scion of the house provides a revealing glimpse of thirties Ireland, the broad river, flowing unpolluted through verdant pastures, the baronial interior and formal mode of life, not forgetting an initiation ceremony with a glamorous employer and a persuasive footman, but these cameos of an almost forgotten decade rightly remain subordinated to the central theme of the novel

Repetition serves as a reminder that family life remains much the same regardless of nationality or scene Translations of fiction often suffer from a too literal rendering and stilted prose which tends to rob the novel of vitality In *Repetition,* the Austrian-born Peter Handke has been well-served by Ralph Manheim, and the reminiscences of a Southern Carinthian student came over with heart-warming sincerity Filip Kobal is in a sense an emmisary, for he



has been despatched by his family to search for his 'missing' brother, Gregor, last heard of at the end of his training at an agricultural college in Maribor Filip has little money for the journey He expects to live rough, eating meagrely and sleeping under the open sky. At nineteen, this poses no problem

When, 26 years later, he recalls his experiences, memories and impressions of home and village predominate The Kobal household was similar to many others in that a powerful patermilias, in the pursuit of his own selfish whims, disregarded the interests of his wife and children The spasmodically active mother, the uncommunicative sister, the father given to long vengeful silences brought about by work frustration, eroded what might otherwise have been a fulfilling and tranquil domestic scene There are fascinating glimpses of rural characters The women, 'always on their feet indoors, actually running from table to stove, from stove to sideboard, from sideboard to table it was a clumsy dancing, the dancing of women who had been servants for many years' From these small examples, *Repetition* provides much valuable information about East European hierarchy, yet it is for the description of a young man's unaccompanied journey through Austria, Slovenia and Yugoslavia that the novel is most memorable The lasting impression is of forests, valleys, mountains and overgrown footpaths, populated by animals and birds, blessedly free from pollution and the consequences of man-made civilisation

Frederick Durrenmatt also explores some untamed landscapes, although his unidentified Arab country may be more familiar through films and TV news The formula for *The Assignment,* ably translated by Joel Agee, is one often used — a journey into savage wilds to discover the truth about a mysterious crime In this case the Swiss novelist, Durrenmatt, with many publications and translations to his credit and at least one memorable play, *The Visit,* lays on the sinister overtones with a heavy hand F, a young woman otherwise unnamed, specialises in documentary films of an unusual nature and so readily accepts an invitation to proceed with her technical crew on an unchartered mission to discover how it came about that Tina, wife of wealthy Otto von Lambert, was found raped and murdered at the Al-Hakin ruin. Intrepid F drives on when more cautious documentary-makers might have turned back She appears to care only for her 'art', and indeed does eventually achieve a breakthrough when a singular red fur coat, supposedly worn by the victim, is discovered by her in a second-hand store F acquires the garment and wears it, perhaps to give better verisimilitude to her detection work, although thereby placing herself in even greater danger *The Assignment* is no ordinary whodunnit, and the sub-title . . 'on the Observing of the Observer' alerts us to watch out for a deeper philosophical meaning F faces some ugly moments before extricating herself, following the revelation that Tina was not murdered, simply gone missing, while the true victim was a Danish woman, unfortunately wearing the ill-fated red coat! Film, videos and recorded voices play their part in this most up-to-date of thrillers, presented at a breathless pace in one-hundred-and-twenty-nine unparagraphed pages What, if anything, can it all mean? Perhaps nothing more than a military skirmish in the inhospitable desert, backed by superpowers, in the course of which there is ample scope for cruelty and corruption.

With *Baumgartner's Bombay* we are back with World War II nostalgia, although there is much more to this finely written novel than flashbacks to Nazi-occupied territories The scene is modern Bombay — not the city for sightseers but the sleazy setting for an existence devoid of luxuries, even necessities Predictably, the Indian author, Anita Desai, knows the background

against which the once wealthy German-born Hugo Baumgartner pursues his modest round of conversation, care of his cats and the search for sustenance. Other characters come and go, cast in various moulds, yet linked by their private poverty If the descriptions of flight from Nazi oppression have a sense of *déja vu* they are nonetheless freshly and vividly presented, yet the narrative does not remain locked in these all-too-familiar situations. A fellow German, impetuous and youthful, arrives upon the scene and concern for his problems breathes new life into Baumgartner, with unexpected results

Sooner or later there had to be a novel about the 'innocent' victims of AIDS and who better to deal with this poignant and delicate subject than the talented young American writer, Alice Hoffman In *At Risk* the situation has its origins in the days before blood-test screening, when a transfusion could transmit the disease without anyone being aware of an infection Eleven-year-old Amanda Farrell had been given blood after a routine appendicitis operation and so her family had no knowledge of the monster lurking just below the surface until, eventually, the symptoms revealed themselves and were correctly diagnosed And then began the long nightmare, as seen through the eyes of a typically average American family Polly, the wife and mother, is a part-time photographer, Ivan, the husband, engaged in scientific research, three years younger than Amanda is Charlie, an exuberant eight-year-old, and in the background are grandparents, not very congenial to Polly yet eventually playing a useful part in coping with the long-drawn tragedy

Amanda is a promising athlete Bravely, despite growing disabilities, she persists with her training, aided by a loyal and dedicated coach Loyalty and support are what the Farrell family most urgently require, for when news of an AIDS victim in their midst seeps through into the school and town community, fear takes over from compassion and the Farrells face ostracism Yet they retain some measure of support. The family paedetrician becomes increasingly involved in the case, to an extent which almost threatens to disrupt his marriage, while the headmistress of the school receives threats of dismissal for refusing to ban Amanda from the classroom

Everyone understands, and the reader knows only too well, that there can be no happy ending This is made tolerable and credible by the authenticity and detail with which Alice Hoffman has conveyed the small community and its background Only the tragic finale is glossed over, perhaps wisely, and the final declaration by young Charlie that he will never forget his sister so long as he lives, is all the more poignant for the omission of a deathbed scene Perhaps the only error of judgement is the end-note giving an address to which donations for AIDS research may be sent This would seem to present *At Risk* as a documentary, rather than an independent work of imaginative fiction

With so much of current fiction rather lack-lustre in style and content, it is rewarding to come upon a comparatively new talent Monique Charlesworth displays in her second novel, *Life Class,* a welcome brilliance and clarity of insight into the minds of a group of slightly off-beat characters

The strangely named Ruffey is a successful painter He has avoided marriage, coasting along with a number of 'affairs', until he meets Annette, young enough to be his daughter, a *belle laide* brimful of energy with which to tackle any problems which may arise from the new union Ruffey decides to take his bride on honeymoon to Java, where he had spent much of his childhood, and while visiting one of the main tourist attractions they encounter John Ridinghouse, a somewhat eccentric looking person of Annette's generation and once her fellow student From this brief sighting and a later conversation Ruffey con-

ceives an obsessional jealousy of the man which mars the remainder of the holiday and, on return to England, prompts him to attempt an investigation of one who he wrongly considers to be his rival There is little enough to be discovered what there is comes through the enigmatic and repellent Professor Pie, who once had the privilege of tutoring the gifted pupil who perversely left university without taking a degree Meanwhile, John Ridinghouse himself has strangely disappeared into the Far Eastern hinterland Clearly, he poses no threat, and yet Ruffey soldiers on with his self-destructive mission He leaves home to take up residence in a sleazy boarding house where Ridinghouse once lodged — and even returns to the Far East in the hope of uncovering some evidence of a liaison There he tracks down his *bête noir,* and in a confused and obscure conversation exposes the very heart and core of the extraordinary man's philosophy Comprehension is not easy, and the subtle relationship between Pie and Ridinghouse as a final solution all but eludes any common-sense explanation of what both are trying to achieve

Also Received

Ghosts. Eva Figes Hamish Hamilton £10 95

Here is a novel of enormous imagination and enterprise written in short paragraphs which convey thought and impressions as they filter through the mind's awareness Not for the reader who demands clear, consecutive narrative, *Ghosts* stands in a class of its own — a creative achievement not to be missed

The Silence in the Garden William Trevor The Bodley Head. £9 95

Once again William Trevor has provided a thoroughly satisfying novel, with an Irish setting, taking in history and contemporary events as, for instance, the presence and activities of the IRA *The Silence in the Garden* is laced with mystery, unfolded against the events of one woman's long and eventful life

Prisoners of Jebs Ken Saro-Wiwa Saros International Publishers £10 95

The Nigerian writer, Ken Saro-Wiwa, has already published a number of short stories as well as children's books and a novel Witty and ascerbic, he can be relied on to demolish sacred cows and prejudices It was an original idea to take as a broad structure for *Prisoners of Jebs* the inmates of a prison Africans of all dispositions and professions were incarcerated there and their stories reflect the broader issues affecting some countries on the African continent, Nigeria in particular

Children of the Arbat Anatoli Tybakov (translated by Harold Shukan) Century Hutchinson £12 95

This vast tome, 693 pages, must be regarded as something of a publisher's scoop There could have been a sense of familiarity about the detailed review of life before and during the Stalin era as seen through the eyes of young Sasha Pankratove, a run-of-the-mill student who, on account of a real or imagined indiscretion, was 'exiled' for a number of years Side issues are Stalin's thoughts and fantasies and relationship with his rival, Sergei Kirov Anatal Rybakov, now an elderly man still writing and working, delayed publication of the mammoth novel for twenty years in order that it might first be read in his native Russia

NON FICTION REVIEWS

POETRY AND PUSHPIN

Philosophical Tales Jonathan Rée Methuen. £5 95

'Between poetry and truth', said Jeremy Bentham, 'there is a great opposition' To Plato, one of the greatest poets of the western world, poets should be regarded with the deepest suspicion and, indeed, ought to be banished from the ideal republic Both these philosophers saw poetry as the portrayal of fictitious aspects of life, especially moral life, and poets could only therefore be false persuaders 'The game of pushpin', wrote Bentham, 'is always innocent it were well could the same be asserted of poetry' Both Plato and Bentham ultimately recanted and found diverse ways of coming to terms with their own evident poetic figurative notions but there has been perennial debate through the ages on the possible relationship between philosophy and literature The use of metaphor in language is universal and is necessarily common to both

Jonathan Rée addresses this problem in a refreshing way His book, *Philosophical Tales,* two-edged in its title, approaches the imaginative works of many famous philosophers, beginning with an illuminating analysis of the careful methods of Descartes who boasted, in his youthful arrogance, in 1619 that he would by taking thought be able to create 'a totally new science' Just as Bentham three hundred years later 'created' his *Chrestomathia* (The Encyclopaedical Tree), a genealogy of Art and Science, so Descartes proposed his thirty-six 'Rules for the Direction of the Mind' which he never finished writing Later attempting 'Elements of Metaphysics', he failed to conclude these too. The puzzle for the writer of all such comprehensive schemes is that of his own part in the plan It is inevitably spoken in his 'own' voice, so who or what is he? Descartes brought to the task of theoretical writing the invention of a narrator who could buttonhole the reader without seeming himself to intrude. Thus the stripper off of masks hid behind a new disguise whilst disposing of the subterfuges of other poets and dramatists Was he, then, philosopher or poet? Certainly he was a dramatist

These and other devices are engagingly exposed by Jonathan Rée whose text, whilst full of serious argument showing the close relationship between philosophical forms and other modes of literary expression, places in a new light the whole dispute Most frequently the contributions to it have come from literary theorists who have demonstrated that in serious novels and plays the authors may manifest some philosophical truth in action, through situation or character The fruitful sources of them have been the most obvious, in the works of Shakespeare, Dostoievsky and Dickens, with Tolstoy occupying an intermediate position between artists and moral philosophers Dickens's character Gradgrind has, for example, been seen as exemplifying nineteenth century utilitarian principles of thrift taken to extremes And Dostoievsky's treatment of the final meeting between Raskolnikov and the prostitute in *Crime and Punishment* is often brought into an argument on morality, whether punishment or pity should take precedence in the operation of justice Dostoievsky and Dickens are usually thought to have arrived at their characterisations by a process of artistic insight or by an intuitive leap of the imagination That assertion leads directly, however, to a question about the intellectual status of the most revolutionary intuitive leap of all, that of Descartes himself, to the

conviction that his own mental activity was the ultimate logical proof of his physical presence in the world, 'I think therefore I am'

Jonathan Rée takes Descartes and his years of apparently 'failed' analytic work as a starting point He looks at the literary techniques of Hegel, at the concept of the 'history of philosophy' in Hume and Kant and at the views on literature of John Stuart Mill, Kierkegaard and Nietzsche as well as those of Bentham The rise of modern phenomenology is chronicled as a bridge not only between the French heirs of Descartes and the Anglo-Saxon empirical school but also between Nietzsche, Husserl, Heidegger and modern French linguistic philosophers like the influential Derrida and the 'deconstructionists' Indeed, the final chapter of his book provides an indispensable bibliography and some pertinent criticism of Derrida's heirs who mistakenly (like Christopher Norris) assume too readily that 'the most basic assumptions of philosophic reason' are refuted by the fact that philosophy, like every other form of discourse, is constituted by metaphors 'As far as systematic application of literary theory to philosophy as a whole is concerned', says Rée finally, 'everything remains to be done'

The section of the book called 'The Story of Philosophy' is useful, true and entertaining in a style which most writers of philosophy can only hope to emulate Both specialist and general reader will appreciate it whilst learning a great deal about drama, narrative and philosophy

BETTY ABEL

WORLD MONETARY PROBLEMS

External Debt, definition, coverage and methodology, Report by international working group of World Bank, *International Monetary Fund, Bank for International Settlement,* OECD, Paris 1988 *Financing and external debt of developing countries 1987 Survey,* OECD, Paris

Relations between the Industrial West, the so-called Third World and now increasingly the Soviet Bloc or Comecon countries, are increasingly determined by the ever-more complex debt problem It took a team of top experts of the four international bodies four years to produce the report on external debts and they only managed to produce a 'core definition' But it is admitted that this is not a 'unique definition of debts for all purposes 'Gross external debt' it says 'is the amount, at any given time, of disbursed and outstanding contractual obligations of residents of a country to non-residents, to repay principal, with or without interest, or to pay interest, with or without principal'

This is also important for inter-Common Market relations because a foreigner is considered a resident if he stays more than one year in a country Another aspect of the core definition is that equity securities are not considered an external debt since they 'do not provide the right to predetermined income or to a fixed sum on dissolution of the incorporate enterprise'. There is no contractual obligation in the core definition and therefore no external debt to foreign shareholders

The first report lists 12 items that constitute financial assets and liabilities; but all over the place exernal debts are being 'rescheduled', arrears in interest turned into capital, new loans granted to pay interest Then there is the basic difference between government loans and loans by banks. There is also the little known difference between a loan to buy equipment, an oil rigg, for instance, which is an external debt, and an 'operational lease' which is not, since on paper the equipment can be returned to the supplier. Again, an external debt

producing transaction is one where a border is crossed Statistical assessments of external debts are not made easier when multi-national companies can transfer vast sums from one country to another within their organisation

The core definition raises the extremely tricky and sensitive problem of what an external debt was in the EEC Internal Free Market of 1993 Will the debts of all 12 member countries be treated as one external debt? According to EEC tables the gross debt of Greece, now in the Brussels Chair, has risen from 36 4 ECU points in 1982 to 65 0 in 1988, that of the Irish Republic from 96 2 to 145 0 while that of Britain has fallen slightly from 57 8 to 55 7 points

The second report on Third World debts shows that there is really no Third World in economic terms, there are the really poor Sub-Saharan countries and there are South Korea and Taiwan with a joint 30 billion current account surplus In South-East Asia only the Philippines are a real problem Low Income and Middle Income countries, like Argentina, have to be treated quite differently The fall of the US dollar has made interest and capital payments more easy for some while the fall of commodity prices has made it more difficult at the same time. Again, when austerity programmes implied devaluation the payment of external debts became harder and appeals for re-scheduling more intense

The dangers for the weaker Third World countries are spelt out in carefully chosen code terms Monetary financing of deficits means printing money OECD says that major debtors have still not returned to sustained growth and creditworthiness after having made adjustments because they have not been able to solve 'the domestic fiscal problem posed by servicing dents in a stable, sustainable way', in other words people do not accept the necessary taxes

The report's introduction ends with saying that the struggle of the debtor countries 'is a struggle to reform the organisation of their own economic life — to reformulate policies and institutional arrangements in a way which leads to a more productive economy and greater social welfare and equity, which often means discarding economic models adopted in the past and resisting special interests which benefitted from those models'. Mikhail Gorbachev is trying just that for a country that has been sliding into a Third World situation One can learn a great deal from these two reports

L MURAY

THE FOUNDER OF INTERNATIONAL PEN

Mrs Sapho The Life of C. A Dawson Scott (Mother of PEN) by Marjorie Watts Foreword by Francis King, CBE Duckworth £12 95

The mystery remains as to why certain people, despite unpropitious circumstances attain notoriety or even worldwide fame This was the case with Amy Dawson, born 1865, a child of incompatible parents and subjected to the most haphazard and erratic education· yet her keen intellect and innate determination to 'get things done' led her to found International PEN in 1921 Now, her daughter, Marjorie Watts, first secretary of PEN, has compiled a detailed chronicle of the events which led to the birth of an association of writers with centres in almost every country in the world

Amy, or as she preferred to be known, 'Sapho', was a young middle-aged matron at the relevant time, mother of three and wife of Dr Scott (Scottie) Behind her lay a remarkably successful career as a poet and novelist, although later it became fashionable to denigrate her works of fiction Many of them grew out of her long love affair with the then unspoiled Cornwall She had

spent much time in the Duchy, living rough, entertaining the famous in Spartan conditions.

Eventually, Sapho wished it to be accepted that the inspiration for PEN came to her while walking on the Cornish moors, yet Marjorie Watts reveals that the overall idea evolved from many sources, not least as a natural successor to the Tomorrow Club where, under Sapho's general direction, leading authors of the day were pleased to lecture on their craft Equally clear from the author's honest assessments is that PEN would never have developed its enduring qualities without the mature guidance of its first President, John Galsworthy An unlikely pair to ride in tandem yet J G 's energetic dedication to the cause and Sapho's boundless energy were successful where other administrations might have failed

The early records are perhaps the most enthralling section of *Mrs Sapho,* although the later stages, when H. G Wells had succeeded Galsworthy as President and World War II cast its clouds on the horizon, are possibly the more important That PEN, from then on under the leadership of distinguished officers and staff, survived the testing time says much for the original basic constitution, pledging members to uphold the principle of free speech even when under threat of persecution or exile

Not everyone eligible to do so joined PEN during the early years There were people who did not appreciate Sapho's sometimes abrasive style of government Yet, as the quotes and tributes show, they were in a minority Analysing the career of her remarkable if occasionally exasperating parent, Marjorie Watts displays commendable objectivity, and Francis King, at present International President, offers a personal appreciation of an Association which has benefitted considerably from his own involvement

ROSALIND WADE

SHORTER REVIEWS

Final Edition (Hogarth Press £5.95) E F Benson gave this, the last volume of his autobiography, to his publisher ten days before he died, on the 29th of February 1940 Now reprinted alongside his incomparable 'Mapp and Lucia' novels about the local society of Rye (called Tilling), it contains an excellent new introduction by Hugo Vickers The author looks back on London literary life where, as a son of the Archbishop of Canterbury in Queen Victoria's day, he held something of a privileged position and could later recall many amusing incidents Late in life Benson settled down in the former home of Henry James, Lamb House at Rye, and eventually became Mayor of that town The book forms the most varied of his entertaining memoirs

The Painting Room (Hutchinson Poets £5 95) Kevin Crossley's latest collection of poems is a celebration of East Anglian art and craft and especially of the countryside made famous by John Constable In it he is concerned with the artist's business of making and naming, expressed well in such poems as 'Sounds' and 'Naming' Also commemorated is his delight in being a father, in 'Oenone in January' and 'Do you, or I, or anyone know?' History fascinates him too and he finds evidence of past lives in country scenes, in Walsham and Porlock He is a poet to be read with attention.

The Dragonfly Press

'Therefore Imagine'

The works of Clemence Dane

DAVID WALDRON SMITHERS

1988 is the centenary of the birth of Clemence Dane talented Kentish playwright, author, critic, novelist, artist and sculptor This book describes all her known works and includes nine black and white photographs

Copies obtainable from The Dragonfly Press, 2 Charlton Cottages, Barden Road, Speldhurst, Tunbridge Wells, Kent TN3 0LH
Telephone 0892 862395 Price £8 50

COLLIN STREET BAKERY

L WILLIAM McNUTT, JR, President
P O BOX 79, CORSICANA, TEXAS 75110, U S A
Fax 2148726879 Telex 730730 Cable 'Fruit Cakes'

. . . SINCE 1896

Yes, we've been around a long time! William McKinley was President of the United States, and Texas was still a frontier area when Collin Street Bakery was founded in 1896 Only 2½ million people lived in Texas, 15 million today Dallas was 39,000, 1¾ million today A young baker named August Weidmann, newly arrived in America from Wiesbaden, Germany, found the financial backing of Tom McElwee, local cotton buyer and opera house owner, and Collin Street Bakery began business

. . . NOW IN 1988

The De Luxe Fruit Cakes are sold all over the world Please write by airmail or Telex orders and enquiries for direct postal delivery

NewDemocrat

A special subscription offer to readers of the Contemporary Review.

The New Democrat magazine is the only independent magazine aimed at the centre parties in Britain. We aim to provide a forum for ideas and personalities for anyone who wants to build a non-socialist alternative to Thatcherism. Future issues of New Democrat will explore the new horizons. In particular, activists will be contributing to a grassroots debate on the shape of the future society we are trying to create.

The New Democrat is pleased to offer a special introductory subscription to readers of the Contemporary Review.

For only £12 00 you will receive the New Democrat by post for the next two years (ten issues) Just send your cheque or postal order – or quote your Access number – to the address given below.

FREE BOOK OFFER!

In addition, we are offering our subscribers, absolutely free, a copy of Roy Jenkins' book ***Partnership of Principle,*** published by the Radical Centre/Secker and Warburg, retail price £5 95

We only have a limited stock –so hurry!

Write now to:
New Democrat (CR), 9 Poland Street, London W1V 3DG

Please make cheques etc (£ sterling only) payable to Letterhurst Ltd.

UK subscribers	£12 00
Overseas	£16 00 (Europe/surface)
	£24 00 (airmail)

Printed by MANDEVILLE PRESS, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ, and published by the CONTEMPORARY REVIEW CO LTD, 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG
Telephone 01-831 7791 All business matters should be addressed to the publishers

Contemporary Review

122nd YEAR OF PUBLICATION

NOVEMBER 1988

BACKGROUND TO THE PRESIDENTIAL CAMPAIGN 1988
David Thomas

THE NEW AFGHAN MILITARY BALANCE
Karan Sawhny

IMPRINTING ON THE MIND
Anthony Harrigan

INTERNATIONAL AND RACIALLY PURE — JAPAN'S THEORY AND PRACTICE
C. C. Aronsfeld

and other articles together with an eight-page Literary Supplement

£1.30

Contemporary Review

incorporating The Fortnightly

November 1988 Vol. 253 No. 1474 Founded 1866

Contents

		Page
Background to the Presidential Campaign 1988	David Thomas	**225**
The New Afghan Military Balance	Karan Sawhny	**232**
UNESCO — A Way Out of the Crisis	Niksa Nikola Solijan	**237**
The Next President of Mexico	Martin Needler	**241**
Licence Reform: Less Regulation, More Individual Restraint	Melanie Powell	**243**
Imprinting on the Mind	Anthony Harrigan	**248**
International and Racially Pure — Japan's Theory and Practice	C. C. Aronsfeld	**252**
The Reluctant Countryman: Robert Herrick	Donald Williams Bruce	**256**
Summerscope on the South Bank	Dilys Hartog	**266**
Edinburgh Festival Fringe 1988	Emma Dyer	**270**
LITERARY SUPPLEMENT		**273**
Frank Longford, John Biggs-Davison, Esmond Wright, Richard Mullen, Molly Tibbs.		
SHORTER REVIEWS		**279**

Editor:
ROSALIND WADE, O.B.E.

Associate Editor:
BETTY ABEL

Editorial Advisers:
PROFESSOR ESMOND WRIGHT
PROFESSOR PAUL WILKINSON

Fine Arts Correspondent:
ERNLE MONEY

Music Correspondent:
DAVID FINGLETON

Finance Director:
LEONARD SKIPP

© 1988. Published monthly by the Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG, England, and printed in England by Mandeville Press, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ. U.S. Mailing Agent: Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 2323 Randolph Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Second Class postage paid at Rahway N.J. Annual subscription (including postage); U.K. £18.50, U.S.A. and Canada $65.00. Rates for all other countries on application. Copies can be sent by airmail outside U.S. and Canada: extra costs given on request. U.S. Postmaster: please send all address corrections to 'Contemporary Review', c/o Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Contemporary Review. (ISSN/0010/7565)

Contemporary Review

Founded 1866 **incorporating The Fortnightly**

November 1988 **Vol. 253** **No. 1474**

BACKGROUND TO THE PRESIDENTIAL CAMPAIGN 1988

by David Thomas

CAMPAIGN '88 comes at the end of an administration that eight years ago marked the first ideological shift in American politics since the Great Depression The Reagan presidency challenged the New Deal liberal establishment which for a half century had constituted the political mainstream defined as the dominant course of public policy based on popular consensus In 1980 Ronald Reagan campaigned against what conservatives saw as an entrenched welfare state whose powerful bureaucracy and excessively high tax rates were crippling industry and stifling economic growth He also inveighed against a declining American defence capability said to be encouraging Soviet expansion A strong element in the Reagan movement, called the New Right, expressed displeasure over what it perceived as a moral decline in the country caused in part by such landmark Supreme Court decisions as those which prohibited public school prayers and legalised abortions on demand in all of the states

Upon his inauguration in 1981, Reagan learned that the welfare state was so firmly established as to be untouchable The power to reduce the size of the federal bureaucracy was beyond the reach of the presidency. Reagan's proposal to dismantle the newly established Department of Education, for example, was vehemently opposed even by leading Republican members of the United States Senate, now controlled by the president's party. Conservatives in the Congress were unable to pass on to the states proposed constitutional amendments that would have overturned Supreme Court decisions on school prayer and abortions Efforts to make significant reductions in social spending were unsuccessful in part because of the Democratic Party in continuing control of the United States House of Representatives It was soon apparent that changing the course of the political mainstream could not be achieved by a direct assault on the New Deal establishment.

In spite of its failure to achieve most of the important objectives on the conservative agenda, the Reagan Administration was in the end able to effect a significant change in the course of public policy at home and make significant diplomatic initiatives abroad With the support of southern conservative members of the House of Representatives, Reagan

pushed through Congress the largest tax cut in American history and launched a massive expansion of the defence establishment. The resulting budget deficits forced curtailment of any significant new social programmes while the military build-up persuaded the Soviets to negotiate startling reductions in nuclear armaments.

The apparent ending of the nuclear arms race and the elimination of an expanding welfare state are the important features of the 'Reagan Revolution' which forms the backdrop for Campaign '88 Those developments are affecting the course of campaign rhetoric and political debate. Republicans, for example, are now disinclined to emphasize the evils of communism abroad and the danger of an expanding welfare state at home. Democrats, on the other hand, no longer decry the horrors of nuclear war so often nor vigorously stress the need for more social spending Indeed, Campaign '88 constitutes a dramatic departure from the pattern of presidential politics of the last eight years when candidates and party platforms appealed to voters from the opposite ends of the ideological spectrum Now, the Reagan Revolution is having the unintended consequence of bringing both parties back toward the centre of the political spectrum where most of the presidential campaigns were fought between World War II and 1980

Historically, the most unusual feature of this year's contest is the emphasis both parties are placing on the South where the outcome of the election will probably be decided For many years the South was taken for granted by the Democrats and largely ignored by the Republicans. Blacks were for the most part disfranchised and whites, remembering the plight of their forebears after the Civil War, generally voted against Republicans With the coming of the Civil Rights movement, Blacks became politically active in their support of liberal Democratic presidents· Harry Truman, John Kennedy and Lyndon Johnson Southern whites, partially in revolt against the upsurge of Black power, shifted en masse to the Republicans in some national elections. No Democratic presidential candidate since World War II has carried the entire 'Solid South'. Only Jimmy Carter, a southern Democrat, was able to win most of the southern states but, even then, only in his first campaign of 1976 Four years later Reagan swept most of that section of the country

The Democratic loss of the South in presidential elections has been one of the important political developments in recent American history In addition to racial antipathies, the causes of that development include the southern whites' aversion to big labour, their opposition to liberal judicial decisions in criminal cases, the establishment of an overweening bureaucracy blamed on the Democrats and the perception of an abandonment of traditional values by left-wing politicians who appear to be dominant in that party Finally, southern whites tend to share the Republican Party's stronger emphasis on national defence and its greater hostility toward communism and the Soviet Union Because of these attitudes the Republicans now hopefully regard the South as a base of dependable support while the Democrats seek to change their party's image in order to win

back at least a portion of that section without which they have little chance of gaining the presidency in 1988.

Reflecting the new importance of the South, both parties chose cities in that section as sites for their national nominating conventions. The Democratic nominee, Michael Dukakis, chose Lloyd Bentsen, a United States Senator from Texas, as his vice-presidential running mate. That selection was an obvious calculation to improve the Democrats' chances of carrying Texas without which they have never won the presidency.

For the Democrats Atlanta had a special significance in their efforts to regain the South It was the birthplace of Martin Luther King who launched the Civil Rights movement that resulted in the enfranchisement of southern Blacks who have become that party's most dependable voting bloc. While Blacks are not numerous enough to win any southern states, a large turnout by them is essential. Their importance gave rise to the unusual participation in the Atlanta Convention by Jesse Jackson, the Black Civil Rights leader, who was able to share the spotlight with Dukakis and Bentsen.

The reason for that rise to prominence is Jackson's extraordinary popularity among American Blacks who for twenty years have looked for a successor to Martin Luther King While most of the Black leaders of the 1960's have pursued political careers in which their interests have been diffused, Jesse Jackson has maintained a focus on issues of interest to the nation's Black community Long after the turmoil of the Civil Rights movement had faded, Jackson was still the agitator for change By the 1980's a large national following prompted his entry into presidential politics Super Tuesday, originally intended to promote a white conservative Democrat, resulted in the elevation of Jackson as the principal rival to Dukakis.

From the time the Dukakis nomination was determined in May until the Atlanta Convention in July, there was mounting pressure on him to name the Civil Rights leader his vice-presidential running-mate Although selection of a runner-up as a running-mate has precedence, the choice of Jackson was never seriously considered by the Democrats in spite of their claim to the contrary. Jackson's disappointed following, about a fourth of the delegates, had to be appeased In an unprecedented manoeuvre to avoid a rupture, the Dukakis organisation made Jackson an unofficial member of the campaign leadership, supplying him with a plane and staff. Meanwhile, Jackson's address was scheduled for prime television coverage making it one of the emotional highlights of the convention. While the speech contained little substance, its cadence and rhythm were geared to an already hypnotised audience resulting in the most spell-binding oration of the Atlanta Convention. Finally, the underlying theme of the proceedings now became praise of Jesse Jackson as the symbol of harmony for the Democratic Party in Campaign '88. By the end of the Atlanta Convention, the Democratic Party had achieved its highest level of unity since World War II.

For only the seventh time since its beginning in 1856, the Republican

Party met after the Democrats About four weeks following the Atlanta Convention New Orleans got its opportunity to occupy the political spotlight The dramatic moment of the 1988 Republican Convention came on the first evening with the passing of the torch of party leadership from a colourful two-term president to a man of limited popular appeal It is an interesting fact of American political history that only two previous presidents, Andrew Jackson in 1836 and Dwight Eisenhower in 1960, were ever able to make such appearances President Reagan's speech in New Orleans was clearly a salient feature of Campaign '88. It listed the achievements of his adminstration, sounded the battle cries of the conservative movement, answered the critics at the Atlanta Convention and set the tone of the Republican campaign to retain the White House Much of the campaign has consisted of positive and negative responses to the Reagan speech in New Orleans So far as Republicans were concerned that campaign could not begin until the end of the President's address In fact, except for its constitutional prohibition, the President's renomination would have been quickly forthcoming

Reagan is only the second President affected by the twenty-second amendment to the United States Constitution. Sponsored by Republicans after World War II, that amendment was adopted in the 1950's in response to Franklin Roosevelt's third and fourth elections which were regarded as violations of the no-third term tradition established by George Washington's Farewell Address, one of the most revered documents of American history. Promoters of that amendment were haunted by the spectre of another popular two-term Democratic president who might be elected to a third term One of the ironies of recent politics is the fact that only Republicans, Dwight Eisenhower in 1960 and now Ronald Reagan, have been limited by that prohibition established thirty-five years ago. Without that limitation imposed by their own party, Republicans could now nominate a likely winner in the Fall election.

For George Bush the Reagan image accentuates the problem of establishing a personal identity and charting a political course that could be supported by a winning combination of voters. The grand design of Republican Convention planners was to direct attention to Bush's acceptance speech which would come at the end and afford the Vice-President an opportunity to come out from under the shadows of the Reagan presidency. Republicans hoped that the media would co-operate by drawing attention to that closing event. Unfortunately, the spotlight was diverted by unforeseen circumstances surrounding the selection of the Republican vice-president candidate.

In contrast to the Democrats this year, the Bush organisation chose not to reveal its choice of a running-mate until the convention The idea was that anticipation of that selection would enliven an otherwise dull proceeding While factors determining vice-presidential selection are never fully understood, it was obvious in New Orleans that Bush, perceived as an ideological centrist, would have to choose from among the right wing of the party which was organised and militant, Unfortunately, the pool

of viable candidates from the far right was small When the rather surprising announcement of Bush's selection of United States Senator Dan Quayle of Indiana was made, attention was shifted away from the Bush acceptance speech for the remainder of the Convention For the Republicans the timing was unfortunate because in the end their candidate did deliver an outstanding address which might have set him apart as a strong personality free from the restrictions of the Reagan presidency

Dan Quayle, whose selection dominated the media coverage of the Republican Convention, is a forty-one year old son of a wealthy publisher. Among the notable characteristics of his twelve year congressional career is strong support for national defence, an issue important in Republican strategy this year Looking about for some facet of the Senator's background that would be damaging to the Republicans, hostile journalists noted that during the Vietnam War Quayle joined the Indiana National Guard which is an important component of the nation's military reserve For political reasons few Guardsmen were mobilised for combat duty in the Vietnam War Enlistment in the National Guard, therefore, made one relatively safe from dangerous involvement in an unpopular war. Now, twenty years later the question is raised by the press as to whether non-combat military service during that war makes one unsuitable for holding public office After two decades the ordeal of Vietnam is still a festering wound on the body politic. Quayle is the first national political figure to feel the impact of that trauma. The net effect of that question on the outcome of the election will be difficult to determine

For about two weeks following the New Orleans convention, the Bush campaign seemed threatened by the Quayle affair A hostile press pounded away at the young Vice-Presidential candidate who seemed inexperienced and uncertain His affluent and privileged background made him vulnerable to charges of insensitivity and hypocrisy There was for a while discussion of a Quayle resignation reminiscent of the 1972 campaign in which the Democratic nominee, George McGovern, had to replace his running mate, Thomas Eagleton, whose earlier shock treatment therapy was reported soon after the nominating convention By the end of August, the uproar over Quayle subsided largely as a result of a public reaction against the press for its excessively negative reporting One poll showed that fifty-five percent of the voters believed that journalists had been 'unfair' in their handling of the Quayle story.

The adverse public response to the media in the Quayle story seemed to be a factor in a dramatic improvement in Vice-President Bush's standing in national polls At the time of the New Orleans convention Dukakis had, on the average, a seventeen point lead in surveys of national opinion. Bush's negative ratings were generally cited as being over forty per cent State-by-state polling indicated a huge advantage for the Democrats even in those areas where President Reagan won over sixty per cent of the vote in 1984 Suddenly the large gap between the candidates closed as Bush went on the attack immediately following the New Orleans Convention. By September 1, the traditional starting time for presidential campaigns,

leading pollsters called the Bush-Dukakis race dead even It is expected to be one of the closest elections in history.

Unlike Campaign '88, most presidential elections have been fairly predictable Before 1952 there were three periods during each of which an ascendant party won in the absence of dissension among its members When the New Deal coalition began to splinter after World War II, a Republican alignment based in part on the South won six of the following nine elections. It was also dependent on an increasing number of independent voters who would at times vote Democratic as they did, for example, against Barry Goldwater in 1964 or as they did for Jimmy Carter in 1976 following the Watergate scandal. The last two of those Republican victories, the Reagan landslides of 1980 and 1984, were based not only on that mass of independents, but on traditional Democratic blue collar workers repelled by a perception of weak leadership on the part of Jimmy Carter and an image of a doctrinaire liberal in the candidacy of Walter Mondale. Now in 1988 due to the uncertainty over the present disposition of independents and 'Reagan Democrats' and because of the strong effort by Dukakis and Bentson to win back the South, predicting the outcome in November is difficult

In the contest for the independent vote, the Republicans are relying on a strong economy expected to persist through the year The nation has experienced a six-year recovery from the last recession of 1982 Historically, Americans have tended to support an incumbent party in times of prosperity. Richard Nixon's narrow loss in 1960 to the Democrats was attributed in part to economic problems that had begun two years earlier. Another favourable omen for Bush is the relative calm that seems to be settling along the world's diplomatic horizon. Turbulence in foreign relations was a factor in the close defeat of the incumbent Democrats in 1968 Now with peace and prosperity, the Vice President should have a significant advantage Democratic responses stressing budget deficits, trade imbalances and the increase in low-paying service jobs are calculated to appeal to those who have not benefitted from the long recovery of the 1980's.

The real struggle in Campaign '88 is over control of the ideological centre. Victory in November will be won by the candidate who succeeds in holding that position. A leader of the moderate wing of the Republican Party, Bush is fending off efforts by the Democrats to move toward the middle of the political spectrum He depicts Dukakis as a doctrinaire liberal weak on national defence and soft on the problems of crime, a charge calculated to maintain the support of white southerners and 'Reagan Democrats' The Vice-President overcame the Democratic lead following the Atlanta Convention by repeating the charge that Dukakis furloughed a convicted murderer who subsequently committed rape in another state. Bush also stresses the Governor's opposition to sophisticated new weapons systems which, he says, are necessary for an adequate defence Finally, the Republicans are benefitting from frequent reminders of the fact that Dukakis vetoed a bill in the 1970's requiring Massachusetts

schools to begin classes by having students repeat the Pledge of Allegiance, a hundred year old statement composed by a Bostonian in celebration of the four hundredth anniversary of the discovery of America. Repetition of these charges is intended to keep Dukakis left of centre in the minds of the voters, a position that could be costly to the Democratic campaign

In a campaign fought in the centre where ideological appeals are shunned, the emphasis tends to be on *ad hominem* attacks. The personalities of the presidential candidates, while always strong factors in national elections, are unusually important in 1988. This campaign will be remembered for its prevalence of personal charges and counter-charges heard on television. In the end there will be a very high level of negative voting, the casting of ballots against rather than for one of the candidates. For the first time in American history the choice will be between two natives of New England neither of whom will have gained a significant personal following as in the case of a Kennedy or a Reagan The large, floating independent vote will be cast for the candidate who is considered most capable of keeping a strong economy and who will effect only those changes that are necessary. Bush seems mostly likely to fit that prescription. His winning margin, however, will be the South that is still trending toward the Republicans in national elections

While the outcome of the presidential race will be close, there is little doubt over the make-up of the next Congress One of the odd features of American politics, especially from the vantage point of parliamentary institutions, is the frequency of divided government in America, the control of the executive and legislature by opposing parties For over half the time since World War II, the presidency has been Republican at the same time that the House of Representatives has remained under the control of the Democrats. A peculiarity of American public affairs is the ability of the Republicans to win the White House and their almost hopeless inability to mount a serious challenge against the Democratic control of the House of Representatives. That puzzle, an explanation of which belongs elsewhere, will have been solved by the end of 1988. Divided government will persist for four more years

---

[David Thomas is Professor of Modern History at Oglethorpe University, Atlanta, USA He will contribute a further article early next year analysing the result of the election His article, 'The American Presidential Nomination', was published in No. 1469, Vol. 252]

THE NEW AFGHAN MILITARY BALANCE

by Karan Sawhny

AS the Soviet troop withdrawal from Afghanistan continues no one in Kabul seriously quarrels with the proposition that military power will be the final arbiter of that country's civil war When the Red army occupied Afghanistan in January 1980, the 21 month old *Saur* (April) Revolution was in serious trouble A considerable portion of the pre-revolutionary officer corps had fled abroad, defected to the Mujahideen in neighbouring Pakistan, or been purged Mutinies had occurred regularly in garrisons such as Herat and were ruthlessly put down with the help of Soviet advisors Earlier, the dominant Khalq (masses) factions of the PDPA (People's Democratic Party of Afghanistan) had exiled the top Parcham (Flag) leaders and purged the revolutionary army and secret police of their supporters.

By September 1979 the purges, mutinies, decimation of the officer corps and large scale desertions, had paralysed the Afghan army and reduced its hold to Kabul and the immediate vicinity of the main garrisons After the shootout between the supporters of President Taraki and Prime Minister Hafizullah Amin, when Taraki was mortally wounded, the hardliners among the Khalq took absolute power. More purges followed and by end December 1979, the 'revolutionary' army had no more than 80,000 thoroughly demoralised men As a consequence, when Soviet troops already in Kabul and the nearby Bagram air base seized Kabul radio and attacked Amin's Presidential Palace, they were able to end resistance in a few hours, and no resistance was offered to Soviet divisions massed at Termez on the border when they entered Afghanistan in the next few days The only effective resistance was by isolated groups of Mujahideen, who according to a Soviet estimate already numbered 150,000 However, most of them stayed put in Pakistan or stayed near the border.

After the Soviet invasion more mutinies and defections occurred and were followed by purges of pro-Khalqi army officers by Babrak Karmal, the new President who was the leader of the Parcham faction and 'who rode to power on a Russian tank'. By January 1981 the Afghan army was estimated to number no more than 25,000 and the regime took desperate measures, making all men between 20 and 35 liable to military service. Many fled and among those who stayed most were not trusted with heavy weapons — the Russians fearing they would defect with these to the rebels By late summer of 1981 the purges were complete and the task of rebuilding the Afghan armed forces started The Soviet Union informed the Indian Government in August 1981 that 'we will remain in Afghanistan for at least three more years' They had suppressed dissent in Kabul and the main towns by brutal attacks on protesters Meanwhile the Afghan secret police KHAD *(Khidmaat -e- attalast -e- Daulat* or State Information Service) was being built up The PDPA membership had fallen to 5,000 which was a tiny proportion of Afghanistan's population

Soviet generals estimated in 1980 that they would need 300,000 troops to occupy the country and beat down the insurgency, but they never had many more than 120,000 men The Red Army decided against following the American strategy in Vietnam, where nearly 600,000 troops had been committed militarily to pacifying the countryside Instead, Soviet strategy was to keep losses low by entrenching themselves in fortified posts and garrisons and carrying out punishment raids on resistance centres in the rural areas This raised Afghan casualties to 1 25 million (latest estimates) and caused nearly nine million to become refugees (in Pakistan, Iran and Afghanistan's own cities and tribal belts) in a total population of about 15 million Throughout the eight year occupation there were few pitched battles. The rebels preferred to make hit and run raids and attack isolated outposts

From early 1982 the Soviets began the reconstruction of the Afghan armed forces from 'reliable' elements in the truncated PDPA (consisting of *Parchamis* who survived the 1978-80 period and moderate Khalqis).

During the last six years, according to authoritative sources, the Afghan armed forces have been built up to 200,000 men (80,000 army, 20,000 air force and 100,000 para-military) The internal security force numbers 90,000 (including 20,000-30,000 in the military wing of KHAD) and the local militias number between 200,000-300,000 The PDPA claims to have more than 200,000 members of whom half are in the armed forces Western diplomats in Kabul suggest that these figures are exaggerations but they are agreed that the numbers at the disposal of the PDPA regime are not insignificant Soviet advisors operating as far down as the company level continue to advise the Afghan army The number of generals in the Army, Air Force, Militias, Sarandoi (Para-military), and the Ministry of State Security (formerly KHAD) exceed 200, up from 10-15 in pre-revolutionary Afghanistan Undoubtedy the officer corps and the relatively well paid NCO's have a big stake in the system, for their lives will be at risk if the PDPA regime collapses. Opponents of the regime doubt the effectiveness of the army and suggest that conscripts will not die in order to defend the PDPA, no matter what stake their officers have in the system, and that after the Soviet withdrawal, senior army commanders will be drawn into intra-party intrigue (as occurred between 1978-80 and the first two years of Karmal's Presidency). As soon as the Mujahideen's strength becomes apparent, those who emerge dominant in the army will fall over each other to make deals with the opposition, according to pro-Mujahideen analysis

The pessimists among high Soviet officials privately admit that no one can predict what will happen after the 115,000 strong 'limited internationalist contingents' leave But the official Russian line is that 'the present level of forces in the Afghan Army are able to control the situation'. It is likely that if the situation does go out of control in the nine month withdrawal period, some Soviet forces will remain

The Afghan President, Dr Najibullah, told correspondents at the end of April that in any case 'there would be a minimum of Soviet advisors in

the upper echelons of the armed forces and scores of instructors at military establishments' Earlier, he had stated to the *Loya Jirga* (the Grand Assembly) that 'in accordance with the Afghan-Soviet treaty of 1921, with the coming to power of every regime regardless of their political colour, Afghanistan and the Soviet Union are mutually responsible not to allow hostile groups to exist on their territory and to neutralise their activity against either of the two countries'.

In practise, however, both the PDPA regime and the Soviet Union have never controlled more than the main towns and the roads linking them. In Kabul the regimes's authority extends for a radius of 30 km around the city At night control is maintained in the towns by patrolling tanks and armoured personnel carriers, and sorties by fighter bombers attacking infiltration routes.

In the countryside the militias are comprised mostly of boys and men above 35 whose allegiance to the regime and effectiveness are a function of government subsidies and the absence of any organised Mujahideen group Except in the northern provinces (near the Soviet border) the militias are not effective fighting forces. But it cannot be doubted that the PDPA regime does have a powerful airforce, an armoured corps and several main force units capable of set piece battles, with considerable fire power at their disposal

Against them are ranged Mujahideen (guerilla) groups and some tribal forces, numbering nearly half a million according to Western diplomatic sources The Kabul Government claims that of these, 42,000 armed men organised in 160 rebel groups have already laid down their arms and that another 120,000 mobilised in about 750 groups are observing a ceasefire and negotiations are in progress for their joining the national reconciliation programme. It is difficult to assess claims about numbers in Afghanistan, because both sides freely engage in propaganda and dis-information.

The Mujahideen's basic military unit is the valley and at the head of a valley is a 'commander' whose command may be several dozen or even 100 fighters The fiefdom of most commanders is limited to a small group of villages Some commanders such as the well known Ahmed Shah Masud of the Panjshir Valley lead larger forces Masud has a highly mobile force of 2,000-4,000 men and is able to impose his will on the commanders of small groups, all of whom come together for a major operation. In eight years the Soviets have been unable to defeat Masud although the valley is only 60 km from Kabul and is of strategic importance

In certain areas such as the Shia populated region of Hazarajat, several groups have formed a loosely administered centralised command which has reached an understanding with the Kabul Government — they do not attack and are not attacked Because this mountainous region in the heart of Afghanistan is impossible for tracked vehicles to operate in, it was left alone by the Red Army The PDPA has offered engineers and funds to the Shia groups to build schools, hospitals and roads, without strings The offer is still pending.

As a consequence of their divisions and orientation to guerilla warfare

the capacity of the Mujahideen to engage in set piece battles is limited. This was demonstrated in the battle for Khost in December 1987. Khost, a town on the Afghan-Pakistan border, was under Mujahideen seige almost continuously from 1979, because the 125 km mountainous road from Gardez, the capital of Paktia province, had been blocked at several places which prevented any convoy from reaching it When two Soviet transport aircraft were shot down by Stinger missiles the re-supply of the Khost garrison by air became hazardous. Soviet helicopter borne commandoes were dropped near Mujahideen strong points on the road as Afghan and Soviet troops with armour and air support advanced along it and in six weeks cleared the road. Both sides claimed to have killed 1,000-2,000 of the opposition while admitting to only 100 dead on their own side.

Soon after Kabul made a deal with the chieftains of the Zadran tribe and withdrew from the Zadran Valley at the end of which lies Khost and now Soviet detachments have withdrawn even from Gardez Undoubtedly the Kabul government has sound military reasons for its proposal to demilitarise specified border areas In the absence of Soviet troops, border towns have been vacated and are likely to be taken over by the locally dominant Mujahideen grouping or tribal force Since the 'other' side — Pakistan and the Mujahideen — have not yet responded the demilitarisation is limited.

And as the late Pakistan President, General Zia-ul-Haq, dismissed the relatively moderate government of Mr Junejo it is even less likely that 'demilitarisation' will take place Already there are reports that Pakistani military intelligence was pressurising the Mujahideen to mount an offensive and since the current Chairman of the 7-Party alliance, the fundamentalist Gulbuddin Heckmatyar, has links with the forces of Mullah Malang near the Southern city of Qandahar, military activity has increased in this region Such, however is the complexity of Afghanistan, that the Chieftain of the Achekzai tribe receives subsidies from the Kabul Government in exchange for which his troops guard the main road from Quandahar to the Pakistani border.

Other military commanders, especially those affiliated to the Jamiat-e-Islami (led by Mr Barhannudin Rabbani a former Professor of Islamic Law in Kabul University) and the Khalis faction of the Hesbe-Islami, are unlikely to do anything which increases the prestige of Mr. Heckmatyar, and so unless there is concerted pressure from the Government of Pakistan and the involvement of Pakistani 'volunteers', the Mujahideen are unlikely to win any dramatic victories After most Russian troops have left, major towns near the Pakistani border (such as Assadabad, Jalabad, Khost or Qandahar) could fall, but even then the tribes which control the heroin trade and cross-border smuggling (the Afridis near the Khyber Pass and the Mohmands in Konar Province) will discourage anything which disturbs their extremely lucrative businesses. The PDPA Government is constantly engaged in seducing the tribes with grants of money and Generalships in the border militias to their leaders.

It does not seem therefore that a quick fall of the PDPA regime is likely, even if one or two major towns fall to one or the other Mujahideen groups Their rivalries are likely to intensify rather than diminish as the Soviet withdrawal proceeds and if the Najibullah Government is able to surmount the alienation of the people, caused by the excesses of 1978-80, and the mishandling of the Karmal Presidency, it is possible that the moderate groups in Peshawar and even the Jamiat-e-Islami of Mr. Rabbani will reach an accommodation with the PDPA leaders. The withdrawal of the Soviet troops and the pro-Islamic stance of Dr. Najibullah has already moderated the antipathy to the PDPA which was almost universal two years ago

Although there is an edge of uncertainty in Kabul (and the dollar's free market price has risen in recent weeks) there are as yet no signs of panic among government and military leaders Perhaps the posture of the cadres of Dr Najibullah's party (who are all fighting for their lives) can best be summed up by what he said to foreign correspondents about the Chilean revolution recently, 'The Chilean revolutionaries had, no doubt mass support and faith in democracy. But they forgot this other crucial component of the revolution — the gun needed to defend themselves We have not forgoten it (We) can now defend the revolution even without the support of Soviet troops' The next year will show in what direction the Afghan people's more than one million guns are firing

---

[Karan Sawhny is Assistant Editor of the *Statesman*, one of India's national dailies He trained as an Economist at St Stephens College, Delhi, Magdalene College, Cambridge and McGill University Before he became a journalist, he was a consultant on the A T & T anti-trust case in New York He also promoted (unsuccessfully) joint ventures and a rural development project in India Karan Sawhny's article, 'Sinhala-Tamil Negotiations', was published in *Contemporary Review*, No 1449, Vol. 249 and 'The Practice of Realpolitik. Sri Lanka's Ethnic Strife, No. 1460, Vol 251]

The December number of *Contemporary Review* includes *Will the Vietnamese Starve?* by Nghiem Xuan Thien, (held over from the November issue), *Is There Life After NATO?* by J A. Bayer, *Into the Future with the Black Economy* by A D Harvey and *Anthony Trollope and the Beverley Election* by Robert Woodall.

UNESCO — A WAY OUT OF THE CRISIS

by Niksa Nikola Soljan

THE Twenty-Fourth Session of the General Conference of UNESCO was held in Paris from 20 October to 20 November 1987 The session was held under the presidency of Mr Putzeys Alvarez, Ambassador of Guatemala to France. The new President will exercise this function until the Twenty-Fifth Session of the General Conference which will be held in Paris during the autumn of 1989

The Twenty-Fourth Session of the General Conference focused its attention on the following items Election of the Director-General, general policy debate, consideration and adoption of the biennial Programme and Budget of the Organisation for 1988-1989; and an elaboration of UNESCO's Third Medium-Term Plan.

The Twenty-Fourth Session will probably be marked in the annals of UNESCO by the election of the new Director-General. All other issues were pushed into the background by pre-election activities A state of suspense regarding the election of the first man of the Organisation lasted till the very beginning of the Twenty-Fourth Session of the General Conference The meetings of the Executive Board of UNESCO, held from 6 to 18 October 1987, were watched by mass media throughout the world with keen interest Finally, the Executive Board adopted, on 18 October 1987, the following decision 'In accordance with the Statute and the Rules of Procedure, the Board decided, by secret ballot, to present to the General Conference, at its Twenty-Fourth Session, the candidature of Mr. Federico Mayor (Spain) for election to the post of Director-General of UNESCO'. Voting for the new Director-General was a pure formality. (Result of the voting — 142 7·0)

The new Director-General arrived at the head of UNESCO after several years of a crisis which was disrupting the whole UN system. The crisis was provoked, among other things, by distrust in multilateralism. UNESCO was the chain of the system hardest hit by the crisis The withdrawal of three countries (USA, Great Britain and Singapore) reduced the Organisation's income by almost 30 percent Such a drastic reduction of the budget seriously affected the Organisation's Programme and the quality of its activities.

The new Director-General is expected to uphold the universal character of the Organisation, namely, to bring back the three countries which left it at the end of 1984 and in 1985. Further, he is expected to improve the efficacy of the work of the Organisation and to enhance the quality of its activities, in conditions of restricted financial resources His slogan is 'Less but better'. Bearing this in mind, it should be assumed that the new Director-General will make use of the biennium (1988-1989) for reinforcing those measures which are likely to ensure the continuation of reforms already begun at the time of announcement by the USA of its intention to withdraw from UNESCO However, he has a six-year term

ahead of him and, early in the beginning of his term of office, he is in a position to exert decisive influence on the elaboration of UNESCO's Third Medium-Term Plan for the period 1990-1995. He will certainly not miss the opportunity to shape the new medium-term plan in accordance with the authentic needs of member countries and the broadest intellectual and cultural public as well as in line with his own personal preferences

Two documents served as introduction to the general policy debate The first is the *Report by the Executive Board on its Activities in 1986-1987 including the Reform Process* The report was submitted by Dr. Ivo Margan, until recently Chairman of the Executive Board The second document was *The Introduction to the General Policy Debate* submitted by the former Director-General of UNESCO, Amadou-Mahtar M'Bow. Some questions of general policy related to the reform process and improvement of the functioning of the Organisation. Within this context, attention should be drawn to the question of reduction of personnel, the evaluation of the work of the Organisation and its decentralisation.

As far as personnel is concerned, it will be recalled that the Twenty-Third Session of the General Conference, held in Sofia from 8 October to 12 November 1985, adopted a special resolution dealing with this issue: (23 C/Resolution 0 9) The resolution laid down guidelines for personnel policy The purpose of the resolution was to assist the Director-General in solving the question of a reduction of staff.

According to the *Report of the Director-General on Personnel Policy,* it was planned to eliminate 240 posts in the Secretariat during the past biennium Additional 186 posts were to remain free as a result of voluntary withdrawal from the Organisation. To be precise, approximately 270 posts were actually placed in the reserve. Such a reduction, justified primarily by the decline of financial resources after the withdrawal of the USA, Great Britain and Singapore, was bound to cause some convulsion.

However, 50 new posts — allegedly of priority importance — were created in the course of 1987 Nevertheless, the new posts failed to contribute notably to the achievements of some of the objectives of the new personnel policy, such as recruitment of young experts, increased employment of women as well as more equal representation of individual states It is obvious that personnel policy will remain the main concern of the Organisation for a long time. In this connection, it is very important to ensure conditions that will not allow individuals or groups to decide exclusively on personnel policy in UNESCO

Decentralisation has held a special place in the reform of the Organisation since 1984. Many programme activities have been decentralised during the last two bienniums. A series of measures has been undertaken during the past years, with a view to decentralising UNESCO such as, for example, the reinforcement of regional offices. The question arises in connection with the future development of the Organisation, how far can the decentralisation of UNESCO go without jeopardising the coherence of programmes and their effective implementation?

The General Conference examined the Draft Programme and Budget

for 1988-1989. What is actually in question is UNESCO's Third Medium-Term Plan (1984-1989). The adopted biennial programme follows the global structure of the Second Medium-Term Plan. This structure consists of 14 major programmes, viz (i). Reflections on World Problems and Consideration of Guidelines for the Future, (ii): Education for All; (iii)· Communications in the Service of Man; (iv) Formulation and Application of Educational Policies; (v) Education, Training and the Society; (vi)· Sciences and their Application for Development; (vii)· Information Systems and Access to Knowledge; (viii). Principles, Methods and Strategies of Action for Development; (ix). Science, Technology and the Society; (x) Human Environment and Land and Marine Resources, (xi)· Culture and the Future; (xii): Elimination of Prejudices, Intolerance, Racism and Apartheid, (xiii): Peace, International Understanding, Human Rights and Rights of Peoples, and (xiv) the Status of Women.

Bearing in mind the debate on major programmes held at the Twenty-Fourth Session, it is possible to single out some programmes that attracted the greatest attention. These were, in the field of education, the eradication of illiteracy and education in the fight against the acquired immunodeficiency syndrome (AIDS) The General Assembly of the United Nations is expected to proclaim 1990 as International Literacy Year. This will give moral support to UNESCO's 'Plan of Action for the Eradication of Illiteracy by the Year 2000'. At a time when the illiterates number almost 900 million in the world, every action aimed at reducing the number of illiterates is welcome However, there is no justification for deceiving ourselves· without important international action, support and solidarity, UNESCO's plan would have the power of a 'paper tiger'. Actually, UNESCO will conduct the campaign for the understanding of AIDS in conjunction with the World Health Organisation's Special Programme for the Prevention and Control of AIDS

In the field of culture, greater emphasis was laid on the 'World Decade for Cultural Development' At its Forty-First Session, the General Assembly of the United Nations declared the 1988-1997 period as Decade for Cultural Development. Together with the United Nations, UNESCO was entrusted with sponsorship for the Decade and in particular the task of elaborating a 'Plan of Action for the Decade'.

A number of relevant themes were also considered in the fields of science and communications Of special interest were the questions linked with the impact of new technologies on the development of society. These new information and communication technologies pose a serious problem as unfortunately a large number of developing countries lack even the most elementary prerequisites for participation In such a situation UNESCO is, perhaps, the only institution able to prevent, on a world scale, communication between developed countries and some parts of the developing world from becoming completely superfluous This is, in fact, one of the greatest challenges facing UNESCO If it fails, the international community will be threatened by new, even more radical, divisions.

As already noted, it is no secret that for several years UNESCO has

been going through a grave financial crisis It is, however, interesting to note that the budgets of other key organisations in the United Nations family were increased considerably during the same period Thus, the budget of the World Health Organisation increased, nominally, by 45 8 percent, the International Labour Organisation by 54.7 percent and the Food and Agriculture Organisation by 11 percent. UNESCO ended the past programme and budget biennium (1986-1987) with a deficit of 39,768,000 US dollars. Some people do not consider this amount as a deficit in the strict sense of the term. It is, actually, a 'technical shortfall' due to unfavourable trends in dollar transactions Namely, the budget is drafted in accordance with the technique adopted at the Twenty-Second Session of UNESCO (November 1980). The principle of the constant dollar is applied in accordance with this budgetary technique, while inflationary costs and currency fluctuations are calculated separately. At the time of the adoption of the above system the US dollar was worth 6,45 French francs and 2,01 Swiss francs. Thus, a 'technical shortfall' occurred at the end of the last programme/budgetary period (1986-1987) owing to the depreciation of the dollar in relation to the French and Swiss francs in 1986 and 1987. By the middle of January 1988, the shortfall was reduced to approximately 13,000,000 dollars

The General Conference decided, *inter alia,* to subject the present budgetary technique to a thorough review which is unfavourable both to the Organisation and to individual members countries It hurts the developing countries and countries ranking among the so-called medium contributors in particular, countries faced with high inflation and unstable national currencies In order to protect the member nations as much as possible the General Conference decided that contributions to UNESCO should be paid in one currency, while the basic balancing of accounts will be effected in two currencies This will give some countries more flexibility with regard to the mode and term of payments to be effected at the time of the most favourable exchange rate of the dollar or French franc

True, in the recent Declaration the non-aligned countries reaffirmed the role of UNESCO as the most suitable international and inter-governmental forum for intellectual and cultural co-operation However, UNESCO's programmes will need to keep a balance between essential intellectually-oriented activities and practical operations UNESCO must not be viewed either as a financing and technical body or as a purely theoretical academic institution engaged in research In order to fulfil its mandate, UNESO must be both a forum for the exchange of information and an organisation promoting know-how and experience in all the spheres of its competences

Therein lies the real *raison d'être* of its existence

[Dr. Solijan is Professor of Philosophy at the University of Zagreb]

THE NEXT PRESIDENT OF MEXICO

by Martin Needler

BARRING unforeseen accidents, the next president of Mexico will be the current minister of planning and budget, Carlos Salinas de Gortari He has been announced as the choice of the ruling *Partido Revolucionario Institucional,* and the ruling party in Mexico has never lost a presidential election. Until 1920, governments sometimes lost the post-election revolt; during the 1920s, the government won all the revolts too, and there have been none of those for over fifty years The revolts failed for the same reason that the incumbent government's candidate for president was always elected those governments, which claimed to represent the heritage of the great Mexican Revolution of 1910, were simply more popular than the alternatives. No doubt if the government's candidate seemed likely to lose the election the results would be falsified so that he would win; evidence exists that the decision to falsify the results, if necessary, was taken before the only election in which the opposition presidential candidate seemed to have a chance, that of 1940.

The right-wing opposition party has been edging upward, but has yet to win more than twenty percent of the vote nationally Combined, the left-wing parties win fewer votes than that, and in any case they are divided and likely to present more than one candidate. So no one doubts that Salinas will be inaugurated as president on December 1, 1988.

At thirty-nine, Salinas will be the youngest Mexican chief executive (although his baldness makes him look older) since Emilio Portes Gil, who served fourteen months as provisional president from 1928 to 1930. Salinas is credited with being the minister behind Mexico's current economic strategy — the cautious, gradualist strategy of digging itself out of the hole of execessive debt and industrial slowdown in which the country was placed by the collapse of petroleum prices and the Mexico City earthquake of 1986 That unspectacular and unpopular policy has to be regarded as successful in terms of its own limited objectives, as the debt has been refinanced on fairly favourable terms, foreign reserves have accumulated, and employment has gradually expanded, although, of course, a very great deal remains to be done and there are no guarantees.

In domestic political terms, Salinas represents a continuation of previous trends in Mexican political leadership. The early military leaders of the Revolution were replaced, as the system matured, by a generation of lawyer-politicians who have been replaced in their turn by a generation of managerial technocrats. The generals were likely to be from the north, and the politicians from the central states; the technicians come from the capital city itself. Like two of his three immediate predecessors, Salinas was born in the Federal District, and like them he held no elective office before being nominated for the presidency Like theirs, his career has combined academic work and service in the upper reaches of the federal bureaucracy. Salinas first came to the attention of Miguel de la

Madrid, who became his political patron and, as the current incumbent president, chose Salinas to succeed him, as a student in de la Madrid's class at the national university Like de la Madrid he has a master's degree in public administration from Harvard

Although his career has been within the public sector and his undergraduate training was at the national university, which feeds its best graduates into the public service, while the future leaders of the private sector attend private schools of business and technological institutes, Salinas is likely to get along well with Mexico's restive private sector. This is not only because of his orthodox financial views, but also because his family comes from the state of Nuevo León, whose capital, Monterrey, is the centre of private business activity in Mexico, and of the schools and trade associations that nourish it Family and social connections will thus no doubt moderate the inevitable confrontations between government and business In fact Carlos Salinas's father is currently serving as senator from the state of Nuevo León, so the family connection may serve also to moderate the clash between *políticos* and *técnicos*, between politicians and technocrats, within the ruling party, a conflict that in any case has probably been made too much of by political observers.

If the candidate is intelligent and competent, popular with foreign business interests and acceptable to domestic business, and can rely on a disciplined party machine to deliver the votes, what clouds lie on the horizon? Economic problems, of course, may always prove intractable. Oil prices are soft, although the war between Iran and Iraq is always likely to produce spectacular events that send prices up Interest rates are liable to drift down, alleviating the debt repayment situation. Mexican industry seems on the rebound, and a declining birth rate will ease the problem of creating jobs

On the other hand, there will probably be friction with a labour union movement which has had to bear the odium of maintaining disciplined loyalty to the party and government while real wages and living standards were in decline, only to see its own favoured candidate for the presidency, the energy minister, Alfredo del Mazo, passed over Moreover, Fidel Velázquez, undisputed boss of the Mexican labour movement since before Salinas was born, is well into his eighties and his replacement will have to be picked during the coming presidential term, which may provide awkward political moments. But coming after the erratic personalism of Luis Echeverría, with its ill-considered and counter-productive leftist gestures, the massive corruption and indebtedness produced by José López Portillo, and the grinding economic hardship suffered under Miguel de la Madrid, the uninspiring period of boring technical competence promised by a Salinas presidency may be no bad thing for Mexico.

[Martin C. Needler is Professor of Political Science in the University of New Mexico]

LICENCE REFORM: LESS REGULATION, MORE INDIVIDUAL RESTRAINT

by Melanie Powell

ON August 22nd, this year, the 1988 Licensing Act became law, relaxing existing licence restrictions on hours of sale in England and Wales Opening hours have been extended to 12 hours a day Monday to Saturday, and the 1915 wartime requirement for an afternoon break has been removed. Sunday opening hours have been increased by one hour, extending closing time to 3pm. The 1988 Act is the first successful attempt to relax restrictions on the availability of alcohol in England and Wales since the licensing laws of the 1960's It is the final stage of a programme of liberalisation by the Conservative Government to remove licence restrictions considered to be both archaic and restrictive.

The Conservative Government made a pledge to liberalise licence regulation in the 1987 General Election Manifesto, under its section on proposals for achieving 'Freedom, Law and Responsibility'. Licence reform, the Government argued, would increase consumer choice and personal freedom, whilst assisting the growth of tourism and small businesses Deregulation, therefore, could raise additional benefits for both producers and consumers of alcohol However, Government also stated that alcohol would require continued regulation in the light of more frequent outbreaks of football hooliganism and town centre public disorder In 1980, the sale of alcohol in sporting grounds was banned under the Criminal Justice Act, and more recently, the Home Office sanctioned a Coventry Local Authority by-law to ban alcohol consumption in public places. The Government's record of alcohol policy in the 1980's reflects a policy conflict between the goals of expanding alcohol trade and controlling public health and social disorder, reminiscent of the Victorian 'drink question' debates of the 1890's.

Opponents to liberalisation have argued that wider availability leads to increased harm across the whole population of drinkers through demand side-changes in consumption Indicators of harm, such as liver cirrhosis mortality rates and numbers of drink-driving arrests, have increased with *per capita* consumption. Licence restrictions are supported as a form of generalised paternalist policy to protect all consumers because *per capita* consumption has increased with real incomes and a decline in the real price of alcohol. Government arguments for liberalisation are derived from the supply side, emphasising the benefits of expanding trade through changes in production. A distinction is drawn on potential harm between alcohol related crime and individual responsibility for health. Government does not accept that licensing hours have a major impact on public order problems and argues that the health effects of increased consumption must remain the responsibility of the consumer This part of the recent debate on the Licensing Bill has broken the cross-party nature of most 20th century alcohol policy, re-establishing some of the

party political issues about choice and public order which arose in the emergence of modern party politics.

It can be argued that the impact of licence reform cannot be evaluated or justified on either demand or supply side arguments alone. Effects on trade, health and public order result from the interaction of the economic forces of demand and supply, but also from social and political conditions, and the effects of previous policy. Post-war liberalisation has resulted in an increase in the hours of sale of alcohol and an increase in the number of outlets Either effect could have led to more consumption by all drinkers or more consumption by a limited group of the drinking population The debate is assessed within its historical context in relation to political goals, producer interests and supply effects, and the feedback effects between regulation and the economic forces of demand and supply.

Licence regulation can be traced back to 1494 and to a series of 16th century controls which introduced two basic principles; that alcohol is a special commodity and that justices should have absolute discretion in awarding licenses for the sale of alcohol Many of the restrictive policies which followed were introduced to mitigate the effects of previous relaxation of control policy. Both the Gin Act of 1736 and the Beer Act of 1830 were intended to increase consumption of beers relative to spirits after periods of deregulation on spirits. Continued Victorian regulation and the restrictions imposed during World War I were largely based on fears about public order and excessive mass consumption by the lower social classes. Existing licence laws are therefore based on the 1921 Licensing Act which embodied the main characteristics of the wartime restrictions, and the earlier elements of party political debates

Current licensing laws control the availability of alcoholic beverages through restricting the number of retail outlets, the persons allowed to purchase alcohol, and the times at which alcohol can be sold The Licensing Act of 1961 established the main conditions for granting on and off-licences, the right of appeal against a refusal and introduced the restaurant, residential and combined restaurant and residential licences These new licences became known as the Part IV licences under the consolidating Licence Act of 1964 and the absolute discretion of the Justices to refuse a licence was limited for the first time Justices may refuse a licence on the basis of local 'needs', but must judge each case on its individual merits alone Any appeal to Crown Court against refusal is likely to succeed if the definition of 'need' is challenged against its relevance to an individual case

The 1961 Act also extended the times of opening for off-licence premises, allowing general retailers to operate without a 'shop within a shop' arrangement Between 1960 and 1986, the total number of licenced premises in England and Wales increased from 116,627 to 172,051. The increase was mostly generated by the new Part IV licences which numbered 26,503 by 1986. In addition, the number of off-licenced premises doubled over the period The most recent reforms have relaxed the times of sales rather than the controls over numbers of outlets or persons.

Consumption of alcohol, measured by the pure alcohol content of drinks, increased from 6 0 litres *per capita* in 1960 to 9 6 litres per capita in 1986, peaking in 1979 at 10 2 litres.[1] Demands for alcohol, given the impact of prices, incomes and other factors, might increase directly with the number of licenced premises if the costs of purchase such as time spent, are reduced or if licenced premises also generate an advertising effect However, evidence of a direct relationship might also include feedback effects if the number of licences increases with consumption Producer and retailer profits would be likely to increase as consumption rises with incomes, resulting in an increase in licence applications A recent study by C. Godfrey[2] tested the impact of an indirect two-way feedback effect between the number of licenced premises and consumption for different drinks A positive feedback effect was identified for beer only, but wine consumption was also found to be directly affected by the number of licenced outlets The number of licenced outlets had no impact on spirit consumption. The evidence suggested that a 1% increase in the number of licenced premises in 1980 would lead to an increase in beer consumption of up to 3%, and in wine consumption of up to 5%.

Restrictions on the number of outlets may also have affected consumption indirectly through the impact of licence regulation on the structure of production Alcohol production is dominated by a few large brewing companies, the top five firms producing over 50% of industry output. This structure emerged from a wave of merger activity in the 1960's as larger brewers sought to gain control of the new national market for keg beers by acquiring small brewers with tied houses In 1969, The Monopolies Commission[3] argued that the tied house system operated against the public interest, eliminating price competition in the tied retail trade. Licence restrictions allowed major brewers to maintain tied houses as a permanent barrier to competition by new firms. The Commission recommended substantial relaxation of licence laws in the consumer interest on this basis Radical liberalisation was also recommended by the Erroll Committee Report on the licensing system which followed in 1972[4].

By 1977, the Prices Commission Report survey showed that bar prices were higher in the free on licence trade than in tied houses, and that brewers sold more than 50% of their output to the free trade[5] Price competition gained strength in the off-sales sector after the removal of retail price maintenance in 1966 and the extension of off-sales hours to the same times as on-licenced premises. Large retail outlets and smaller newsagents and confectioners were then free to sell alcohol in normal shop hours without additional costs Between 1961 and 1984 the proportion of alcohol sales from non-traditional off-licence outlets increased from 28% to 56%. Liberalising off-sales hours resulted in a rapid expansion of take-home consumption and a decline in the share of on-licenced sales although per capita consumption continued to increase. However, it is not clear that liberalising off-sales hours directly resulted in increased consumption.

Increased competition from the off-sales sector has led brewers to expand capital investment in the amenity value of public houses. From

the 1950's, capital investment expanded mainly in production with the introduction of keg beers and the need for a national distribution network. By the 1970's, investment shifted to the public house Between 1976 and 1985, the proportion of investment by brewers in production and distribution fell from 56% to 25%. The real values of investment in retailing increased despite a 10% decline in the number of brewery owned on-licenced premises and a 24% reduction in the number of brewery owned off-licenced premises The Brewery Sector Working Group[6] concluded in 1983 that public houses were at a competitive disadvantage relative to clubs and supermarkets as a result of restrictive licence hours on on-sales These relative restrictions, however, were created by prior relaxation of off-sales hours

Brewers have subsequently switched their support away from licence restrictions towards relaxation of licence laws The 1988 Licencing Act might be expected to enhance sales and consumption, and enhance profits in the alcohol sector If the relaxation of off-licence hours in the 1960's affected brewing competition and industry structure as suggested, supply side changes would have fed back into the success of the current round of liberalisation Deregulation now favours producer interests by increasing sales of on-licenced alcohol in the face of increased competition in the leisure market and increasing disposable incomes In addition, post-war licence policy has encouraged increased size and concentration in the alcohol industry, and potentially extended the political leverage of producer groups.

The current liberalisation debate centres on the question of whether an extension of on-licence hours will increase consumption and lead to greater levels of health and social problems The Government based its support for reforms in England and Wales on evidence that extended on-licence hours in Scotland, following the Licencing (Scotland) Act in 1976, had no adverse consequences The Clayson Report[7] indicated that offences for drunkenness, drunk driving and alcohol related violent crime all declined in Scotland after the Act An OPCS report[8] showed that male consumption had not increased but the consumption amongst women had risen 36% However, these studies do not take into account the impact of recession, of increased investment in the amenity value of bars, of changed police arrest practices, medical practices and increasing beer prices It is difficult to draw conclusions about the likely impact of removing afternoon breaks in England and Wales from reforms which extended Scottish closing hours to bring parity with English law.

On the publication of the Licencing Bill in September 1987, Government set up an inter-departmental ministerial committee to consider a strategy for alcohol policy, chaired by the Leader of the House, John Wakeham MP. So far, it has achieved an agreement from the IBA and the ASA to review the image of alcohol in television broadcasting in response to the radical recommendations of the Masham Report on under-age drinking The report, presented to the Home Office Standing Conference on Crime Prevention in November, 1987, recommended a

total ban on TV and cinema advertising of alcohol and on drinking in public places by people aged under 18 years As a result, the issue of increased under-age drinking became part of the lobby against the Licensing Bill and forced an amendment placing the onus of responsibility more firmly on the licensee.

The latest round of licence reform is part of a government strategy which has separated public order problems from health consequences and the social conditions of production and consumption of alcohol. But history reveals that periods of rising levels of alcohol related harm tend to coincide with rising incomes, and changing demographic and urban structure, together with previous policies designed to support trade interests Post-war policy has resulted in a general extension in the availability of alcohol for public consumption and the Licensing Act continues this trend in support of producer benefits. Consumption is therefore likely to increase as incomes rise and more leisure time is available One of the consequences may be a general rise in individual alcohol related health and safety problems rather than mass public disorder Pockets of disorder such as the recent spate of 'shire town riots', can be controlled through increased use of policing and localised restrictions on availability for specific groups. In an environment where the state is increasingly less involved in the provision of welfare, the costs to health will fall mainly on the individual, whose choice it is to exercise restraint. At the same time, the Government's case for less generalised intervention in the form of regulation and taxation will be more easily justified

---

NOTES

1 Godfrey, C, and Powell, M, (1985). 'Alcohol and Tobacco Taxation Barriers to a Public Health Perspective'. *Quarterly Journal of Social Affairs*, 1, 4, 329-353
2 Godfrey, C, (1988) 'Licensing and the Demand for Alcohol' *Applied Economics*, forthcoming
3 'Monopolies Commission (1969), Beer — A Report on the Supply of Beer' *Monopolies Commission*, London
4 Erroll Report (1972), 'Report of the Departmental Committee on Liquor Licensing in England and Wales' *Home Office, HMSO*, London.
5 Prices Commission (1977) 'Beer Prices and Margins', Report No 31 *Price Commission*, London
6 Brewing Sector Working Group (1983) 'The Outlook for the Brewing Industry' *National Economic Development Office*, London
7 Clayson, C, (1976) 'Report of the Departmental Committee on Liquor Licensing' *HMSO*, Edinburgh
8 Goddard, E, (1986) 'Drinking and Attitudes to Licensing in Scotland' *HMSO*, London.

[Melanie Powell is a lecturer in the Department of Economics and Public Policy at Leeds Polytechnic and a visiting research fellow in the University of York, Centre for Health Economics]

IMPRINTING ON THE MIND

by Anthony Harrigan

I REMEMBER that one of my aunts once engaged in a heated drawing room conversation — argument is the more accurate word — in which she asserted that people of 'our' class inherited their culture. This assertion by my aunt was a variant on the old argument as to whether nature or nurture is the deciding factor in the formation of human character For my own part, I am unsure as to exactly what weight should be attributed to the respective factors. Both are important I am impressed, however, with an observation made by Peter Heidtmann that 'early imprinting is most significant in determining character'

The imprinting on my mind was done by people who reached adulthood around the turn of the century My parents were born respectively in 1881 and 1884 This means that my parents were born about 20 years before the parents of many of my contemporaries This fact cannot but be a decisive factor in the shaping of my outlook My father attended the College of Physicians and Surgeons in New York City in the period of explosive growth in the metropolis and when the famous profile of the city was taking form His post-graduate medical studies at the University of Berlin were in the years when Germany was at the peak of its development as a centre of science My mother came of marriageable age, though she did not marry until 1918, in an exceptionally placid period in the American South. Her world was the world of a country village and a small, quiet city with a fixed social order

Obviously, the outlook of my parents has coloured my outlook. My father's outlook was influenced by his education in the pre-1900 and turn-of-the-century period, especially by the world of late 19th century German life and thought. which he admired very much His Irish background apparently influenced him not at all He didn't serve in the first World War Indeed, he disapproved of American intervention, and the Great War, with its enormous impact on the western world, apparently didn't affect his thinking at all He died shortly after the 'Crash' and never experienced the full ramifications of the Depression. His imprinting on my childish mind was derived from his much earlier life experiences.

My mother, who lived to be 83, never seemed to be affected in any way by the decisive national experiences of her lifetime — the two World Wars and the Great Depression. Her outlook was formed in her childhood in a country village, and never changed Her life revolved around her parents, her husband, her children, her brothers and sisters, and her friends. She didn't read a great deal She had no interest in politics or social ideas The reversal in our family fortunes, after my father's death, seemed to trouble her hardly at all. She never complained that she had little money; the small income we had was adequate. She had grown up in a family and a social circle that was without wealth, and she took that to be a natural state of affairs We never talked money in our home. That was considered

bad form in our social world.

These attitudes were imprinted on my mind and formed a counterweight to the current of modern ideas to which I have been exposed in school and work and in which I have been deeply involved as a writer

The imprinting of attitudes isn't always easy to discern. It isn't simply the voicing of the opinions of one's elders and the presentations of snatches of half-forgotten commentary from occasions in the past. The imprinting is often very subtle; it sets up the parameters of character and social vision The imprinting, I suspect, is fundamental in that it determines the attitude to human existence that one fashions, yet it has a shadowy hold on our minds

I feel sure that there is much that we don't understand about the process of personality formation — and manifestation as well First of all, we know very little about the life force. Henry Beston, naturalist and author of one of the most memorable American books, *The Outermost House* — a modern *Walden Pond* (Ballentine Books) — has written that 'Life is as much a force in the universe as electricity or gravitational pull, and the presence of life sustains life Individuals may destroy individuals, but the life force may mingle with the individual life as a pillow of fire may mingle for a moment with a candle flame'. Such concepts cannot be measured in a laboratory, but neither can the reality of personality.

All my life I felt my father as a presence beside me, another idea that could not be confirmed by science but which has been a reality to me. Many writers have dwelt on unseen realities or posited ideas that lie outside the realm of scientific demonstrations Thus Alexander Solzhenitsyn, writing in the *Gulag Archipelago,* has said that... 'the Universe has as many different centres as there are living beings in it' And Freya Stark, discussing the mystery of human personality, has reminded us in *The Coast of Incense* that 'the portion we see of human beings is very small their forms, faces, voices and words, their ages and race perhaps beyond these, like an immense dark continent of which their obvious self is but a jutting headland, lies all that has made them — generations vanishing into barbarous night, accidents and impacts not only on themselves but upon their forebears'. Truly, immense invisibles shape us as individuals It is these invisible factors that contribute so much to our characters.

I long have marvelled at the secret processes of nature involved in the shaping of personality. We cannot understand these processes in their entirety until we understand the human brain. And, while medical scientists are making great advances in their studies of the brain, the layman can only ask questions and, thereby, begin to apprehend the extraordinary mysteries of the brain Certainly, we know that the brain is riddled with perceptual biases that govern all our actions I have asked myself what is going on in my brain when I am moved by a stretch of rocky coast, which is the case with me, or when I feel a surge of emotion in reading a letter by an ancestor How is it that I am not moved by flatlands or a picture of a great religious figure? There has to be a relation between my

feelings and decisions and the events taking place in my brain One wonders what determines the base of motion and feeling in the brain from which specific reactions stem and how soon in life is that base established? Of what does it consist? The reaction to a decision to study history instead of biology or to choose beef over fish suggests the most complex array of brain reactions and biases. How are the biases built into the brain? And what about the rôle of language? Is it a code for the imprinted data? In asking such questions, one realizes that the relationship between a particular decision or feeling and the brain may be as complex as that between a grain of sand and a galaxy.

I am very mindful, therefore, of the fact that we have a very rich inheritance in our humanity. We are inheritors not only of the outlook of our parents and grandparents but of victories and achievements of mankind from the moment man became something distinct from other animals We can discern the process of character formation in studies of early man in Europe at or near the end of the Ice Age Many of the skills and attitudes we think of as distinctively classical or, at least, of being shaped in classical antiquity, were developed 10 or 15 thousand years ago The discoveries in the caves of France and Spain have helped us gauge the wider dimensions of our humanity We find the European cave dweller possessed of a stunning imagination, plus an extraordinary gift of handling tools We also encounter the mixed nature of man — tender as well as dominating — which existed in those distance times, as revealed by the evidence of a wreath of flowers cast on the site of a stone age burial Even in those remote times, man had a capacity for love as well as a will to survive

My interest in such matters widened out in steady fashion from the core of my personal experience, from a sense of what my father and mother were and represented, to a wider interest in ancestral roots, to an even wider interest in what we can discover about the roots of human life As we explore the caverns of our memory, we make all manner of discoveries

The imprinting process, then, stretches far back into time — far beyond anything we can reach by direct knowledge. Certainly, one is most strongly affected by one's parents, brothers and sisters and other close relatives, but a very powerful impact is provided by the generations immediately preceding one's birth by, let us say, the preceding five generations In these generations, of this short period, approximately thirty-two people form the immediate chain of generations from whom one is descended. And if one knew one's sixteen great-grandparents, one could see more clearly the process of imprinting I don't know the names or lives of all the 32 individuals from whom I am descended in this span of generations, but I know the names of many of them and something of their lives

The first of my ancestors to reach America was Dr. Henry Woodward of Warwickshire who landed in Carolina in 1667 and lived among the Indians for a year before the first settlement at Charleston. Other early

forebears were Anglicans and Quakers and Presbyterians, an Indian fighter, doctor, fisherman and ship captain, planters, an early industrialist, a writer, sportsmen and Colonial, Revolutionary and Confederate soldiers.

These bits and pieces of family history helped me to direct an outlook towards the events of my own lifetime. I became mindful of the fact that history isn't a dry chronicle but an enormous accumulator of personal experience. The definitive experiences of the American people from settlement of the land to today were personal to people from whom I was descended or whom I knew as a child The Civil War was embodied in old Mr Barnes in Olmsteadville, NY, whom I was taken to visit when he was 98 in the late 1930s We sat and chatted on his porch in August. It was my grandfather who received a Union bullet in his leg at the Second Battle of Manasas. I longed to know more than I could know — how great-grandfather William Harrigan felt when, at age 12, he went to sea as a cabin boy on a sailing vessel out of Newfoundland, how my ancestor, 'Jimmy' McPherson felt when he encountered the warlike Yemassee Indians on the Carolina frontier; how my father felt on the day of the Wall Street Crash when a great part of his savings was wiped out However, there is only a limited amount that we can know in a positive way if diaries and letters are not available Nevertheless, the spirit and outlook of all these forebears filters down into each new generation in a mysterious way, shaping character and moulding a new life

The study of the past, especially one's family past, is one of the most enlightening pursuits It is a form of self-examination, and the beginning of wisdom, as Socrates tells us, is to 'know thyself' Dr Alex Carrel, the brilliant physician and author, writing in *Reflections on Life* (Hawthorn Books, 1952, page 53), said 'Although no microscope or telescope exists to explore our own unconscious, the habit of self-examination sharpens our insight. We gain a progressively profound knowledge of the characteristics and particular trends of our personality' We learn from self-examination and the related study of family history a deeper understanding of the meaning of the passage through life, of what it means for individuals, families and nations to live through time, of what the forces were at work in generations past and how men and women meet joys and sorrows in all the circumstances of human life.

[Anthony Harrigan is President of USIC Educational Foundation, Washington DC, USA]

INTERNATIONAL AND RACIALLY PURE — JAPAN'S THEORY AND PRACTICE

by C. C. Aronsfeld

IT is now 70 years since Rabindranath Tagore, the Indian philosopher, offered his solemn salutation to Japan — to 'that sunrise in the East which is destined once again to illumine the whole world' Here he could see the 'experiment' by which 'the East will change modern civilisation' through a civilisation of its own that was 'not political but social, not predatory and mechanically efficient but spiritual', having regard to 'all the varied and deeper relations of humanity' Japan's ancient culture, he wrote in 1917, would warn her against a European tradition 'based on exclusiveness, afraid of other races achieving eminence, ever intent upon keeping the aliens at bay or exterminating them', 'caring only for marketmen who are robustly contemptuous of all sentiment', 'fostering hatreds by the manufacture of half-truths and untruths' Such, the Japanese must know, were the marks of that 'national selfishness which goes by the name of Patriotism' — 'racialism' was not then yet invented; it had 'raised its banner of treason against heaven' but it 'must totter and fall with a crash'.

This is where Tagore fervently hoped Japan would be different. But then he was a poet and the idea came easily to him that different skies must breed different minds In fact Japan was no more unlike Europe in the first war when Tagore wrote those lines than she was in the second, or for that matter than she is now As she is passing through difficulties, mainly economic, she is exhibiting such symptoms of the disease as Europeans might expect if indeed they do not derive a feeling of superiority

Japan had never been wide open to foreigners, and more recently, so far as any generalisation can be justified, she seems to be shying away from them It has been officially estimated, in 1986, that between 60 and 70 per cent of the people want nothing to do with foreigners, only 25 per cent are prepared, in varying degrees, to consider the matter. The *Punch* cartoon about the foreigner, "eave 'alf a brick at 'im', is no joke in Japan. There are not many foreigners about, but the best (or worst) part of the 120,866,501 Japanese solemnly believe that Japan is blessed with a 'racial purity' which they must preserve, and foreigners are credited with the super-human power of 'contaminating' it.

Odd though it may seem, many Japanese find it difficult to relate to non-Japanese as equal members of the human race A prominent Japanese businessman, Don Fujita, head of MacDonald's in Japan, frankly admits. 'Basically, Japanese are anti-foreigners They accept anything made in foreign countries but they cannot accept the foreign country itself', admittedly, he was puzzled by this 'double-take psychology'.

There is definitely opposition to 'international marriages' The Government's Economic Planning Agency found that 67 per cent disapprove of them (among women the percentage rose to 71) It was not until 1985,

after a long struggle, that the children of Japanese mothers and foreign fathers won the right to be Japanese nationals if they so wished.

The dislike of foreigners extends even to fellow-Asians though Japanese can occasionally be heard to express an 'affinity' with them Actually, remarks the editor of the *Japan Economic Journal,* Susumu Ohara, 'no such affinity exists' — loathing, he thought, was closer to the truth if he could be allowed to be so blunt.

This attitude strangely contrasts with the Government's declared policy of an 'internationalisation' designed to make the country aware of its place within the larger world community from which its national life is greatly benefiting, not only by constantly adopting and successfully developing the highest standards of technological progress but also by introducing cultural attractions such as music and fashion Under the Government's 'internationalisation' programme, hundreds of teachers from various countries, including 150 from Britain, have been invited to teach their languages at Japanese colleges Yet such contact on the professional level has not so far led to contact on the human level.

The belief in an exclusive society is strong even among those who call for 'internationalisation'. The former head of the Government, ex-Prime Minister Yasuhiro Nakasone, said in so many words 'Being a nation of one race is very good, an advantage we should be proud of' It was easier, he thought, to have better education in a country like Japan that was racially homogeneous — unlike the USA He went so far as to assert that Japanese society was on average far more intelligent than American where blacks, Puerto Ricans and Mexicans had a lower intelligence level.

This surprisingly undiplomatic remark created quite a stir. The US black civil rights leader, Rev. Jesse Jackson, on a visit to Tokyo, strongly rejected the allegation by countering that the human rights situation in Japan needed to be improved. Mr Nakasone offered a 'heartfelt apology', and when one of the two Japanese-Americans in the US House of Representatives also raised a protest, he promised to 'make every effort to work on the issues'. He may have been moved by good intentions when he spoke to his Cabinet colleagues about the need for 'more internationally-minded people' in their respective departments, but in the prevailing climate (which even the prime minister fostered) such people will be difficult to find

Japan's 'homogeneity' appears to be qualified by a few (albeit numerically negligible) ethnic minorities among whom two stand out — the Buraku untouchables and the Ainu, the original inhabitants of Northern Japan The approximately three million Burakumin, though otherwise indistinguishable from the general population, live in some 5,000 ghettoes mainly in Central Japan and scattered on three of the four main islands, Honshu, Kyushu and Shikoku. They will encounter discrimination as soon as identified from the various 'Lists of Burakumin' (detailed family registers) which can be consulted at town halls by any interested commercial companies, universities and other bodies as well as individuals. 'Many businesses, banks and industries conduct social status investigations

of prospective employees, and persons of known Buraku heritage are not hired', (writes Professor I. Roger Yoshino in his study, *The Buraku Minority in Japan,* 1983). Much the same applies to information concerning prospective marriage partners The results often are ruined lives and suicides A Buraku Liberation League has had some success in curbing the discriminatory use of the family register system, though many companies have produced their own 'handbooks' from the register It was the League too which took an initiative by inviting the Rev Jackson to come to Japan and as it were see for himself.

The Ainu are perhaps even more disadvantaged With their own language, culture and religion, they are not allowed to buy or sell land without the permission of the governor of the Hokkai island where they live Their land, much like that of the Australian Aborigines, had been occupied by Japanese settlers during the 19th century, and little notice was taken of their protest Japanese history books, they complain, tell nothing about the massacres and slavery they had suffered One of their leaders, Giichi Nomura, angrily contrasted their position with that of ethnic minorities in USA and China

While Burakumin and Ainu are natives of Japan, discrimination can almost be expected to hit those of immigrant stock. About 850,000 are registered as immigrants, more than 80 per cent of them Koreans who usually do jobs shunned by Japanese, though unlike Europe and the US, the Government is firmly opposed to importing foreign labour for this purpose Both they and their descendants born in Japan are treated as aliens whose main characteristic is that they are 'undesirable' The same applies to the relatively few Filipinos who often do temporary jobs on building sites, in factories and restaurants Less affected are the 50,000 Chinese who are for the most part well-to-do merchants

The prejudice against foreigners finds an obvious expression in the Immigration laws which seek to ensure the survival of the 'racially pure' society by admitting only sharply defined categories such as teachers and entertainers, both of which, on a serious or light-hearted level, will only be able to 'contaminate' limited numbers The rigour of the law was enforced even at the time of the Vietnam war when refugees were in desperate need of admittance. Japan was most reluctant to receive them.

In recent months xenophobia has found a specious excuse· foreigners have been blamed for the spread of AIDS 'If you want to avoid the risk of AIDS, do not have sexual intercourse with foreigners', the people have been told, and lurid mass media publicity has pointed its fingers particularly at Americans, Britons, French and West Germans At first AIDS was regarded as a 'White man's curse' from which Japanese were held immune thanks to the purity of their blood, but when the National Institute of Health suddenly discovered Japaneses patients, stories soon spread that they had been infected by imported blood products, and since AIDS was a 'foreigners' disease'. all foreigners must be considered carriers.

The persistent discrimination against the ethnic groups has had one particularly embarrassing result. An appreciable number of the untouch-

ables (Burakumin) and of the Koreans have been drawn into Japan's legendary gangster fraternity, *Yakuza,* which manages to exert influence both in business and in political life. A book on its activities — *Yakuza, The explosive account of Japan's criminal underworld* — which appeared in New York in 1986, was translated into several languages but a Japanese edition was turned down for fear of retaliation from powerful political figures who are presented by the US author as working hand in glove with *Yakuza.*

Some of these powerful figures are known for a record that would bar them from public life in the West. Among Prime Minister Nakasone's 'spiritual guides' was a now 80-year-old former terrorist who in the 1930s was sentenced to hard labour for an unsuccessful attempt on the life of a Government member denounced as a 'traitor' because he opposed Japan's expansionist campaign in China.

That spirit of nationalist fanaticism is now fostered by organisations such as the 'Partisans for Japan's Racial Independence' who have already indulged in the violence which is inseparable from such ideologies They are all too reminiscent of the early Nazi *Vehme* terrorists if not of terrorists uncomfortably near to us in time and space Indeed today Rabindranath Tagore would seem unlikely to claim that, in this or any other respect, the civilisation of the East will prove superior to the wisdom of the West

---

[C. C Aronsfeld is a freelance journalist specialising in the study of group relations He has edited two journals, *Patterns of Prejudice* and *Christian-Jewish Relations* and is the author of *The Ghosts of 1492 Jewish Aspects of the Struggle for Religious Freedom in Spain 1848-1976* (1979) and *The Text of the Holocaust Nazi Extermination Propaganda 1919-1945* (1985)]

THE RELUCTANT COUNTRYMAN: ROBERT HERRICK

by Donald Williams Bruce

HERRICK'S *Hesperides* were published in 1648 under the apt impress of an empty crown Somewhere at the edge of the deposed king's memory during the Civil War had wavered Robert Herrick, hook-nosed and ardent, largely forgotten but not utterly, since from time to time he recaptured a dim, distracted attention with an ode in celebration of some royal visit or victory. Although King Charles I thought little and rarely about Herrick, Herrick thought endlessly about the king, whom he calls upon to cure both the King's Evil and the evil of the king's times[1]. To Herrick the king is the Tree of Life, whose fruits feed, and leaves restore, mankind. He is Bethesda, and the angel stirring that healing pool:

> To find that Tree of Life, whose Fruits did feed,
> And Leaves did heale, all sick of human seed·
> To finde *Bethesda,* and an Angel there
> Stirring the waters, I am come (*Poetical Works,* 61)

The defeat of the king leaves Herrick inert and unable to write.

> Dull to my selfe, and almost dead to these
> My many fresh and fragrant Mistresses:
> Lost to all Musick now (*Poetical Works,* 214).

Yet it was the king who drove him into the countryside he so much detested. The king was like an instrument of Providence to Herrick. Although merely in passing and hurriedly, the king determined the whole course of Herrick's life from the time he left the University of Cambridge. During the early years of the reign of Charles I, Herrick frequented the court, and wrote anthems and carols which were sung before the king to the music of Henry Lawes Upon the king's instructions, he accompanied the royal favourite, the Duke of Buckingham, as his chaplain on the expedition to La Rochelle Two years or so later the king presented Herrick to the substantial living of Dean Prior, near Exeter Herrick's benefice was also an exile, which he lamented as earnestly as Ovid expelled by the Emperor Augustus to the coast of the Black Sea.

Herrick's church, St. George's, was on the edge of Dartmoor, on the highway between Exeter and Plymouth, now a furiously thronged road which cuts the parish off from the church Built into a hillside which rises to a prehistoric track to Dartmouth, the church is dark and cheerless, although in summer encircled by a dipping ring of swallows, which fly inside and nest there whenever they have the chance. In Herrick's time there were four Church-bells, cracked and discordant, but still a reminder of the bells of his 'golden Cheapside'. From 1514 an ale-house was open alongside the church, even on Sundays, to refresh the worshippers from outlying villages, although not Herrick himself, who was a confirmed wine-drinker. Within the church there was a holy-water stoup, still there, which Herrick preserved in defiance of the Puritans.

Charles I's motive in rusticating Herrick may have been, like that of Augustus in sending Ovid to Tomi, to preserve public decorum. Long after Herrick's departure to Dean Prior, scandals concerning him were

still reaching the ears of Archbishop Laud that he was absenting himself from his parish without leave, that he was coming to London, that he was fathering bastards on the daughter of the organist of Westminster Abbey [2]

Herrick did not enjoy life on the fringe of Dartmoor, among the thorn-hedges and apathetic weedy fields, within sight of the shattered summits of the tors He cared neither for his parish nor for his parishioners, whom he described as 'currish; churlish as the seas,/ And rude (almost) as rudest Salvages' (*Poetical Works*, 29) Unlike Herbert's country parson, he was not 'very circumspect in all companyes, both of his behaviour, speech and very looks', although he probably did know 'himself to be both suspected and envyed' He disregarded Herbert's advice to marry 'Amongst suspicious men, and other circumstances considered, he is rather married than unmarried'[3] But of the two temptations which Herbert attributes to the celibate clergy, 'spiritual pride, and impurity of heart', Herrick certainly did not suffer from spiritual pride

He did not try to reform, or civilise, or even placate his parishioners His hungry sheep looked up and were not fed. He escaped them whenever he could He made furtive expeditions to London or Exeter He tippled with neighbouring clergymen who disliked the provinces as much as he did himself, particularly with that 'jocund person', John Weekes:

> We'll drink, my Wickes, until we be
> Plump as the cherry,
> Though not so fresh, yet full as merry
> As the cricket,
> The untam'd heifer, or the pricket (*Poetical Works*, 132)

He feasted with the local squirearchy; being 'much beloved' by them for 'his florid and witty discourse' [4] His drunken caprices still further reduced the regard in which his parishioners held him. As Herbert remarked

> Because Luxury is a very visible sinne, the Parson
> is very carefull to avoid it in all the kinds thereof,
> but especially that of drinking, because it is the
> most popular vice, into which if he come he disableth
> himself of the authority *to reprove them*· For sins
> make equall whom they finde together (*Works*, 227)

Certainly Herrick did not, as Herbert admonished, 'do well and right, and let the world sink' He was unquestionably, by Herbert's standards, a shameful priest In principle Herrick was utterly wrong; but in practice it was easier for Herbert, a comparatively rich man with lordly connections, to 'let the world sink'. Herrick was wrong again in condoning the vices — and particularly the drunkenness, in which he abundantly shared — of the grand folk around him. He did not reprove them as he should He flattered them. In Herbert's stern words, he sold his Lord and Master. True enough! But it was easier for Herbert, the aristocrat and the cousin of the Earl of Pembroke, to reprove the great than it was for Herrick, the son of a cockney tradesman, to do so. Herrick's vocation was not that of a recluse It was that of a self-indulgent voluptuary who was more poet than pastor. In admitting that, Herrick had the wry honesty of the unscrupulous Roman poets, Catullus and Martial, whom he loved and

celebrated. He was the stray rogue-poet of South Devon.

When Herrick was ejected from his vicarage by the Parliamentarians, he returned hilariously to London:

> Ravisht in spirit, I come, nay more, I flie
> To thee, blest place of my Nativitie! (*Poetical Works*, 242)

Herrick was born on the corner of Cheapside, *Golden Cheapside* as he calls it, the commercial centre of his London, a place of gilded frontages and choked gutters, armorial gables and vegetable-stalls; conduits, bell-towers and foundries[5]. Milton was born on the same side of this market so evocative to a boyish imagination Shakespeare, who lived in Aldersgate at that time, often crossed Cheapside on his way to the Mermaid Tavern It is possible that both Milton and Herrick may have seen him. There is a Victorian painting in which Shakespeare, on his way across Cheapside, pats the golden-haired boy, Milton, on the head When the market was over, the bare expanse of Cheapside, wider then than now, echoed the chimes in the many nearby churches, where the ringers diverted themselves for hour after hour Londoners, complained one foreign visitor, were 'vastly fond of great noises that fill the ear, such as the firing of cannons, drums and the ringing of bells' [6] Young Herrick's head must have been full of the rhythms of the changing peals

Herrick, true to his birthplace, is the poet of commodities. He in turn brings wares, staple or precious, to town; tersely cries God, daffodils and Julia's breasts through the wakeful streets. What especially pleases him, in his Epithalamion for Sir Clipseby Crewe, is the sight of the yielding bulk of the knight's great feather-bed: 'a mighty overflow' of 'white pride', in which the occupants will drown the night, with themselves, 'in floods of Downe' (*Poetical Works*, 115). A merchant-poet, he caters for Oberon's Feast and supplies.

> The unctuous dewlaps of a Snaile,
> The broke-heart of a Nightingale
> Ore-come in musicke (*Poetical Works*, 120)

He furnishes Oberon's Palace, hanging his bedchamber 'with the blew skin/Of shifted Snake' (*Poetical Works*, 166).

His master was Martial Like Martial, Herrick regards his poems as little light objects of pleasure leisurely trifles to beguile his readers in their hours of relaxation[7]. They are intended as diversions for merry evenings Herrick asks us not to read then on 'sober mornings', but over the wine-cups 'when the Hearth/Smiles to itself, and guilds the roofe with mirth' (*Poetical Works*, 7). Then his lines may be read by the sage and the dignified: it is said that stern old Cato often warmed his virtue with wine [8]

Many of Herrick's poems are indeed trifles Julia falls from her horse and reveals 'Part of her legg's sinceritie' (*Poetical Works*, 12). Anthea bids him tie her shoe, and he tries to kiss her knees (*Poetical Works*, 14). The flowers hold a Parliament in Julia's bosom, and vote the rose their queen (*Poetical Works*, 8) Oberon joins his consort, Queen Mab, in a bed of 'six plump *Dandillions* (*Poetical Works*, 167). This lover of choice untidiness — of the fine distraction, the confused flow, the tempestuous

petticoat — does not take much trouble over his poems. He jots them down in all their simplicity, forgets them, repeats himself, mingles the translated with the original, mislays some, has the others printed in any sort of order. Ariel becomes Caliban and Caliban becomes Ariel The suave elves of the *Hesperides* have to endure the company of some unseemly clowns. the Rabelaisian epigrams, adolescently lewd, which are suppressed in Victorian editions of Herrick. Sometimes the condemned epigrams are placed next to Herrick's most iridescent lyrics, barnyards at the rainbow's foot. The effect is arresting, and in its way philosophical, suggesting as it does both the liberty and the servitude of human life, the wings of the ideal and the clogs of the real, the tripes within the Praxitelian torso and the latrine in the Paradise Garden.

As well as the condemned epigrams (hardly shocking to a twentieth-century reader) Herrick preserved much which is humdrum, although if he had not done so, some of his adroitness would have lost its contrast and startling impact adroitness such as his valediction to his much-loved River Thames, 'Grow young with Tydes', or his rendering of the heat of a garnered cornfield:

> the motes, dust, sand and speares
> Of Corn, when Summer shakes his eares (*Poetical Works*, 340)

He lived in a thin, uncontrollable sweat of poetry. Verses emanated from him like a mist in the sun Once they had fled from him, they became part of a record, which he did not wish to alter, or look at again, of his past.

His pathos too is slight and artless Like his Julia, he makes the river deeper by a tear:

> She by the River sate, and sitting there
> She wept, and made it deeper by a tear (*Poetical Works*, 251)

But it is undeniably a tear Herrick's father fell to his death from an upper window two days after making his will, when Herrick was fourteen months old. It was suspected at the time that, weakened by ill-health, he had ended his own life. Herrick's poem on his visit to his father's grave implies that his father was buried in consecrated ground, denied to suicides, in secret (*Poetical Works*, 27). As his poems often reveal, Herrick himself was subject to repeated bouts of possibly inherited dejection For all their decorative expression, many of his poems are sombre. Lone cypresses rise starkly among the eglantines There is a *memento mori* on the table at his fairy feast:

> Man is a Watch, wound up at first, but never
> Wound up again: Once down, He's down for ever (*Poetical Works*, 202)

Herrick divines from a daffodil how it will be for him:

> First, I shall decline my head;
> Secondly, I shall be dead;
> Thirdly, safely buried (*Poetical Works*, 38)

Herrick was, in fact, a long-lived poet whose gifts came to a slow fruition. His anthems and carols for the Chapel Royal were first performed well after he was thirty. Most of his poems were written after he was thirty-eight. He was over forty when he published his first poems, and published few others before the age of fifty-seven. He could not discern in himself, as Keats did, the signs of an abrupt cessation. He

lived on into the age of Restoration Comedy For all that, the loss of his father when he was barely old enough to know him gave him premature experience of the woeful dealings of mortality As with that other orphan, Richard Crashaw, his fidelity to kingship had something filial about it.

Although Herrick asserts that a Christian 'sighs at others' deaths, smiles at his own', he scarcely smiles when he envisages himself under his marble slab 'In depth of silence, heard, and seen of none' (*Poetical Works,* 129 & 298). An abiding sense of evanescence pervades his epitaphs, such as this on a jealous wife

> In this little Vault she lyes,
> Here, with all her jealousies:
> Quiet yet (*Poetical Works,* 52)

The ghost of his former mistress appears in his dream, calling her Orpheus to Elysium, but, like Virgil's Eurydice, *circumdata nocte,* she concludes:

> I vanish, more I had to say,
> But Night determines here, Away[9]

Herrick's common symbol for transience is a flower, usually a spring flower Maidens strew violets at primrose-time upon the grave of a child:

> Virgins promis'd when I dy'd
> That they wo'd each Primrose-tide,
> Duely, Morne and Ev'ning come,
> With flowers dresse my Tomb
> Having promis'd, pay your debts,
> Maids, and here strew Violets (*Poetical Works,* 44)

A promise mournfully enforced! Herrick addresses blossoms:

> 'Twas pitie Nature brought yee forth
> Meerly to shew your worth,
> And lose you quite (*Poetical Works,* 176)

He greets his young niece, Susanna, in the same terms:

> When I consider (Dearest) thou dost stay
> But here awhile, to languish and decay,
> Like to these Garden-glories, which here be
> The Flowrie-sweet resemblances of Thee
> With griefe of heart, methinks, I thus do cry,
> Wo'd thou hast ne'r been born, or might'st not die (*Poetical Works,* 193)

Although the blossoms 'simper, blush and smile', they must soon be gone. They must make way for the fruit the loss of innocence and maidenhead becomes a second mortality (*Poetical Works,* 70) He witnesses the funeral-rites of the rose: 'The Rose was sick, and smiling di'd' (*Poetical Works,* 237) In sympathy with Sapho's illness, all the violets, primroses and daffodils look pale:

> That gallant Tulip will hang down his head
> Like to a Virgin newly ravished (*Poetical Works,* 41)

The violets, which attend the spring, by and by wither, like poor girls, neglected The sisterhood of the tulips may stay for a day or two.

> But dye ye must away,
> Even as the meanest Flower.

After comparing his mistress to flower after flower, Herrick concludes:

> But die you must (faire Maide) ere long,
> As He, the maker of this song

The spring of this poet of gardens is as short as that of the daffodils, which he weeps to see haste away: 'Ne'er to be found again'. He calls upon the flowers he has celebrated to do honour to his hearse He begs his namesake, the robin, to cover his grave with *mosse-work* and leaves.

That Herrick is primarily a sad poet may be seen from his four epitaphs for children and his lines *Upon a Lady that Died in Childbirth.* The lady is like a flower that

> did but stay
> To blow, and seed, so away;
> So you sweet Lady (sweet as May)
> The garden-glory liv'd a while
> To lend the world your scent and smile (*Poetical Works,* 126)

To give new life she resigned her own:

> But so, as still the mothers power
> Lives in the pretty Lady-flower

Upon a Child that Died is piercing in its bare profundities, without the posturing and meditated sentiment of Martial's epigram on the same subject:

> Here she lies, a pretty bud,
> Lately made of flesh and blood.
> Who, as soone, fell fast asleep
> As her little eyes did peep
> Give her strewings, but do not stir
> The earth, that lightly covers her (*Poetical Works,* 123)

Many of Herrick's poems are derived from Martial, as if Herrick muttered Martial's lines to himself every day Martial's terse epigrammatic form appealed to him. Although he imitates few of Martial's crueller epigrams, he draws largely upon him when, shunning the Roman hubbub, Martial writes about his literary aims and his love of retirement

> That man's unwise will search for Ill,
> And may prevent it, sitting still (*Poetical Works,* 6)

Temperamentally he has affinities with Martial He is not a man of strong convictions He describes himself as being as rootless as the mistletoe. Light, aimless and garrulous, he drifts upon the prevailing wind. He is shallow both in his morality and his immorality There were political affinities too Both poets wrote, under a narrow and shifty despot, for the members and adherents of a busy, troubled and serious patriciate to whom, in their fleeting spare time, poetry and song were important diversions On the other hand, Herrick has a tender heart, which Martial has not, and lacks the unfeeling cynicism and icy gaiety of Martial.

Readers of the *Hesperides* are sometimes surprised when they first see the portrait of the author of those airy lyrics Herrick has a Silver Latin physiology, as bull-nostrilled and heavy-browed as that of some Pompeian painted under Otto or Galba in trickling ochres and reds; with a chin, the joint effect of self-will and gluttony, like that of a late Caesar He looked like an Ancient Roman potentate, and indeed displays not mere familiarity with the Imperial poets but affability towards them Yet it is a Virgilian face too, with the mulberry-coloured stare of Silenus in the Sixth Bucolic when, shaken from his tipsy drowse by Virgil's shepherds, he imparts his rustic lore [10] Like the old maudlin demigod, Herrick sings of 'Brooks, of Blossomes, Birds and Bowers', of legends, origins and agrarian festivals, of the heathen soil.

> I write of *Groves,* of *Twilights,* and I sing
> The court of *Mab,* and of the *Faerie-King* (*Poetical Work,* 5).

In spite of his homesickness for Cheapside and Westminster, his strongest emotions are associated with the countryside:

Love in a showre of Blossomes came
Down, and halfe drown'd me in the same (*Poetical Works*, 283)

He admits that he never wrote so well as in 'this dull Devonshire', amongst the daughters of the west:

I ne'r invented such
Ennobled numbers for the Presse,
Then where I loath'd so much (*Poetical Works*, 17)

He seeks in British folklore equivalents for the superstitions of the Romans. fairies, holy oaks, bridal cakes, the ceremonies of May Day and Candlemass. In his Catullan valediction to his father he describes how, on his long-delayed visit to his father's tomb, he brings, not the Roman offerings of wine, milk and honey, but wild celery, nightshade, sypress and yew, the funeraries of native British tradition (*Poetical Works*, 27).

Herrick is a belated pagan. He holds fast to the classical inheritance rejected, in favour of the practical and the evangelical, by the enemies of the king He renames his friends after the friends of the classical poets. He addresses John Weekes under the name of Horace's Posthumus He calls Endimion Porter the Fabius of his age. Cardinal Bembo, secretary to Pope Leo X, built a shrine to Plato and lit votive candles there. Herrick hymns Bacchus and Venus from his vicarage in Devon. As at his fairy court, his is·

a mixt Religion
And some have heard the Elves it call
Part Pagan, part Papisticall (*Poetical Works*, 91)

Within the sanctuary-rails of his church this priest breathes a heartfelt prayer to Venus, a private sacrilege vowing her roses and myrtles if she will further his ends

Goddesse, I do love a Girle
Rubie-lipt, and toothed with *Pearl*·
If so be, I may but prove
Luckie in this Maide I love
I will promise, there shall be
Mirtles offer'd up to thee (*Poetical Works*, 136).

He dreams of Venus the Huntress and at once attempts to kiss her bare thighs:

But she forbad me, with a wand
Of Mirtle she had in her hand
And chiding me, said, Hence, Remove,
Herrick, thou art too coorse to love (*Poetical Works*, 51)

As an amorist Herrick is in general curt. His overtures to his various girls suggest, by their lack of ceremony, that he did not engage himself much among his social equals Presumably servant-girls or farmer's daughters alleviated his boredom in Dean Prior. 'Lift up your smocks', he demands without ado:

Shew me thy feet; shew me thy legs, thy thighes,
Shew me Those Fleshie Principalities (*Poetical Works*, 154)

Such an attitude to members of his flock is odd in a parish priest, and more consonant with the behaviour of some free-thinking, literary French abbé of the eighteenth century Herrick exonerates himself from his verses by claiming that his life is stricter than his writings:

Wantons we are, and though our words be such,
Our lives do differ from our Lines by much (*Poetical Works*, 218).

At the end of the *Hesperides* he notes:

Jocond his Muse was, but his life was chaste (*Poetical Works*, 335)

Such disclaimers were conventional, following the precedents set by Catullus, Ovid and Martial, and probably no more trustworthy than theirs.[11] At best, Herrick pursues an Epicurean moderation Following Martial, he stipulates that his chosen mistress shall neither 'Famish me, nor over-fill' (*Poetical Works*, 232)

In his use of wine Herrick was less prudent Ben Jonson, whose influence on such admirers as Herrick was often more social than literary, set Herrick an example of drunkenness. Like Jonson, Herrick quaffs his 'mighty Bowle' to raise his imagination, and, although he laments that he can never 'thrive in frenzie' like Jonson, he still empties many 'a Goblet, to the brim, of Lyrick Wine' (*Poetical Works*, 227 & 198) Herrick's account of the exaltation of wine in his *Hymn to Bacchus* anticipates Baudelaire's *Le Vin des Chiffoniers*

When we thy *Orgies* sing,
Each Cobler is a King,
Nor dreads he any thing.
Although he has no riches,
But walks with dangling breeches,
And skirts that want their stitches (*Poetical Works*, 259)

To the same fallacious grandeur Baudelaire's ragpicker is raised by wine:

Il prête des serments, dicte les lois sublimes,
Terrasse les méchants, relève les victimes,
Et sous le firmament comme un dais suspendu
S'enivre des splendeurs de sa propre vertu (12)

At times Herrick's intemperance alarms him. He beseeches the wine-god

let me drink no more,
Wild are Seas, that want a shore.
When our drinking has no stint,
There is no one pleasure in't (*Poetical Works*, 122)

In spite of his indulgences, Herrick retains fierce religious feeling Paraphrasing St John's reproach to the Church of Laodicea, he denounces an insipid religiosity

Either be hot or cold· God doth despise
Abhorre, and spew out all Neutralities (*Poetical Works*, 353)

He decries a frigid correctness.

Those Saints, which God loves best,
The Devill tempts not least (*Poetical Works*, 344)

As might be expected, Herrick is kind to sinners He maintains, again with biblical authority, that.

One man repentant is of more esteem
With God, than one, that never sin'd 'gainst him (*Poetical Works*, 388)

Satan has no quarrel with the thoughtless and the indifferent, since they are already his:

When we 'gainst Satan stoutly fight, the more
He teares and tugs us than he did before,
Neglecting once to cast a frown on those
Whom ease makes his, without the help of blowes (*Poetical Works*, 372)

The Bible, the Fathers, Catullus, Martial, Horace, the pseudo-Anacreon, run constantly in Herrick's memory, and incessantly he versifies his thoughts, as if he is talking to himself in his isolation in 'dull Devon-shire' He notes St. Basil's description of hell-fire and St Augustine's doctrine concerning the Sabbath He attaches tags to biblical commentaries. He turns into rhyme Boethius's observations on the

singularity of God He also complains of his short-sightedness, his cough, his loss of a finger, his maid Prue's illness and his sleeplessness·

> Just so it is with me, who list'ning, pray
> The winds, to blow the tedious night away (*Poetical Works*, 358)

The *Hesperides* have affinities with such logbooks of solitude as Dag Hammarskjold's *Markings* and Edmond de Goncourt's journal, that bitter record of a bachelor's dinners-out and attendances at funerals after the death of his brother Herrick writes poem after poem to himself or about himself His only lasting companion is his maid Prue

> These *Summer-Birds* did with thy Master stay
> The times of warmth, but then they flew away,
> Leaving their Poet (being now grown old)
> Expos'd to all the comming Winter's cold (*Poetical Works*, 151)

Passing from Herbert to Herrick is to pass from the St. Jerome of the Anglican Church to St. Jerome's donkey A priest almost wholly lacking in spirituality, Herrick circled about under the adages he had been provided with by his desultory theological studies, since he had graduated in Law, not Divinity Herbert and Herrick were inducted in the same month of the same year What a difference between Bemerton and Dean Prior! For seven years they had been at the University of Cambridge together. If they met, they could hardly have liked each other John Williams, Bishop of Lincoln and a close friend of Herbert, utterly disapproved of Herrick, as Herrick acknowledges in his magnanimous and charitable lament for Williams's imprisonment in the Tower (*Poetical Works*, 52).

Herrick was a country parson whose parish should have been, according to Herbert, 'all his joy and thought' (*Works*, 250) It is feared that Herrick was one of the hirelings whom Milton sought to drive from the Church by the readiest means. The only temple he thought of building was one to Ben Jonson. His *Noble Numbers* prove that he was capable of deep if ingenuous devotion; but as a pastor he spurned his flock, and associated chiefly with the hospitable outlying gentry, his servants and any village lasses he could come near. His poems to these Julias, Antheas, Bianchas, Perennas, Saphos and Myrrhas are certainly not what Herbert would have written. Herrick was most likely pretty tipsy when he wrote some of them, between dream and waking· Mallarmé's faun in a haze of Sack.

Yet what services to literature and scholarship have been performed by bored men living in parsonages too large for them! What school-texts and commentaries and keys to the classics they have produced! Bohn's Classical Library is a monument to the well-spent idleness of supernumerary Anglican clergymen How these latter-day monks, in their valuable Trollopean uselessness sustaining our civilisation, have annotated and illustrated the obscurities (and the indecencies) of Aristophanes and Juvenal, how they have edited the Elizabethan poets and dramatists; how they have dated the first flowering of the waterparsnip and the arrival of the ring-ouzel on its autumnal visit! Learned lassitude is seldom vain. Over fourteen hundred poems in the *Hesperides* and the *Noble Numbers*, however short, testify that Herrick was no sluggard.

NOTES

1 Robert Herrick *Poetical Works,* ed Martin, Oxford, 1956, p 61 References in the text are given by short title and page number to this edition
2 ibid, p xvi
3 George Herbert *Works,* ed Hutchinson, Oxford, 1953, p 237 References in the text are given by short title and page number to this edition
4. Anthony Wood, *Athenae Oxonienses,* ed Bliss, London, 1813-20, vol III, p 251
5. See the admirable drawing in H W. Brewer *Old London Illustrated,* London, 1962
6 William Kent *London for Shakespeare Lovers,* London, 1934, p 5.
7 Mart Ep X, 19
8 Hor Carm III, 21 *'narratur et prisci Catonis/saepe mero caluisse virtus.'*
9 *Poetical Works,* p 207, Virg Georg IV, 485 et seq
10 Virg Buc VI, 30 et seq
11 Cf. Ovid Trist II, 353-4, where the twice-divorced author of *The Art of Love* makes the same claim
12 Charles Baudelaire *Les Fleurs du Mal,* ed Starkie, Oxford, 1953, p 100· 'The rag-picker swears oaths, dictates grand laws, casts down the wicked, raises up the suffering poor, and under the sky, suspended like a Seat of Judgement, grows drunk on the sense of his own outstanding virtue'

[Donald Williams Bruce lectures in English at Westfield College, University of London His article entitled 'Anthony Powell A Dance to Mozart's Music of Time' was published in the *Contemporary Review,* No 1466 (Vol 252)]

SUMMERSCOPE ON THE SOUTH BANK

by Dilys Hartog

SUMMER in London, musically speaking, used to resemble a desert with the oasis of the Proms as its only relief The Albert Hall was a Mecca to which young and old made pilgrimage For the rest of the year its dignified rotunda had to harbour not only concerts embodying 'Your Hundred Best Tunes', but boxing and tennis matches, Women's Institute celebrations and the annual jamboree of the Institute of Directors, but during those precious few weeks there was the opportunity to mull over the staple classical repertoire and form new friendships through the cameraderie of the promenade area Elsewhere, there wasn't much competition The South Bank heaved a sigh of relief after its busy winter and spring seasons, and the programmes at the Royal Festival, Queen Elizabeth and Purcell halls were on the whole unexciting and only routine consolation for Londoners who failed to get Prom tickets and summer visitors to London interested in seeing fifties concert-hall architecture, happy to accept whatever might be on there The Wigmore's debutantes were working away at Summer Schools of Music and its celebrity recitalists doing just that in Salzburg, Vienna and other havens for the musically well-off

A couple of years ago a new factor crept into programme planning which could enliven concert-going in winter and spring, and has certainly added spice to the life of those left behind in the capital while the rest of Europe and even *Das Land ohne Musik* enjoys itself at festivals. Whoever was the minor genius who first thought of applying principles in everyday use at the best festivals to routine concerts in London, he or she has given fresh zest to musical life here not only in the dog-days, but at other times as well Instead of a series of identikit programmes — the tired old format of overture, symphony, piano concerto left over from the end of the nineteenth century, balanced more with an ear for length and rehearsal time required than for any more interesting consideration— there is now available a generous selection of programmes; put together not in the burnt-out permutations of a weary concert promoter, but with insight and intelligence The South Bank has become a festival in itself; the theme series has arrived

The South Bank has of late invited prominent musicians to plan concerts for the summer months under the title 'Summerscope', and the new administration's current policy, grouping concerts designed to enlarge our knowledge and experience in specific areas of music has grown from this, except that as well as the personal approach of presenting particular individuals' favourites, Nicholas Snowman's summer season has been both more wide-spread and beneficial. This year it has ranged from Philip Pickett's Pageant — Eight Centuries of Early Music, to an Electric Weekend when electro-acoustic classics by Stockhausen, Berio and Birtwistle (extracts from his brilliant *The Mask of Orpheus*) could be experi-

enced.

An elegant illustration of the principle behind this pattern occupied just under an August fortnight at the Queen Elizabeth Hall. Titles for such series cannot be easy to find, and 'Schubert and Britten — a Feeling for Music' did not convey a great deal other than the composers involved, but the South Bank publicity department knows its stuff, and its leaflet giving the minutiae of the concerts was headed with Jeffrey Tate's (the Artistic Director) pointing of the aspects these 'two kindred spirits' had in common Britten's own love and skill in interpreting Schubert's songs as accompanist to Peter Pears, in which 'recreation comes tangibly close to creation', is well remembered. Schubert was generally sociable in a way in which Britten was not, but both composers shared an understanding of the isolated in society, whether by personal inclination or emotional and psychological circumstances Schubert's working life was spent in contact with a group of like-minded artists and friends, Britten formed his own 'society-within-a-society' in his native Suffolk, and a direct link was provided by one of the main protagonists in the series, the English Chamber Orchestra, so often used by him at the Aldeburgh Festival, and with soloists such as Robert Tear, who were among the first interpreters of his music

So, for a blissful ten days the Queen Elizabeth Hall was filled — yes, really filled — with Britten addicts, Schubert addicts, students and just the curious, not to mention the fans of the various star participants On the evenings Mitsuko Uchida played, the hall was liberally dotted with Japanese families, each with one or two immaculately attired and behaved children, quiet as musical mice Taken home at the interval, at a time when obviously all good children go to bed, they left a gap that was more than physical Bedtime for the rest of us was even later than usual, as every evening had a kind of *bonne bouche* at its end, in which a selection from Schubert's vast output of songs was performed, a most ingenious and attractive method of sampling his lyricism These mini-recitals were a real bonus, five or six Schubertian jewels thrown in for the cost of the concert ticket If asked to single out one singer, I would have selected Sarah Walker for her depth of interpretation allied with richness of voice. Those in the audience choosing to stay behind were not just a rarified sprinkling either — about one-third lingered on enthusiastically The reluctance to leave was a token of the general feeling during the series — that of a friendly club The usual queues for programmes and drinks and the sharing of tables became an opportunity for discussion and exchange of views, with many people choosing to attend the maximum number of concerts.

Fierrebras was a challenging and fascinating opener — so much so that more than one member of the audience decided to return for the second performance, especially for the 'funny bits' These were not intentional, but the kind of thing that happens in semi-staged performances, and the producer, Michael Rennison, certainly expected a great deal of his rather mixed cast, who not only had to sing but handle

props and scenery as well The latter was intended to set the appearance and atmosphere of Schubert's inner circle of friends, (those who took part in the domestic performances of his works known as the *Schubertiade)* putting on his eleventh complete opera to cheer him after the Vienna Hofoper Opera had failed in its promise to produce it round about 1824 So, a delightfully cosy Biedermeier setting had to be transmogrified into the courts of Charlemagne and his enemy, a Moorish prince. On the whole, this was skilfully achieved, but I was considerably distracted by a delightful cut-out cardboard lapdog which refused to be concealed under the piano during the most bloodthirsty battles Schubert himself was irritating, too. He does not appear in his own opera but the producer's concept brought him in Still, it was all very lively, and magnificently sung in particular by the heroine, Florinda, cast in the same mould as Beethoven's Leonora No wonder Marianne Haeggander has been Bayreuth's favourite Eva since 1981. Thomas Moser was a stalwart hero, only outshone by Roland Hermann as the leader of the Frankish knights because that was the way the composer angled things, which provides some explanation of why the work is not an obvious candidate for production The hero's role is considerably underwritten and he does not appear at all in Act II. But melody abounds and there are some excellent ensembles and choral sections Claudio Abbado has recently conducted it in Vienna, and it would be interesting to see it, say at the Coliseum (where no doubt David Pountney would present it in a way that would not have occurred to many people) Meanwhile, we can look forward to Elizabeth Norman McKay's book on Schubert's stageworks, commissioned by the International Franz Schubert Institute of Vienna for publication in 1989

The rest of this particular series, though less novel (the Aldeburgh Festival had scooped Britten's first opera *Paul Bunyan* in a similar semi-staged performance in June) placed Britten and Schubert works in pleasing conjunction which, though it did not present any startling insights, left a lot of people entertained and happy The music was performed by an attractive, accomplished group of artists, some long-established in the Aldeburgh and London scenes and others less well-known Robert Tear is now clearly free of Peter Pears' benevolent shadow, but gave authentic and moving accounts of Britten's *Nocturne* and *Winter Words* song cycles and of Schubert's Goethe songs His long experience was contrasted with the young Andreas Schmidt, giving his first London performance of *Winterreise* At twenty-eight, he has some way to go in discovering — and conveying — the full length of Schubert's unhappy journey, but it was a promising foretaste of what we can hope to receive in his future maturity The voice is already an instrument of quality and precision, perfect material for his teacher Dietrich Fischer-Dieskau.

The Endellion String Quartet gave all Britten's string quartets and an excellent selection of Schubert's chamber music, and the English Chamber Orchestra, directed by Jeffrey Tate, was equal to all demands, from the delicacy of Britten's early Sinfonietta to the strength of his Cello Sym-

phony which, with Schubert's 'Great' C major Symphony, formed the satisfying finale to the series.

'The harvest now is over, the summer days are gone', as the Hebrews remark in *Elijah.* We are now coming to grips with sterner stuff. The series entitled 'Beethoven Plus', which opened the autumn season in mid-September and continues until 10 December, is more of a challenge We have the chance of enjoying a major historical survey of Beethoven's place in the context of his contemporaries The statistics (at once dazzling and boring as they tend to be) seem all-embracing, but suffice it to say that Beethoven's nine symphonies will be performed by seven different groups, with interpretations through the spectrum of original instruments, 'modern' chamber orchestras and the more conventional idea of the full symphony orchestra as we know it today. Another fascinating comparison will be between his first version of the Fidelio drama — actually entitled *Leonore* — directed by Roger Norrington, and the final version of *Fidelio* itself, conducted by Kurt Masur. Another operatic contrast will be a concert version of Spontini's *La Vestale,* written two years after Beethoven's first thoughts on Fidelio Long a vehicle for stars such as Callas and Ponselle but still rarely given, especially in London, this will be the first live enactment since those at Covent Garden in 1842

Following this feast of entertaining edification comes the more demanding proposition, *The Reluctant Revolutionary,* which presents all at once, for the first time ever, the complete works of Arnold Schoenberg, again set within the sensible context of his rather more accessible fellow composers It is a fine historic perspective of the Austro-Germanic tradition, beginning with Bach, continuing with Schoenberg himself and his own students, Berg and Webern, and finishing with those of our own time who admit his influence — Berio, Boulez, Ligeti and Stockhausen No-one is likely to emerge from this celebration without an expansion — perhaps an explosion — of knowledge and understanding. Eyes will be opened as well as ears for from 4 November *Crossroads Vienna* at the Royal Festival Hall will exhibit paintings and other visual references to the cultural history of the city of Brahms and Schoenberg (It must be remembered that Schoenberg himself was a painter). Reference should also be made to the excellently produced South Bank Centre brochures, for each of these two series, to obtain a full picture of the season's enthralling possibilities London can fairly claim to be in the forefront as far as stimulating programme planning is concerned

---

[Dilys Hartog has worked for Peter Daubeny, theatre impresario, and on Secker and Warburg's music list The Artistic Administrator of Abbey Dore Festival from 1965 to 1970, and formerly a member of Council, Philharmonia Chorus, she is at present researching their history.]

EDINBURGH FESTIVAL FRINGE 1988

by Emma Dyer

DESPITE the host of leaflets flying from the high corners of the city, it is by word of mouth that Shows on the Edinburgh fringe most successfully lure their audiences. Once a show has caught alight on their lips, they assemble to be crammed into the smallest of venues, to be won and influenced, this year in particular at the Traverse Theatre and by Communicado with *Blood Wedding* as the hottest tickets of the final week

In less heavily patronised locations, the Edinburgh fringe audience, even as individuals, become a highly valued commodity With such a degree of choice, if one show disappoints, the ghosts of the forty-seven others 'sacrificed' to fit into the elegant plan of campaign loom large. The best shows dislocate one's thoughts of time and place, while the expectations and demands of theatre, so quickly focused, despite good intentions to be open to new ideas, are thrown aside only by the most daring and original work

Bizarre titles often crayon over the full content of a production so that those that leap from the programme may be regarded with suspicion *The Tainted Honey of the Homicidal Bees* by Theatre Caddis, however, perfectly describes the show, reflecting not only the originality of the writing and acting but also the substance of the mystery-plot A young man is suffocated with insects in his mouth, nose and ears and by family guilt. A collection of non-sequiturs and superb performances by the three women as the police, servants and the weary family members creates an impressively claustrophobic atmosphere.

The Life and Times of Hieronymus Bosch proves to be as arresting as its slightly misleading title, being an agile, exuberant meditation on the medieval mind and its imagined preoccupations, particularly religion The parallels between then and now are emblazoned across the stage, rather than subtly drawn, although some moments work particularly well, such as the simultaneous rendition of 'When I Fall in Love' by Nat King Cole (on record) and Ian Paisley, as impersonated by the Bosch character. The bright, rich design and music however, do little to lessen the feeling of being talked down to, that this is a lesson Thus one's own sense of discovery is not allowed to flourish

Shadow Syndicate's adaptation of Henry James's *The Turn of the Screw* contrives to do the opposite, with every emotion directed inwards to the centre of the stage so that the audience is drawn into both this tale of possession and the manner of the telling. It is an intense and clear, almost hostile piece of theatre. Images projected onto the faces of the children make them seem even more unreachable. It is difficult to conceive of a description of the play without using the word 'style', although it seems to undermine the precision and power of this rendering of a complex tale on the stage

Laughter becomes a cheap reflex action when easy targets are hammered in parodies, the worst of all being the parody of the gameshow, invariably ensnaring performers in the blandness of the formula. In fact, the game shows themselves usually come off rather better, their grotesqueness is part of the plan, and surely the perpetrators of this tired vein of satire cannot believe that they are the first to have spotted the unpleasant implications of the popularity of the game show. Even used as a metaphor for unthinking greed in the worthiest of shows, the real gameshows are always more shockingly tacky than the parodies Similarly unimpressive is the nostalgia element, generally triggered by a song or two from the thirties Words mimed by the actors constitute a graver offence. Hull Truck's *September in the Rain* is intent on sentiment, while Snarling Beasties' *Gangsters,* despite superb choreography and a good sting in the tail, uninvents itself with mimed songs This is a production which played snap with Hull Truck's irredeemably slick *Bouncers* The latter is perhaps a victim of its years of fringe success, with routines so beautifully oiled that one prays for a rough edge or two It still manages, however, not to take itself too seriously. Lucky Eric's third speech, promising to be another lament for the young girls who throw their lives away, proves to be a quick snatch of Richard III

There is no lack of fine acting on the fringe, often in one-man shows, a form which demands above all else a *raison-d'être A Fair Slab of Comfort* delights with its intimacy and hospitality. The audience are invited to take tea while listening to a few good stories, delivered with humour and warmth by the immediately likeable Marcus O'Tuiruisce. *Hugh Miller (1802-56),* is more ambitious in its emotional range, but fails to convince, not because the life of the geologist isn't fascinating, but because it seems unlikely that he would so willingly share his story of rage and pain, told on the eve of his suicide

A Shower of Leaflets by Shimako Murai also charts the course of a life through painful memories, as a second generation victim of the Hiroshima bombing attempts to make sense of her circumstances Listening to Chieko Kurihara is like watching a child pick flowers She makes one aware of the delicacy of each one, while the hopelessness of her plight suffuses each movement and gesture. She allows us to witness some part of her misfortune, without the power to fully comprehend it herself

Undertow and *Tunnel Soldiers* use recent wars to suggest that the soldiers and people of both East and West are basically the same, good or bad. Both employ some stock filmic clichés, particularly the former, which drives towards the inevitable conclusion of an American victory over Japanese inscrutability. The set, more lavish than most fringe sets, looks cheap, while the language and gestures of the Japanese soldier are more often than not represented as comic, despite an expressive performance by George Takei. The cast of *Tunnel Soldiers* achieves a remarkable tension in the small, pristine setting of the French Institute Using the constant noise of helicopters and a rare degree of concentration, they show the doomed soldiers fighting the violent consequences of claustro-

phobia and the desperate need to trust their fellow human beings The best written of these war plays is Donald Main's *Strange Growths in Vietnam* a show which gleefully rents out every cliché in the book or film, and then bombards the audience with even more of them The tautly constructed scenes are admirably performed by the loose-limbed James Wallace, who leaps from one stock character to the next with energetic charm His disillusionment at the discovery of the Disney film crew's encouragement of reluctant lemmings by hurling them off the cliffs says as much about the power of the film stereotype as it does of the recruitment policy of the US Army in the mid-60's.

A performance of great stature was given by Roberto Cordovani as the mesmeric Greta Garbo impersonator in the Brazilian drama *A Sideways Glance.* The Portuguese language may be unfamiliar, but the magnitude and sensuality of all three actors communicated in the simplest of scenes, as for instance. when they squeeze past each other in the narrow seats of a cinema.

Rod Quantock, 'a bi-centennial present from Australia', manages to demonstrate that wearing a Groucho Marx mask as part of a coach party of fifty-three is the only safe way to avoid both him and extreme embarrassment on the nights when he hits town. This is audience participation taken to extreme Whether it is parody or an excuse to worry a whole city at once, Rod Quantock's bus tours convince victims and participants alike of the power of the crowd audience Touring the front rooms of Edinburgh posing as a group of Jewish Folk Singers the motto was, 'As individuals we are nothing, but as a group we are invincible', although the sortie on the changing rooms of the swimming pool led to us all being banned. My admiration went to the first man whose household we surprised The casual enquiry by Rod, 'Could you put the kettle on?' was countered with the reply, 'I'll just throw a tea-bag in the bath'. Rod managed to weasel out of him the location of the grumpiest neighbours—next door, in fact—who 'never say hello' and in retrospect I have to applaud the spirit of this neighbour who managed to be cross with all fifty-three of us at once, a formidable troop, as we carolled his wife with 'Jingle Bells', while Rod insulted his curtains through a megaphone. Theatre and real life are merged to the extent that no-one seems to be able to say with any certainty who are the performers and who the audience, although Rod Quantock is unlikely to be upstaged. Bizarre and off-beat his performance may be, yet it demonstrates, at one end of the spectrum, the value of maintaining the Edinburgh Fringe as a genuine 'free-for-all, without advance assessment or limitation either of quantity or quality'.

[Emma Dyer has worked as publicity assistant at the Horseshoe Theatre, Basingstoke and has written theatre criticism for local papers.]

Literary Supplement

LENIN AND THE WORLD

Lenin Ronald W Clark. Faber & Faber £17 95.

Of those who have lived in the present century, Lenin has surely had more direct influence on the social and political life of the world than anyone else Hitler? His direct influence was horrendous but temporary, even if the indirect consequences of his evil domination are still with us Pope John XXIII? Freud? Einstein? We enter here a different league Clark has already written admirable biographies of the last two, but this one is the best of the three

What were Lenin's most easily recognised qualities? Bertram Russell whose visit to Russia converted him from a pro to an anti communist had this to say of him — 'I think if I had met him without knowing who he was I should not have guessed he was a great man, but should have thought him an opinionated professor His strength comes, I imagine, from his honesty, courage and his unwavering faith — religious faith in Marxian orthodoxy' No-one can question his total dedication to 'Revolution' or his charismatic appeal to his followers Churchill, however, in one of the most eloquent of his purple passages paid a well-justified tribute to his brains 'His mind was a remarkable instrument When its light shone it revealed the whole world, its history, its sorrows, its stupidities, its shams, and above all its wrongs It revealed all facts in its focus — the most unwelcome, the most inspiring — with an equal ray The intellect was capacious and in some phases superb It was capable of universal comprehension in a degree rarely reached among men' Clark omits the still more striking words 'His sympathies cold and wide as the Arctic ocean, his hatreds tight as the hangman's noose'

The Tsarist regime had already been destroyed by the time the Bolsheviks took over It took Lenin to overthrow the insipient democracy and to initiate the terror which murdered so many millions under Lenin and Stalin Clark tells the traumatic story vividly and dispassionately I put down his book without knowing what he really thought about Communism Some historians will count that to him for righteousness

At one point he seems to be conceding too much to Lenin's admirers He refers to 'the single ambition of his life' This was the restructuring of Russian society at least, and if possible that of the world, into a form which, he believed, would enable human beings to exploit their potentialities more fully than was possible under capitalism' Clark concludes that 'his success in Russia is beyond doubt' we are not bound to agree with him there He seems to reach a juster balance when he refers at the end to 'the terror that he helped to inaugurate and evolution of a system of life unacceptable to those outside the mental and physical strait-jacket of communist belief' For my part, if I credit Lenin with a supreme influence on world history, I debit him also with the infliction of unparallelled damage Today we are beginning to hope wondrous things from Gorbachov It is fair to speculate that if Gorbachov had been available to lead the Russian Revolution in 1917, the years since then would have been vastly better, even if Russia had lost territory in the process

FRANK LONGFORD

TRUE TORIES

Edwardian Conservatism Five Studies in Adaptation. Edited by J A Thompson and Arthur Mejia Croom-Helm £27 30.

We are indebted to five talented Americans for these studies of men who attempted 'to reconcile traditional values with the radical imperatives of the modern world', the perennial task of the Tory Party. They write attractively and with percipience But the published price is steep

Professor Arthur Mejia, who is one of two editors, defines Lord Hugh Cecil's philosophy as belief in liberty with discipline and a Conservatism rooted in religion and morality Politicians, for Cecil, must be judged by a religious criterion The Chief Rabbi was recently elevated to the House of Lords Cecil wanted Life Peers to represent there the great non-Anglican denominations For him, however, Unitarians were not Christians and he brought an action against the Bishop and the Dean of Liverpool for permitting one of their ministers to preach in their Cathedral Such a 'scandal' would be a gift to the Roman Catholics Some Anglicans of today might doubt Lord Hugh's wisdom in espousing the establishment in 1919 of the Church Assembly (now National Synod of the Church of England) He disapproved of the ordination of women. He approved of the 1928 Prayer Book

Cecil was exceptional in his concern for black South Africans Winston Churchill who, with Smuts, wanted Southern Rhodesia to join the Union of South Africa, assured Lord Hugh that black rights would be protected However, the Southern Rhodesian electorate in referendum rejected the Union and the two white-ruled countries followed different paths.

As for Ireland, Cecil deplored the delay in Catholic Emancipation which had provoked the agitation for Home Rule, but he regarded that cause as shameful and dangerous to the Empire which Cecil Rhodes for one believed he could serve Cecil praised the Unionist record of 1895-1905 when reforms were made in the hope of killing Home Rule 'by kindness'.

The most far-reaching was the Wyndham Land Purchase Act The other editor, Professor J A Thompson, takes as his subject a Tory whom G K. Chesterton (not quoted) described as 'the last of England's knights' Your reviewer is one of George Wyndham's biographers and is grateful for the light thrown upon his Irish tragedy Wyndham's Imperialism is too strident for the Professor's taste, but he sums him up as 'a far less eccentric and a far more significant figure of his own time than historians have recognised'

Professor R J. Q Adam's essay on Field-Marshal Earl Roberts, VC, who began his service under John Company and died in wartime France close to his beloved sepoys, is racy and readable but somewhat slapdash In those days the 'Royal Military College' not 'Academy' was at Sandhurst The RMA was then at Woolwich The Punjab was not 'the centre of the Mutiny' On the contrary Nor was the 'office of Governor-General' abolished when the Crown took over from the Company and the Viceroyalty was set up

This fine and gallant soldier, rival in Imperial achievement to Garnet Wolseley who was made a Viscount after failing to relieve Gordon in Khartum, was no politician His 'uncomplicated' Conservatism was of *noblesse oblige* He identified Britain and her Empire with Britain's Army and Navy He strove for Army reform and citizen service, warning House of Lords and country of mounting danger — as did Erskine Childers and William Le Queux, whom Roberts advised on technicalities, in their popular novels An Anglo-Irishman,

he was not unmindful, any more than Lord Hugh Cecil, of Catholic grievances; but he made no secret of his belief that the coercion of Ulster could have destroyed the Army.

In contrast to the indifference to Ulster in many present-day Conservative circles, the Union in danger is a theme common to all five vignettes, not least the essay by Mr Gregory D Phillips on Lord Willoughby de Broke This fox-hunter and '(last) Ditcher' based his political philosophy on his upbringing on a great Warwickshire estate Though lacking political experience, he was to the Diehard fore with Selborne, Milner, Austen Chamberlain, Wyndham, Carson, F E Smith and Leo Amery Sharing with Wyndham and others of their day a certain racialist approach in a period of threatened Empire, de Broke strayed into eugenics Not that he can be faulted for wanting a health ministry and programme in the post-war reconstruction By this time de Broke's landed paternalism was out of tune with the economic individualism with which the hard-faced businessmen countered the rise of socialism It was symbolic when in 1921 he sold his estate to a manufacturer Like Wyndham, he died young

Willoughby de Broke founded the Diehard Halsbury Club Professor Richard A Cosgrove describes a highly political Lord Chancellor Hardinge Stanley Giffard, first Baron Halsbury, was not a romantic Tory like Wyndham or Willoughby de Broke, with whom he fought the Parliament Act of 1911 *a l'outrance* Revering the past and the hereditary principle, he yet manifested 'a pragmatic accommodation of modernity' Which has been the normal concern of Tories

JOHN BIGGS-DAVISON

AMERICAN INTELLIGENCE IN WORLD WAR II

Cloak and Gown, Scholars in America's Secret War Robin Winks. Collins Harvill £20 00

Robin Winks, Master of Berkeley College, Yale, brings many talents to the writing of this book a long association with Yale and with public service, a vast personal library as rich in detective fiction as in Imperial, Canadian and Black history (he writes a regular column analysing 'thrillers') and just across the road from the archives of the Sterling and the Beinecke Libraries, a detailed knowledge of London, and of England, and of its pubs (to which he has written a guide-book of his own), and a remarkable skill in describing the venues in which agents worked, and in bringing them to life as people, warts and all For its picture of Yale, of many of its war-time and post-war historians, and of the methods by which the US recruited its agents and analysts, his book (with 100 pages of crisp and highly personal research notes) is very welcome For this reviewer, it induces nostalgia, since he can testify to the Master's kindness to guests in his College For its account of American intelligence in operation in World War II, his study must stand alongside the great 'trade' books like Sir John Masterman's *The Double Cross System* (1972), which was the first post-war volume, suitably doctored to breach the code of silence It is also a treasure trove of real spy-stories, of some eccentrics, like Donald Downes, whom Winks rightly likens to 'a loose cannon on the deck', like 'Lefty' Wilmarth Lewis, the collector and editor of the Horace Walpole Papers, and some real heroes, like Norman Holmes Pearson, then no more, in rank, than an instructor in Yale College.

For anyone with experience of 'the game' but at the other end of the line, the book arouses envy — and surprise Envy of life at desks and in the cool, usually in London — with or without its doodlebugs — or at Bletchley or St Albans, of the number who came from Ivy League and, usually, well-heeled backgrounds, rarely, it seems, in uniform or under a tight discipline, 'enjoying' the war but without suffering much hardship, or for long But this envy is, in essence, that of a desert rat in a war-theatre where intelligence had to be gained from PoW's or by patient 'Y' work, and was for 'use', not for 'research'

The surprise is the speed with which a collection of scholars, junior and senior, were recruited, briefed and turned into agents, even if they were used more for R and A — research and analysis — than for 'derring-do' The US came in the war, late, it lacked the network of agents, in Europe and elsewhere, that Britain had, torn though that chain was by the speed of the German drive into Norway and into France in May 1940 And it lacked notably those products of the Indian 'political', and of the Consular and the Levant services, that gave Britain so many advantages in the area we still call 'The Middle East', and in those areas, like Paiforce and the Gulf, that were seen as the preserves of GHQ, India American Intelligence, rooted in its anti-imperialist dogmas, lacked the compensating advantages brought to Britain from what were then called — the terms used as descriptive and not as denigratory — 'colonial' or 'overseas' or 'mandated' territories, and from its trading outposts in Malta, the Levant and the Gulf Not many of the fascinating personalities in Professor Winks' pages seem to have reached the Middle East — though, as he admits, the British there did think that there were too many Americans, (p 214) and, as he does not say, wondered what in fact they did with all the paper they industriously collected Nor were all of them, be it said, as hostile to the return of the King of the Hellenes as Robin Winks implies — and, if they were, in the light of what happened in Greece in 1945-6, were they necessarily wise? Many of them were as fond of Groppi's as were the King's numerous attachés

These comments, however, reflect only differences of location and function. Robin Winks' book becomes an indispensable text, as well as an unusual tribute to a great University Yale and its college buildings is a cleaner, better-equipped — and warmer — edition of Oxbridge, thanks to millionaires like Edward Harkness and Andrew Mellon, as this book testifies, its strongly Anglophile faculty fitted easily into the Allied Intelligence network And, as he also reminds us, whether in MEF, India, or FARELF, or in London's Broadway or War Box, did we not feel that we were poor little lambs who had lost our way, and would end a beer fest with the Yale song —

Gentlemen-rankers out on the spree
Damned from here to Eternity
God ha' mercy on such as we,
Baa! Yah! Bah!

Or did we? Only late on, and if the beer did not come from Tobruk or Mersa The song we usually sang was in fact 'Lili Marlene'

ESMOND WRIGHT

INSIDE THE WHITE HOUSE

Leadership in the Modern Presidency Fred I Greenstein (ed) Harvard University Press £23 95 *For the Record From Wall Street to Washington* Donald T Regan. Hutchinson £16 95.

Whether one likes it or not, much of this autumn will resound with the American Presidential election These books are therefore quite timely

The first book, edited by Professor Greenstein, is the result of a conference at Princeton University in 1987 It examines the nine men who have held the office of President since Franklin Roosevelt was inaugurated in 1933 The essays do not aim to be miniature biographies or summaries of political policies Their purpose is to show how each man viewed the presidency and how he organised his staff in order to realise his goals

Naturally, as in any such collection, some of the essays are better than others For those who are unfamiliar with modern Presidents, it might be helpful to read the summation by the editor at the end of the book as this helps to put each of the men in some focus

The essays should cause many people to change their views on certain Presidents Professor Leuchtenburg's chapter on Franklin D Roosevelt is particularly good and is one of the best written in the book A notable feature of it which one wishes some of the others had followed is the attempt to place F D R in some international context, by drawing on sources such as the Lloyd George papers Roosevelt's achievements are, of course, central to any examination of the growth of presidential power

It is not possible to go through each essay and comment on each President It might be best to point out those that challenge familiar prejudices The essay on President Eisenhower shows that 'Ike', far from being nothing but a genial golfer, was a man who had thought longer than any other President about the nature of leadership and the way to organise a staff Another President who emerges with a much enhanced reputation is Gerald Ford who was thrust into office when the press finally achieved their goal of forcing Richard Nixon to resign The essay on Ford is written by one of his staff but it does not stray from scholarly objectivity As with Eisenhower, Ford was another man who had given much thought to the organisation of government One of his best decisions was to try to return power to the Cabinet officers and take it away from those mysterious and often repugnant beings who seem to spring up round each of America's elective monarchs

The essay on Carter is as confused as its subject and will do little to repair the image of that disastrous administration While the essay on President Reagan is not particularly good, it does show that the present incumbent draws on an old tradition in using the White House as 'a bully pulpit' to expound his ideology

This collection, in spite of some weaknesses, should long remain an important examination of the uses and abuses of political power It is unfortunate that it does not include the comments made on each essay by someone who had served under that President We could happily have dispensed with some of the scholarly footnotes to provide space for the practical criticisms of informed eye-witnesses It is particularly unfortunate that the remarks of Vice-President Bush, who attended the conference and summed up its conclusions, are left out Time will only tell whether he will have to be included in the next edition!

One of the main features of many of the essays is the power exercised by a President's 'chief of staff' Donald Regan fulfilled that function for Ronald Reagan until he was forced to resign because of the 'Irangate' controversy His book generated a great deal of publicity because of its revelations about the Rasputin-like power of a star gazer in California who decided which day

was favourable for the President to emerge from the White House The book is better than one feared and does contain some useful background to the exercise of Presidential power

RICHARD MULLEN

FREUD FOR OUR TIME

Freud A Life for our Time Peter Gay Dent £16 95 *The Riddle of Freud Jewish Influences on his Theory of Female Sexuality* Estelle Roith Tavistock £10 95

Freud haunts us still, not stern, but sad, assured of his own mortality, lethal, forbidden, torpedo cigar, phallic, pointed away from himself in unwilling photographs Of the writings around him there will be no end Professor Gay's exhaustive study, humane, profoundly educative, is the work to which scholars in general will turn for reference, for accuracy of fact, and for judgment that is always balanced No one has ever set Freud's career so consistently and in so masterful a way against the historical background — although the psychoanalytical theory floats along on its own, encapsulated As an eminent historian, and also, unusually, a graduate of the Western New England Institute of Psychoanalysis, Professor Gay comes fully armed to his first venture in biography It must be said, reluctantly, that Freud does not stalk these pages, alive and warm, as he does in personal memoirs, which Professor Gay does not, of course, wish to reduplicate, and it is difficult to see how this distancing could be avoided when Freud the man is episodically sandwiched between the passages of history and psychoanalytical explication

Anyone who comes to Professor Gay in the expectation of a treatise in which Freud is made peculiarly relevant and therapeutic to the present times will be disappointed. This *can* be done, naturally, particularly in the matter of aggression, and a loose historical parallel may be drawn between the débâcle of the current Cleveland Sex Abuse Scandal and Freud's abandonment of his seduction theory — that all neurosis had its origin in early sexual abuse The appeal to 'Our Time' apparently rests upon a need for an authoritative biography, a sifted consensus of all that is known, and Professor Gay has read just about everything relating to Freud He is justifiably proud of his new material and discoveries (none actually momentous) such as the accurate rendering of Freud's assisted dying (at the age of eighty-three) and a deepening of our knowledge of the relationship between Freud and his daughter, Anna The long bibliographical essay is especially recommended for close study; its lively personal commentary and appraisals are as instructive as the main text Gaps still tantalise Professor Gay, and he is pained by the policy of The Sigmund Freud Archives, Inc , which guards unpublished material such as the one thousand or so letters which Freud and his fiancée exchanged during the five years of their engagement Who knows which writer will be selected for the accolade of editing this personal and sensitive corpus?

Possibly a woman who is also a practising psychoanalyst, such as Estelle Roith, who, in her downright exciting exploration has contributed something genuinely new to the study of Freudian theory . Professor Gay is aware of all the work done on Freud's Jewish background, but he does not attach undue importance to it, and concentrates more (perhaps as a historian) on anti-Semitism As a matter of fact, Estelle Roith complains of Professor Gay's previous writings on Freud that his perceptions of Freud in Vienna seem to be based on 'some kind of muddled idealisation of Freud' (not true!) and that

'if we bear in mind that Freud's parents lived in the working-class ghetto district of Leopoldstadt where, according to Martin Freud, (Freud's son) Jews lived who "were not of the best type" . . it is clear that Freud spent a great deal of time in an atmosphere rather less rarified than Gay would prefer' Even so, Professor Gay has his misgivings about Freud's relationship with his 'typical Polish Jewess mother' (Martin Freud), seeing it as a 'touchy topic', with the bond less secure than Ernest Jones believed. the photograph caption, 'The sixteen-year-old Freud with his adored mother, Amalia' does not do Professor Gay justice Estelle Roith goes much deeper, arguing that both covert and overt elements of Freud's Jewish culture survived in him, and that no previous study has come to grips with the complex relationship between Freud's origins and his theories of sex and gender Jewishness has been played down by the psychoanalytical movement — as Freud explicitly directed, for it to prosper Jones was quite wrong to state that Freud was brought up in a secular home atmosphere Estelle Roith proposes that Freud's conflicting feelings towards his Jewish identity could not be surmounted by him in his perception of women — his 'dark continent' Perhaps Professor Gay would consider this study to be too speculative, or too tendentious, or (nobly) interesting, and the very fact that one misses and would seek his opinion says a great deal

MOLLY TIBBS

SHORTER REVIEWS

Gorbachov's Reforms (Aldine de Gruyter, New York) This is a valuable contribution, under the editorship of Peter Juviler and Hiroshi Kimura, on the background, the situation before June 1988, and the prospects of the reforms, by a group of American and Japanese specialists The editors conclude that the Gorbachov reforms are designed 'to preserving the status of the USSR as a world power into the 21st century' The obstacles 'reflect remnants of Stalin's legacy'. Gail Warshofsky Lapidus writes on Gorbachov's agenda, and Peter H Juviler on 'Prospects for Perestroika' Reform and ideology are discussed in separate pieces by James P Scanlan and Nobuo Shimotomai Tatsuo Kaneda writes on Gorbachov's economic reforms, and his foreign policy is discussed by Alexander Dallin. It is further dealt with by Tsuyoshi Hasegawa. To westerners, Hiroshi Kimura's piece on the Asian-Pacific region is of much interest Why, he asks, has the USSR been adopting 'a more flexible economic policy' in that region? The writer insists that the Soviet Union has the same objective. While 'desire to reinvigorate the stagnant Soviet economy is undoubtedly the primary reason', the Soviet Union's objective remains the same, but to dominate by a combination of military and economic pressures He insists that Japan will not enter into any agreement with the Soviet Union which does not satisfy the Japanese claim to the return of the island Northern Territories seized by the USSR at the end of World War II

The New Maginot Line (Coronet Books £4 95) This is a paperback edition of Jon Connell's attack upon military technology, published in 1986 His theme is that all technology, whether for nuclear or conventional weapons is vastly expensive, inefficient and ineffective It provides no deterent and can indeed be provocative 'My prescription for Western defence', he

writes, 'is a gradual incremental improvement in conventional forces, less reliance on nuclear weapons and a greater emphasis on diplomacy' Nonetheless he does concede that nuclear strength has played a part in preserving peace since 1945 between the great powers He seems to have remarkable faith in diplomacy unbacked by strength.

The Case for Animal Rights (Routledge Paperback £7 95) Tom Regan's study was first published in 1984 Its fresh publication now will widen its readership, if not its influence It is essentially a philosophical discourse on the relationship between man and animals, runing into 400 pages of closely argued material At the heart of the argument is the nature and extent of man's rights and duties As an example of the latter, is 'the harmful use of animals in research and calls for its total elimination' Mr Regan concludes that 'the laudatory achievements of science, including the many genuine benefits obtained for both humans and animals, do not justify the unjust means used to secure them' On the other hand he accepts the primacy of man in life and death He cites the lifeboat which has only room for four survivors There are five survivors, four normal adults and one dog. He concedes that the four humans have priority and the dog must die 'No reasonable person would deny that the death of any of the four humans is a greater prima facie loss, and thus a greater prima facie harm, than would be true in the case of the dog' In many ways this study is controversial but no less valuable for its contribution to this field of thought.

The White Bird (Hogarth Press £7 95.) Lloyd Spencer has written a short Introduction to this latest collection of essays and writings by John Berger They cover a very wide range of themes from art to history, poetry, the ideology of fiction, travel, and politics Whether or not, the reader agrees with the arguments, his views are a pleasure to read This collection was first published in Great Britain in 1985

Murder Club Guides. (Harrap, £5 95) The first four of eight projected regional volumes quarter London, South-East England, the Midlands and North-West England Edited by Brian Lane, these attractive miscellanies of conducted tours of famously infamous scenes are excellent value; not only do they add piquancy to one's journeyings about Britain, but they constitute a most unusual archive of strange happenings, many of which have, across the centuries, entered into British folklore Shorn by the passage of time of their whilom shockingness, such well-weathered disclosures shade now into the acceptable perspective of history There is much to interest, and little to disturb, the gentle reader here On the other hand, for those who are specifically interested in criminous affairs these volumes are ripe with nicely turned accounts of a multitude of less well known occurrences which have been painstakingly exhumed That cliché of superlative recommendation — 'No crime fancier's book shelf can be complete without them' — is, like most clichés, only the more true by reason of its constant repetition We await with interest the selection to be presented in the next instalment of these cliff-hanger 'true tales of dark deeds and arch fiends' when the four concluding volumes of this survey are published One might just hope that the quality of some of the illustrations may be improved.

(R.W-E)

THE DEPARTMENT OF BIOLOGY OF HOFSTRA UNIVERSITY and THE HOFSTRA CULTURAL CENTER

in association with

THE SOCIETY OF PROTOZOOLOGISTS

are pleased to announce

THE FIRST EASTCOAST REGIONAL MEETING OF THE SOCIETY OF PROTOZOOLOGISTS AT HOFSTRA UNIVERSITY

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY — June 1, 2, 3, 1989

For full particulars please apply to Laura J Tringone or Alexej Urgrinsky, Conference Co-ordinators, Hofstra Cultural Centre, Hempstead, New York 11550, USA Telephone (516) 560-5669

The Dragonfly Press

'Therefore Imagine'

The works of Clemence Dane

DAVID WALDRON SMITHERS

1988 is the centenary of the birth of Clemence Dane talented Kentish playwright, author, critic, novelist, artist and sculptor This book describes all her known works and includes nine black and white photographs

Copies obtainable from The Dragonfly Press, 2 Charlton Cottages, Barden Road, Speldhurst, Tunbridge Wells, Kent TN3 0LH
Telephone 0892 862395 Price £8 50

BOOKSEARCHERS

We trace and supply out-of-print and specialist publications Write or telephone us with your requirements or ask for a search request form

BOOKSEARCHERS (CR),
71 North Eleventh St , Central Milton Keynes, Bucks MK9 3BU
Tel 0908 665345 (24 hrs)

31 JUL 1989

CARE FOR OUR DISABLED

RAFA WINGS APPEAL

DURING SEPTEMBER

DONATIONS PLEASE TO ROYAL AIR FORCES ASSN , APPEALS DEPT (SD), PORTLAND RD , MALVERN, WORCS WR14 2TA.

FREELANCE PRESS SERVICES

Freelance Market News issues six times annually providing up to date information about editors' requirements at home and abroad. Full particulars of the magazine and topical supplements may be obtained from

Freelance Press Services, 5/9 Bexley Square, Salford,
Manchester UK M3 6DB
Specimen copy £1 65 including postage

ORDER FORM

To **The Subscription Manager,**

Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG

I enclose herewith my cheque for , for a year's subscription
[For rates, see inside front cover]

Name

Address

Printed by MANDEVILLE PRESS, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ, and published by the CONTEMPORARY REVIEW CO LTD, 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG
Telephone 01-831 7791 All business matters

Contemporary Review

122nd YEAR OF PUBLICATION

DECEMBER 1988

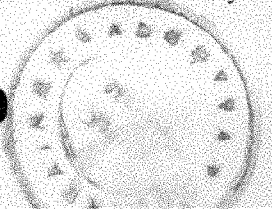
'ROLLBACK' IN EAST EUROPE
Stephen Larrabee

HOLY WAR IN LATIN AMERICA
Robert Stone

INTO THE FUTURE WITH THE BLACK ECONOMY
A. D. Harvey

ANTHONY TROLLOPE AND THE BEVERLEY ELECTION
Robert Woodall

and other articles together with a seven-page Literary Supplement and Half-Yearly Index.



£1.30

Contemporary Review

incorporating The Fortnightly

December 1988 Vol. 253 No. 1475 Founded 1866

Contents

		Page
'Rollback' in East Europe	Stephen Larrabee	**281**
Holy War in Latin America	Robert Stone	**287**
Into the Future with the Black Economy	A. D. Harvey	**295**
Military Aspects of 'Common Security' in Europe	Francesco Calogero	**300**
Is There Life After NATO?	J. A. Bayer	**303**
Lebanon is not Bulgaria	Antoine J. Abraham	**309**
Britain's Waste	Rosalind Wade	**312**
Will the Vietnamese Starve?	Nghiem Xuan Thien	**317**
Anthony Trollope and the Beverley Election	Robert Woodall	**320**
Another Modest Proposal (After Dean Swift)	John Elsom	**325**
LITERARY SUPPLEMENT		**329**
Kenneth Lindsay, Frank Longford, Betty Abel, James Munson, Laurence Tanner.		
SHORTER REVIEWS		**334**
HALF YEARLY INDEX		**336**

Editor:
ROSALIND WADE, O.B.E.

Associate Editor:
BETTY ABEL

Editorial Advisers:
PROFESSOR ESMOND WRIGHT
PROFESSOR PAUL WILKINSON

Fine Arts Correspondent:
ERNLE MONEY

Music Correspondent:
DAVID FINGLETON

Finance Director:
LEONARD SKIPP

© 1988. Published monthly by the Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG, England, and printed in England by Mandeville Press, 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ. U.S. Mailing Agent: Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 2323 Randolph Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Second Class postage paid at Rahway N.J. Annual subscription (including postage): U.K. £18.50. U.S.A. and Canada $65.00. Rates for all other countries on application. Copies can be sent by airmail outside U.S. and Canada: extra costs given on request. U.S. Postmaster: please send all address corrections to 'Contemporary Review', c/o Mercury Airfreight International Ltd. Inc., 10B Englehard Avenue, Avenel, N.J. 07001. Contemporary Review. (ISSN/0010/7565)

Contemporary Review

Founded 1866 **incorporating The Fortnightly**

December 1988 **Vol. 253** **No. 1475**

'ROLLBACK' IN EAST EUROPE

by Stephen Larrabee

THE fourth Reagan-Gorbachev summit has spurred hopes that US-Soviet relations may be entering a more productive period In its effort to stabilise US-Soviet relations, however, Washington should not forget Eastern Europe and allow the region to become a source of benign neglect, as occurred in the last period of superpower detente in the early 1970s To do so would be shortsighted and dangerous For the purposes of this article, Eastern Europe will refer to those countries, other than the Soviet Union, which are members of both the Warsaw Pact and the Council for Mutual Economic Assistance (COMECON) — i e Bulgaria, Czechoslovakia, the German Democratic Republic (GDR), Hungary, Poland and Romania.

Historically, Eastern Europe has proved a source of instability and ferment. The Soviet Union has been unable to work out a relationship with Eastern Europe that allows for organic, peaceful change. Since World War II Moscow has held two basic goals in Eastern Europe viability and control. It desires regimes that are economically and politically viable but whose policies and domestic systems come under broad Soviet control The tension between these two goals has led to periodic crises in Czechoslovakia, the German Democratic Republic (GDR)), Hungary and Poland and may yet do so in Estonia

These crises have seldom remained localised but have often had an impact on East-West relations. The June 1953 East Berlin uprising put an end to whatever hopes of resolving the 'German question' existed at that time The unrest in Hungary and Poland in 1956 disrupted the early movement toward detente begun the previous year with the Soviet withdrawal from Finland and the signing of the Austrian peace treaty The 1968 Soviet invasion of Czechoslovakia led to a postponement of the strategic arms limitation talks And the 1980-1981 tremors in Poland, surrounding the independent trade union Solidarity and the subsequent introduction of martial law, aggravated the chill in East-West relations that began in the late 1970s

In short, what happens in Eastern Europe matters Any new upheaval there will almost certainly spill over into the East-West arena, affecting relations with both the USSR and America's West European allies Also, East European disturbances historically have tended to follow leadership changes in the Soviet Union This was the case in the GDR in 1953, in Hungary and Poland in 1956, and in Czechoslovakia in 1968. All were a

direct consequence of changes initiated in the Kremlin after a Soviet succession

Today, moreover, Eastern Europe is entering a period of economic and political change that could have a significant impact on East-West relations The November 1987 demonstrations by several thousand workers in Brasov, Romania's second largest city, and the replacement of the ageing Czechoslovak Communist party leader, Gustav Husak, by Milos Jakes in December 1985 and Hungarian party leader Janos Kadar in May, are but the first symptoms of this process Over the next few years the changes are likely to accelerate and could prove highly destabilising, especially if Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev's reform programme takes hold.

The United States, therefore, needs to pay more attention to the forces of change in Eastern Europe and ensure that any new effort at detente includes Moscow's allies Otherwise, Washington once again may find itself caught off guard by unexpected developments that could sidetrack the promising momentum in the East-West dialogue

Viewed in historical perspective, post-war US policy toward Eastern Europe can be divided into distinct phases, many of which coincided with the advent of new administrations The goal of this policy espoused by the Eisenhower administration, was to 'liberate' Eastern Europe with a 'rollback' of Soviet power Rollback, however, was more a slogan than a concrete policy. The Eisenhower administration never really addressed the problem of how Eastern Europe was to be liberated short of employing force Thus, when the Hungarian uprising broke out in October 1956, the United States took no military action for fear of precipitating a nuclear war with the Soviet Union The passive reaction underscored both the hollowness of the rollback idea and the dangers of any effort directly to dislodge the Soviets from Eastern Europe

After the Hungarian uprising, US policy was gradually reassessed. The goal shifted from liberating Eastern Europe to encouraging 'peaceful change' This policy which was particularly pronounced during the Johnson administration, came to be known as 'bridge-building' or 'peaceful engagement'. Its most articulate spokesman was Zbigniew Brzezinski, at the time a member of the Policy Planning Staff of the State Department and later President Jimmy Carter's adviser on national security affairs

The new policy sought to exploit the differentiation emerging among East European regimes in the 1960s as a result of destalinisation The intent was to promote greater autonomy from Moscow and a more cooperative relationship with the West. The strategy was also designed to provide a framework for resolving the German problem of the post-war division of Germany Rather than making reunification a precondition for East-West detente, as former West German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer had demanded, the policy now saw East-West detente as a precondition for reunification

This approach suffered from two fundamental weaknesses. It left out

the GDR, which was also excluded from Western detente efforts, and it by-passed the Soviet Union. As a result Moscow perceived an effort to undermine its hegemony in Eastern Europe and settle the German problem on terms favourable to the West — without accepting the post-war division of Europe and Germany. Therefore, Moscow resolutely opposed it

The Soviet invasion of Czechoslovakia highlighted the limits of bridge-building On the one hand, it showed that the Soviets would not tolerate changes in Eastern Europe that excluded Moscow On the other, it led to a general retrenchment of reform within the bloc, except in Hungary. From Washington's perspective, the invasion made clear that the road to Prague (that is, Eastern Europe) led through Moscow and that detente with Moscow had to precede detente with Eastern Europe

The recognition of these latter two points contributed to a shift in Western, and especially US policy toward Eastern Europe After 1969 the United States increasingly began to concentrate on arms control and improving relations with the USSR. Eastern Europe was not entirely forgotten, but it was relegated to a secondary position. Still, some East European initiatives were undertaken To reward — and encourage — Romania's more independent stance, Bucharest was awarded most favoured nation (MFN) treatment, which permits imports to enter the United States at the lowest duty rates President Richard Nixon also visited Poland in an effort to encourage the promising, more liberal trend under the new Polish leader Eduard Gierek

Eastern Europe received more attention during the Carter administration, in large part because Carter's Polish-born national security adviser, Brzezinski, was strongly interested in the area The United States formally adopted a policy of 'differentiation' In effect this policy stated that preference would be given to US relations with countries that showed signs of domestic liberalisation or autonomy in foreign policy. In line with this, Carter visited Poland in December 1977 Relations with Hungary were normalised with the January 1978 return of the crown of St Stephen, a treasured symbol of Hungarian nationhood that was captured from the Germans in World War II and 'temporarily' retained by the United States pending settlement of a number of bilateral issues Hungary was also granted MFN status in July 1978 in recognition of the domestic liberalisation initiated in the mid-1960s by the government of Janos Kadar Romania, meanwhile, continued to receive high-level attention — highlighted by President Nicolai Ceausescu's April 1978 visit to Washington — in an effort to advance Bucharest's autonomous foreign policy Relations with Czechoslovakia, Bulgaria and the GDR, however, were largely put on the back burner

The Reagan administration generally has followed the basic outlines of the differentiation policy pursued by its predecessors Under President Ronald Reagan, Romania and Hungary have received preferential trade treatment, although Romania's MFN status has come under increasing congressional assault At the same time, relations with the 'second tier' —

Bulgaria, Czechoslovakia, and the GDR — have been upgraded slightly through periodic briefings on arms control and through high-level visits, such as those of Deputy Secretary of State, John Whitehead, to Prague in January 1987 and to East Berlin in November 1987

Relations with Poland, however, worsened after the imposition of martial law in December 1981. Given US domestic pressures, the Reagan administration had little choice but to impose economic sanctions against Poland While the sanctions did nudge Polish President General Wojciech Jaruzelski toward liberalisation, they were maintained long after they had outlived their usefulness In general, the administration's tendency to see Jaruzelski as little more than a Soviet puppet — a 'Soviet general in Polish uniform', to use former Secretary of Defence Caspar Weinberger's phrase — blinded it to the complexities of Polish politics and prevented it from expeditiously exploiting the internal evolution in Poland after 1984 Indeed, the administration was far behind its Western allies and the Polish-American community in recognising a need for a policy change — a need that has been rectified by lifting the last sanctions in February 1987 and initiating a process of re-engagement with Poland

The conditions that contributed to relative stability in Eastern Europe in the 1970s and early 1980s are not likely to obtain in the 1990s Eastern Europe is entering a period of intensified political and economic change

Several factors will accentuate the potential for greater ferment First, with the exception perhaps of the GDR, Eastern Europe is facing economic problems that will demand significant adjustments Growth rates throughout Eastern Europe declined notably in the late 1970s and early 1980s Moreover, during the 1970s many East European countries borrowed heavily to finance imports from the West, running up huge external debts As a result, several countries, including Poland and Romania, were forced to reschedule, others, like Hungary, barely avoided rescheduling To reduce their external debts these countries have had to cut imports and introduce austerity programmes A stagnation in living standards has followed.

In addition, the trade picture remains bleak Although some progress was made in reducing East European indebtedness in 1984 and 1985, Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development figures show a rise in gross hard-currency debt and a deteriorating 1987 trade balance with the West The gross hard-currency debt of the COMECON countries — including the USSR — grew from $97.3 billion at the end of 1985 to $115 5 billion at the end of 1986 Unless these trends are reversed, several countries in the region, especially Hungary, could experience a worsening of their creditworthiness

Trade with the Soviet Union has also posed problems for Eastern Europe The oil crises of the 1970s worsened Eastern Europe's terms of trade with the USSR because, as oil prices soared, the Soviet allies in effect had to deliver more manufactured goods to pay for that oil While expected lower oil prices should in part help redress this problem, Gorbachev has made it clear that the USSR will no longer be a dumping

ground for low-quality East European goods that cannot be sold on the Western market Thus, some countries in the region have been forced to divert more high-quality wares — which could earn hard-currency in the West — to the Soviet Union, diminishing their ability to purchase Western imports.

Moreover, none of these countries (again with the possible exception of the GDR) can rely on a significant expansion of Western credit as they could in the 1970s. They will be forced to introduce reforms or else risk possible social unrest Yet these same economic reforms may spark uncontrollable demands for greater political reform, as happened in Czechoslovakia in 1968

A second factor that could contribute to future turbulence is the succession process Several countries in Eastern Europe are on the verge of leadership changes In Czechoslovakia this transition has already begun with the replacement of the ailing 75-year-old Husak by the younger Jakes, a relatively orthodox member of the Czechoslovak Communist Party Presidium. Hungary has also just witnessed a leadership change with the replacement of Janos Kadar by Karoly Grosz Two other leaders — Erich Honecker of East Germany, and Todor Zhivkov of Bulgaria — also are in their mid-70s and likely to retire soon Romania's Ceausescu is 70 years old, and his health has deteriorated in the last few years, although in this case leadership remains within the Ceausescu family. Only Poland's Jaruzelski, 64 appears likely to remain in power

While these transitions may occur smoothly — as the Jakes succession apparently did — this cannot be taken for granted On the contrary, some successions, such as Romania's, are likely to be accompanied by considerable political tumult And even if the transfers of power are smooth, any new leaders will need time to consolidate their positions and develop their own policy agendas. Given the pressing problems faced by many of these countries, however, new leaders may quickly find themselves overwhelmed or swept along by events beyond their control, as happened to Alexander Dubcek in Czechoslovakia in 1968

Third, Eastern Europe of late has seen an increase in nationalism and nationality tensions The re-emergence of such age-old ethnic conflicts has been reflected in the escalation of differences between Hungary and Romania over treatment of the Hungarian minority in Romania; the effort at forced assimilation of the Turkish minority in Bulgaria and the aggravation of nationalistic conflicts in Yugoslavia, especially in the Kosovo area near the Albanian border In some cases, such as Romania, regimes have sought to use nationalism as a surrogate issue to deflect attention from domestic problems In other cases, such as Hungary, the pressure has come from writers and intellectuals who demand that the government take a stronger stand on the treatment of Hungarian minorities abroad This pressure has recently increased and taken on a broader, more popular character The result has been a serious deterioration of Hungarian-Romanian relations, which today are in a far worse state than Hungary's relations with any Western country

Finally, the most serious challenge to bloc stability may come from Gorbachev's reform programme For the first time in a quarter of a century, the impetus for change in Eastern Europe is emanating from the Soviet Union, not from Eastern Europe itself Although Gorbachev has not tried to force the new Soviet model on Eastern Europe, he has pressed his allies to improve their economy's efficiency and urged policy changes for COMECON, including permitting direct links between foreign enterprises without ministerial involvement

Gorbachev's calls for economic restructuring have intensified internal debates and political divisions in several East European countries A leadership split has been most visible in Czechoslovakia, where a reformist wing headed by Prime Minister Lubomir Strougal has challenged an orthodox wing headed by Politburo member Vasil Bilak. The same phenomenon can be seen in Hungary, where many of the reformers are using developments in the Soviet Union to legitimise their own advocacy of greater liberalisation But in Poland, Gorbachev has strengthened the hand of reformers centred around Jaruzelski Jaruzelski, in fact, has emerged as Gorbachev's staunchest ally and clear favourite among East European leaders

It has been Gorbachev's campaign for greater glasnost (openness) and 'democratisation', that has made some East European leaderships the most uncomfortable In the GDR, for example, Honecker has strongly supported Gorbachev's efforts at East-West detente but has gone out of his way to stress that the GDR has no need or intention to embrace glasnost or economic reform This is exemplified by the fact that Gorbachev's January 1987 speech to the Central Committee of the Soviet Communist party Plenum was printed in abbreviated form in the GDR

The United States needs to work more closely with its alliance partners in implementing its East European policy This does not necessitate a detailed co-ordination of policy but calls for more frequent and intensive discussions of broad policy objectives An informal division of labour within the Atlantic alliance is also worth considering In some cases Washington should play a more reserved role, urging its West European allies — particularly West Germany — with their strong ties and interests in Eastern Europe to take the lead In this way, certain initiatives may be more palatable to Moscow, and their odds of success may be improved

Such discussion and policy co-ordination will be more important as impending changes occur in Eastern Europe These changes could significantly affect the larger interests of the United States and its European allies Thus building a general alliance consensus on Eastern Europe will help equip the governments, both individually and collectively, to respond to these developments.

[Stephen Larrabee is Research Fellow at the Institute for East-West Security Studies, New York The views expressed are the author's and do not necessarily reflect those of the Institute]

HOLY WAR IN LATIN AMERICA

by Robert Stone

BACKED by breath-taking murals depicting Sandinista soldiers carrying the cross and an eight-piece band pulsing Latin rhythms, Father Uriel Molina pounds the pulpit 'The Sandinistas are the soldiers of Christ', he says 'They fight the Contras and Reagan and the evil he represents And even though the Contras may have devout believers among them, they are damned to everlasting fire since they fight against the will of God!'

Outside the Santa Maria de los Angeles church in the mud streets of Managua's Riguero *barrio,* eleven air conditioned tourist buses are parked The congregation has been shipped in to sample liberation theology

Blond, bra-less, West German girls with lobster sunburns, tall, bearded Scandinavians, ageing and concerned-looking middle American religious people and dishevelled hippie hold-overs crowd the church, outnumbering the Nicaraguans three to one

Father Molina, with a history of involvement beginning long before the 1979 insurrection, is among the most well-known of the 'Liberationists' in the extremely polarised Nicaraguan church He uses Che Guevera to illustrate his homilies about sacrifice and love

What distinguishes liberation theology from mainstream church thinking is its emphasis on social change combined with spirituality The seeds of the movement were planted during the second Vatican Council (1962-65), and brought changes to the church at that time which were the most radical in centuries.

No one knew then that the 1980s would become an historic turning point for Roman Catholics Behind the showmanship of the travelling Pope lies a profound struggle over the future course of the almost 2,000 year-old institution In Central America, especially in Nicaragua, the debate has reached its greatest intensity with both sides of the Catholic religious controversy and various Protestant sects embracing passions rooted in the inflamed feelings that fuel the civil war

While the Second Vatican Council liberalised many of the activities of the Catholic church, most notably the replacement of Latin with the vernacular in the Mass, issues of morality and faith still require submission to the Pope's authority It is apparent contradictions in the Pope's message, however, that fuel the controversy as well John Paul can sound like a committed socialist when he addresses the destitute in their squalid slums

'May no one feel tranquil', he said on a visit to Ecuador, 'while there is a child without a school, a family without a home, a worker without a job, an ill or elderly person without adequate attention'

At the same time, reactionary responses have characterised his thoughts when confronting Marxist influences on Catholic theology and efforts

aimed at a political interpretation of the Gospel His address to Latin American bishops in Puebla, Mexico in 1979 left little doubt that his tolerance for partisan causes within the church was very low The unmistakable message was that Jesus must not be thought of as a political figure, he was not the 'subversive from Nazareth' That the Pope should feel compelled to make such clarifications indicates the depth of change within the church and the diversity of scriptural interpretation It also indicates that he is fully aware that by the year 2000 over 60% of Catholics will be Latin Americans.

For centuries, the Roman Catholic Church's principal mission in Latin America had been to give its blessing to the rich and the military and to minister spiritually to the peasants without disturbing the status quo Even after independence, Rome granted Latin American presidents the right to name bishops It was a tidy arrangement which guaranteed the church financial security and broad social influence while the state gained the stamp of moral authority

Church conservatism was taken for granted CIA collaboration with the Vatican, for example. has been widely documented It dates back to 1945, when its predecessor, the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), worked with the Curia to help defeat the communists in the Italian elections Pope Pius XII established an intelligence network throughout Italy, largely dependent on the Jesuits, which was devoted to tracking the affairs of the Italian Communist Party and its relations with Moscow He went so far as to declare, in 1949, the automatic excommunication of any Catholics who 'defend and spread the materialist and anti-Christian doctrine of Communism'

Collaboration with the CIA, at the time, was deemed logical and necessary in the fight against a common enemy Indeed, Cardinal Montini of Milan, who would later become Pope Paul VI, turned over files on activist priests for use by the CIA during the Italian elections of 1960. The convergence of views between the Vatican and Washington was especially close during the 1950s and nowhere more than in Latin America

Central to this relationship was Cardinal Francis Spellman, who for over 30 years served as Vatican envoy responsible for Latin America He also represented US presidents Roosevelt, Truman and Eisenhower informally in the region

Cardinal Spellman took a direct and active hand in the affairs of the Latin American church He personally selected bishops in Bolivia during the fifties and ordered the Archbishop of Bogata to submit all his statements about the United States to the US Ambassador 'for his review and approval'.

During this period association with Spellman was a matter of high prestige for right-wing Latin American governments Through his frequent trips to the region, Spellman maintained close personal ties with dictators Batista in Cuba, Trujillo in the Dominican Republic and Somoza in Nicaragua They bestowed honours and titles on him; he reciprocated by giving their regimes his benediction When General Stroessner carried

out his coup in Paraguay in 1954, Spellman quickly boarded a plane to bless the new government. These relationships paid off in political favours for Spellman His biographer, John Cooney suggests that the Cardinal brought personal pressure to bear on Latin American governments to cast their votes in favour of the admission of Israel into the United Nations, a move which helped to turn the tide of opposition on the issue.

In 1954 Spellman acted as go-between for the CIA and Guatemalan Archbishop Mariano Rossell Arellano, whose pastoral letter against communism was airdropped by the CIA a few weeks before the coup After the coup, Spellman arranged for Catholic Relief Services to distribute food, clothing and medical supplies to the poor as a way of staving off dissent against the Castillo Armas government

Ironically, it was the election of John Kennedy, America's first Catholic president, that led to Spellman's loss of influence. Kennedy was fearful of being identified too closely with Rome At the same time the reform-minded Pope John XXIII began speaking out against rightist governments. A 1962 CIA report concluded that the Vatican was becoming a less reliable ally Indeed, while long regarded as a force for conservatism, Catholicism has come to be identified by many with revolutionary change.

In its contemporary approach to the Third World, the Church has dropped its old colonial attitudes in favour of an approach based more on indigenous cultural values As a result it faces the paradox of finding itself resistant to modern thinking in the West while it promotes modern Western ideas in the Third World. For example, while the church is attacked by feminists in the developed world, it preaches a restructuring of women's roles in societies where males have traditionally been dominant But the encounter and sometimes confrontation between Christianity and Marxism, two ideas of Western origin, has shaken religious thought in the Third World and particularly Latin America, beyond any of the cultural anomalies the church has encountered there

The dialogue between Christians and Marxists was exported to the Third World from Europe. It began in response to two key encyclicals issued by Pope John XXIII in the early 1960s Stressing the need to respect human rights and create decent standards of living for all, the encyclicals urged Catholics to work for peace and justice and gave them more freedom to listen to ideas that came from other systems of religious and philosophical thought

Values such as freedom of conscience and the validity of other religions, which before had been seen as threats, were now endorsed. But no sooner had the church abandoned its claim to being the exclusive means of salvation than uncertainty began to creep into the theological debate. The church was now proclaiming that its purpose was to offer meaning and dignity to human life but it had failed to define who was to interpret what that meant

At the same time the church also departed from past practice with its formulation of the idea of 'collegiality' Since the 16th century Council of Trent, church authority had been based on a pyramid model with the

Pope at its apex This now gave way to a decision-making structure in which the Pope and bishops formed a sort of 'management team', more like a series of concentric circles

The real controversy began in 1968 when Latin American bishops met at Medellin, Columbia, denouncing social injustice and approving a 'preferential option for the poor'

For the first time the church became officially concerned about economic development and interested in how social science could help explain social inequity. Stating that Latin Americans 'must resist personal and collective injustice with unselfish courage and fearlessness', the bishops expressed for the first time the concept of 'institutionalised sin'— injustice brought about by social and economic organisation

The Medellin position was influenced by the lower clergy who were rethinking their relationships to secular authority in view of recent Latin American history The American invasion of the Dominican Republic in 1965, military coups in Brazil (1964) and Argentina (1967), brutal dictatorships in Guatemala, Paraguay and Nicaragua, all influenced the move towards a more secular view A few priests such as Camilo Torres, in Colombia, took this reasoning to its ultimate conclusion and opted for armed rebellion Most however, embraced a vaguer vision which might be described as participatory socialism

While the changes brought about at Medellin were for the most part the result of the influence of priests who worked to prepare background papers and draft documents for the conference, the bishops remained decidedly conservative Many defended their governments despite widespread state violence Indeed, even as recently as 1968, most Latin American bishops were selecte with at least indirect government influence, a legacy of colonialism which from the very beginning tied Latin American Catholicism intimately to political power It was the Pope who gave Ferdinand and Isabella title over the New World after news of Columbus' discovery reached the Spanish court For over three hundred years the head of the church in the New World was the Spanish king and secular authority was indistinguishable from religious authority With the lines of communication travelling through Madrid to Rome, church law could be suspended by appeal to the crown The church became accustomed to serving civil power in order to accomplish its spiritual mission

Although the Medellin resolutions were passed, there was a significant amount of opposition among the bishops They realised that the church had crossed a line from abstract theology to a practical faith designed to bring about liberation from unjust social structures Those who held these positions found themselves openly aligned with the political forces of the left

The Medellin conference gave a tacit blessing to the already widespread phenomenon of politically active priests in Latin America and had the effect of encouraging further efforts of this nature When, in 1971, a Peruvian priest, Rev Gustavo Gutierrez, published a book called *Theology of Liberation,* the movement was given a name and defined, not simply as

an academic exercise, but as something that had developed from the 'oppressed and exploited land of Latin America' Marxism, he said, was useful in encouraging theologians to think about how the world underwent change 'To deny the fact of class struggle was really to put oneself on the side of the dominant sectors'

The conclusion generally drawn from the book is that it is the moral duty of thinking Christians to choose sides in the class struggle Since the moral weight was on the side of the poor for whom Christ had shown special love, working to eliminate the causes of poverty was therefore a religious act that brought one closer to God

The impact of this way of thinking on the Latin American church was profound Motivated as much by recent failures, such as the political defeat suffered in opposing Castro as by slipping church membership and declining recruits for the priesthood, the Medellin conference triggered a change in religious thinking that brought the church into active participation in Central America's secular revolutions

As the phenomenon of armed insurrections against military dictatorships in Latin America began to gather momentum in the 1970s, liberation theology evolved to the point that its ideas began to have practical consequences In the face of the near impossibility of political organisation under military dictatorship, the church's structure was ideally suited for activities designed to bring about massive social change

Locally, the church went about the establishment of 'base communities'. In these, the clergy worked informally with small numbers of peasants, creating self-help groups and an awareness of a broad range of topics including politics, economics, human relations and religious issues Furthermore, the base communities received the protection of the church hierarchy which continued to have close relations with governments International organisations were able to channel funds into the base communities and publicise the effectiveness of grass-roots organisation. While the military continued to smash organisations of direct political opposition, hundreds of thousands were able to organise under the shelter of the church

The Nicaraguan revolution became one of liberation theology's focal points Priests and lay Catholics alike joined in the broad coalition organised by the Sandinistas to overthrow Nicaraguan strongman, Anastasio Somoza It came to be widely held that the Nicaraguan revolution was a deeply religious affair Many people believed that a synthesis of Christianity and Marxism had taken place But relations between the revolutionary government and the church in the years since 1979 soon became a focus for social division in Nicaragua

Like Father Molina, representing one extreme among badly divided and highly politicised Nicaraguan Catholics, the official church rapidly became politically compromised as well It allowed itself to become, in the absence of an effective opposition, the focus of a political counterpoint to the Sandinistas Stridently led by Cardinal Miguel Obando y Bravo, the Nicaraguan Catholic hierarchy increasingly found itself in a

head-on confrontation with the revolutionary government

As long-time bishop of Managua, Obando y Bravo had been a vigorous critic of the Somoza regime and on many occasions played a mediating role between it and the then guerrillas of the Sandinista Front He has been just as strongly critical of the present government which he has accused of trying to rule Nicaragua under a Marxist-Leninist system.

Critics of the revolution claim that the Sandinistas have tried to destroy the church. They point to government actions such as the expulsion of various priests and the closing of the Catholic radio station and the magazine *Iglesia* which they say have been efforts to neutralise the church politically Cardinal Obando y Bravo become the spiritual leader of anti-Sandinista politics the moment the revolutionary government declared its state of emergency and made the church one of the few places where government opponents didn't need a permit to gather

Simultaneously the Sandinistas claimed with some legitimacy that the Cardinal's highly oppositional and political sermons, while arousing anti-government passions, failed to make any mention of Contra atrocities It was only by making Obando the mediator between themselves and the Contras that the Sandinistas were able to neutralise to some extent the Cardinal's conservative political influence

There are three priests in the nine-man Sandinista directorate in defiance of a Papal order for them to withdraw from political activity Although forbidden to perform their religious duties, they defend their political involvement and deny any contradictions Father Ernesto Cardinal, Nicaragua's Minister of Culture has said: 'A Christian should embrace Marxism if he wants to be with God and all men.'

Despite the efforts of the Sandinistas, the popularity of the Nicaraguan church and its official spiritual leader has grown enormously over the past several years The difficulties between Obando and the government have enhanced the Cardinal's image in the eyes of many Nicaraguan Catholics and fostered, in some circles, a genuine resentment against the ruling party While tourist flash-bulbs pop around Father Molina, bitter mutterings against him can be heard in the streets near his church, once one of the most enthusiastically Sandinista neighbourhoods in Managua

It was relatively easy for the Roman Catholic Church to react when in 1517 Martin Luther tacked his 95 theses to the church door in Wittenburg Since then it has been an institution characterised by an ability to adapt to change Today, however, in a complex modern world, where a vast range of ideological choice is presented, the church confronts challenges it has never seen before It can no longer rely, as it did in the past, on state institutions to protect it and enforce its teachings In addition, individual Catholics feel free to adopt and mix a whole range of world views with their faith

Moreover, long entrenched on the firm cultural foundation of Europe where it evolved slowly over nearly two thousand years, the church is finding its constituency more and more centred in the Third World where Catholicism has had only a little time to find roots Compared with the

faith of Europe it is but a thin veneer Contemporary Guatemala is just such a case and provides an example where the influence of liberation theology functioned to provoke a right wing reaction using Protestantism as its focus

Spain in 1500 was vibrant with religious zeal and political unity after the expulsion of the last of its Moorish invaders and it turned eagerly to the New World in a quest for gold, souls and land However, the Spanish colonial effort to gather souls was, for the most part, an effort simply to baptise the native population. This was particularly true in the highland regions of Guatemala where colonial penetration and cultural influence were shallow As a result, indian racial purity and local language groups were preserved almost intact while Christianity and hispanic customs had only minimal influence To this day it is possible to see people, who claim to be Catholic, engaging in animal sacrifice, the worship of decidedly non-Catholic images and performing rituals involving the excessive use of alcohol and other drugs that recall their distant Mayan paganism more than modern Catholicism It was not until the 1870s, when the world market for coffee became established that the highlands, ideal for that crop, began to be penetrated and the indians to lose parts of their ancestral lands

Since then Guatemala's Maya indians have been integrated into the economy of the agro-export system but have remained social outcasts For the big coffee, cotton and sugar growers the arrangement has distinct advantages The indians inhabit a hinterland of subsistence agriculture in the highlands where they cultivate corn To supplement this they must travel to the coastal plantations during harvest time to earn *efectivo* (cash) For centuries they have provided a pool of cheap labour whose political stability was rooted in the ancestral lands Now all that is changing.

Religious competition for Guatemalan souls parallels the political competition for hearts and minds that continues to be a feature of the country's life The struggle began just prior to the 1954 coup that toppled the reform government of Jacobo Arbenz The first indication of these changes came in 1948 with the establishment of an organisation called *Accion Catholica* (Catholic Action)

The Guatemalan Catholic Church hierarchy, led by Archbishop Mariano Rossell y Arellano, was facing a shortage of priests and invited foreign missionaries into the country to challenge the growing influence of Protestant sects These priests were sent to remote indian villages that for centuries had been left to practice their own semi-pagan beliefs

Although one of the Archbishop's stated objectives for the project was 'to shield the indians from the evils of international communism' many of the priests became radicalised in the face of the merciless exploitation When, in the 1960s and 70s, as part of the Catholic church began to put the theories of liberation theology into practice, the indians under their guidance found themselves increasingly in open confrontation with the government

Although recruited primarily to attend spiritual needs, Catholic Action priests began to teach the indians to speak and read Spanish They helped to organise them into a co-operative movement of enormous proportions and sought to enlighten them politically. By raising native consciousness and by promoting community self-reliance, Catholic Action and its co-operative movement posed a direct challenge to capitalist interests in Guatemala

Most observers agree that the turning point came in February, 1976 when a massive earthquake struck Guatemala. Many indian villages, equipped with the infrastructure of the co-operative movement, responded to the disaster by forming communal reconstruction committees and came into direct contact for the first time with foreign relief workers, many of whom were openly critical of Guatemala's military government

When the country's guerrilla movements, which had come into being around the time of the CIA coup in 1954, were inspired by events in Nicaragua and El Salvador, the momentum for change accelerated By 1980 and '81 many of the Indians had shaken off their social inertia to become political activists As many as a quarter million of them are thought to have been involved in the insurrection that was put down with massive brutality in 1982 by then president, General Rios Montt.

Human misery, confusion and despair, the same conditions that prompted large numbers of Catholics to engage in politics, have functioned to fuel expansion in the evangelical churches until today they are the fastest growing segment of Central American Christianity. Poverty and civil war have provided fertile ground for these sects which claim in the last 25 years to have increased their flocks from less than 5% to over 20% of the population Now, in 1988, in Latin America the social obligation of the Catholic Church to the under-privileged is not debated The question confronting church leaders is rather how to face that obligation since religion and politics have been mixed throughout Central American history since the early 1500s

The political right is accused of using these religious divisions for its advantage It in turn charges the left with dressing communism in the trappings of religion One thing is certain. The debate about the relative authority of God and Caesar in Latin America is potentially a life and death matter for those who participate

---

[Robert Stone, a Canadian writer, has worked for the CTV Television Network National News in Canada Previously he was posted for several years to Central America Now working in New Delhi, he has recently covered the elections in Pakistan and Sri Lanka His article 'The Commonwealth Conference' was published in *Contemporary Review* No 1464, Vol 252]

INTO THE FUTURE WITH THE BLACK ECONOMY

by A. D. Harvey

VARIOUS conjectural statistics are bandied about in connection with the Black Economy. Ten per cent of the economic activity of the country — fifteen per cent of the turnover of certain industries — twenty per cent of the nation's tax revenue — the figures all tend to imply how seriously we are being diddled by those who operate in the fiscal shadowland where taxman and bureaucrat rarely penetrate The whole thing seems one more indication that society is becoming frayed at the edges. Discussions of the Black Economy tend to steer clear of precisely how many people are involved, and the emphasis on the fiddling, fiscally parasitic aspect tends to conceal the true social implications of what is going on

The Black Economy is not an economy as such, but that section of the economic activity of our society which deliberately eludes regulation. Since Public Sector employment is by its very nature organised on bureaucratic and therefore self-regulating lines, the Black Economy flourishes mainly in the private sector In any case, the Public Sector offers too many legitimate payments in kind to require illicit cash transfers If a professor received a bribe to accept a student on to his university course, that bribe would be within the realm of the Black Economy. but bribery in Britain's public institutions is still much less common than a civilised bending of the rules It is easier to keep one's hands clean if one does not have to grub for money in the market place

As this instancing of bribes suggests, the criminality of the Black Economy may be more than merely a question of tax evasion. Drug trafficking — indeed dealing in any kind of smuggled goods — keeping a brothel and such recent growth industries as running an illegal still, organising badger-baitings or bare-knuckle boxing bouts are in themselves against the law, and fear of prosecution would be an overriding motive for keeping clear of public regulation even supposing — ludicrous supposition — that there was any desire to pay taxes Very much more numerous than the various offenders against the criminal law who operate within the Black Economy are the small businessmen and small entrepreneurs who are forced to stand with one foot in the Black Economy in order to keep their chins above the sea of red tape in which the modern citizen is obliged to swim The VAT system does not merely mean the levying of a tax on behalf of the government and its periodic remittment. it also means spending a good deal of time in the company of VAT inspectors — and for some reason people who find chatting to tax officials more congenial than earning a livelihood by their manual skills do not usually become window-cleaners, plumbers, car mechanics or upholsterers It is not a desire to avoid providing the money for the salaries of VAT inspectors but the hope of avoiding the stress, frustration and time-waste of dealing with these inspectors which persuades many small businessmen

to try their hardest to keep below the £22,100 p.a VAT threshold. Unfortunately, small businessmen do not thrive if they make a habit of turning away customers, and a £22,100 turnover means a disposable personal income of only half or even a third of that amount, so that the current VAT system keeps the small businessman on the knife edge between total failure and bare survival

It is hardly surprising therefore that cash payments which are never recorded may be accepted from certain trusted customers or that raw materials, not inventoried, are mysteriously acquired by barter or unreceipted cash payment. At a slightly higher financial level the small entrepreneur encounters the problem of becoming an employer, which is not merely a question of regular wages, or of wages and National Insurance contributions, but also and more importantly of maintaining a workplace that comes up to the textbook standards of the Factory Inspectors On one's own one may work in a cold room with equipment of antique design — or even of one's own design — and have no other toilet facilities than the lavatory of the pub next door. but as soon as one employs even a boy everything must be provided at regulation standard, and any inadequately guarded machine, even if reserved only for the boss's own use, must be banished from the workplace in case the boy is tempted to amputate his thumbs with it when the boss is talking to customers Most of the handicrafts that can only be learnt by years of patient teaching and observation, are carried out predominantly in small substandard workshops, and the Factory Inspectorate is one reason why these crafts are close to dying out, but there must be hundreds of thousands of people in Britain employed, if only part-time or irregularly, on a Black Economy basis in order to avoid coming under the Factory Acts.

More numerous than the independent entrepreneurs are those workers in the Black Economy who are subsidised by the Department of Social Services There are two and a half million unemployed, plus hundreds of thousands of people receiving Income Support benefits as single mothers or because of temporary but protracted physical disability — e g , while recuperating from road accidents It is now pretty generally admitted that most of the unemployed simply cannot find a suitable job, and mothers of young children or people who have had a leg amputated within the past two months obviously cannot hold down the kind of jobs that would be suitable if they had full call on their time or physical strength but the DSS rules discourage all these people from trying to supplement their disgracefully exiguous official incomes by part-time or irregular jobs, even though these may have a useful rehabilitatory function Since DSS payments are intended to be adequate only for the non-smoking teetotaller who buys his clothes at jumble sales, most recipients do seek other sources of income and these must of necessity be from Black Economy sources. This is one reason why there is no shortage of labour for those small entrepreneurs who are trying to keep out of the way of the VAT and Factory Inspectors, but many of the recipients of DSS payments are themselves small independent entre-

preneurs, kerbside car repairmen, third-hand book dealers, runners supplying antique shops and so on. Most of these small operators could not survive simply on their business incomes without the DSS they could not afford to offer the services they currently provide.

A substantial proportion of the total financial turnover of the Black Economy must originate in fairly large-scale operations, whether by drug-traffickers and other criminals, or by those in legitimate businesses employing virtuoso accounting methods on the legal borderline, but in terms of the overall number and activity of the individuals involved it can be seen that the Black Economy is essentially part of the lifestyle of the Self-Employed and the Unemployed — this may indeed be the logic underlying the efforts of the Department of Trade and Industry and the Department of Social Services to make the concepts 'Self-Employed' and 'Unemployed' interchangeable, in the modular small business-bankruptcy-dole-Enterprise Scheme-small business-bankruptcy cycle now increasingly favoured by government statisticians The quality of inner-city sleaze which one perceives in the Black Economy as soon as its essentially lower-class character is recognised helps explain the distaste the topic arouses amongst those of humane culture and index-linked pension entitlement. Yet it is precisely this class aspect which suggests that the Black Economy deserves the sympathetic attention of any political party that believes in Free Enterprise.

The economic and social future of Britain depends on something more than our catching up in industries and technologies in which we have already been overtaken by our competitors, or our fostering of prestigious industrial and commercial combines which have upset all previous thinking about economies of scale by the vastness of their inefficiency and unprofitability Our future lies in the constant and prolific development of new skills, new technologies, new techniques, new energies. not in the maintenance of what has established itself in the past, but the encouragement of what might flourish in the future. Many people who recognise this feel that these new methods, new opportunities, new leaders, will best be developed within the graduate trainee programmes of larger companies, assisted by the consultancy services provided by the more go-ahead polytechnics. Other people however — perhaps those who do not have a professional vested interest in graduate trainee programmes and polytechnic consultancy services — feel that the spearhead of tomorrow's entrepreneurship is more likely to emerge from outside the Intellectual-Industrial complex, from amongst those who are not encumbered by inherited expectations or business school dogmas and who have demonstrated the capacity to make something of themselves independent of existing institutions and established career structures: from out of the world of the small independent businessman in fact

The small business is, quite simply, quicker and lighter on its feet than the larger concern Most small businessmen insert themselves sideways, so to speak, into their business careers, learning their skills not as students but initially as wage-earners, experimenting by trial and error, constantly

modifying expectations and objectives, discovering new markets, moving on from one part of the sector in which they operate to another, perhaps spilling over into another sector, according to taste and opportunity, eventually settling into an economic niche somewhat remote from where they started, or perhaps not settling at all

From the large corporation perspective all this represents a distasteful and odorous bubbling and fermenting at the joints of the big-business economy but there is real life, real creativity in the jungle zone of the small entrepreneur within a minimal legal framework each one of them is reinventing the rules of economic survival as he goes along, piecing together his own economic environment, burrowing out his own economic tunnel according to his own shape and taste The small businessman is not committed to the perpetuation of institutional structures or conventional formulae, is not held back by a well-organised staff of graduate experts writing memos on what is or is not possible — politic — profitable, frequently he is not even restrained or chastened by any sort of formal education in business practice It is all rather individualist and existentialist, even though much of it is also stupid, wasteful, unprofitable and archaic and it is all very lower middle class, because upper middle class education discourages one from taking these kinds of risks in these kinds of isolation and discomfort It was in this area, in the world of the small man of plebeian background creating his own economic environment, that industrialisation made its most impressive advances in the past, and the chances are that this will also hold true of the future.

The vision of a future British society consisting principally of sturdily independent small businessmen has the same vertiginous simplicity as the Nazi vision of a future German society consisting of supermen organised in new-style peasant communities — the same combination of political fantasy and economic illiteracy Large scale industrial organisation is not going to wither away post-industrial society is not going to be industrial society fragmented into millions of self-contained units But it is precisely because small business is *not* going to dominate all the key areas of industrial output in the future that it ought to have a privileged role in the economy as a whole Technological advances mean that an ever smaller percentage of total economic effort is required to sustain the life and comforts of a population, national economies are becoming less and less the means of creating and distributing necessities, more and more the means of maintaining a quality of social experience

The constant reduction of the labour-input necessary in modern manufacturing industries means a surplus of labour that has to be absorbed in a socially productive (and morally sane) manner. Using computers to generate more and more unnecessary paperwork for a rapidly expanding office staff seems hardly more socially productive (or morally sane) than creating an elite population of economically unproductive drones requiring masses of servants, or maintaining ten per cent of the population on the dole Encouraging people to keep alive the talents and the appetites of individualism, self-determination, creativity, enterprise is an absolute

necessity in a high-technology society: in the economic sphere such people provide the flexibility required for institutional and organisational response to social change, and in the political sphere they represent the best guarantee against the Dictatorship of the Computer Operator

It is in the Black Economy, not in the City of London or in the Trade Union movement, that the germ of Britain's long-term economic future is to be found, for it is here that energies for growth and change are being mobilised without being institutionalised Perhaps there is an element of cowardice and social failure in the evasions of the Black Economy — the running away from tax, the dodging from the Factory Inspector, the lying at the dole office — but one could also interpret these evasions as pragmatic strategies of self-protection, or even as gestures of moral defiance The Black Economy consists very largely of a guerilla warfare against rules which mainly benefit those employed to enforce them it might be against the law but one can be quite sure that it generates very little guilt

It may be felt that the terms 'Black Economy' and 'Small Business Sector' are being used as if synonymous They are The Black Economy is the result of the State coming after the Small Businessman The Small Businessman, precisely because he has to create the economic niche in which he has to operate, is always in an exposed position at the frontier of official norms, official standards, official regulation, and official regulations, however promulgated, do not have the moral authority of the Ten Commandments, especially when the Biblical precept 'the labourer is worthy of his hire' means something so different to a man who has to find his own wages every week from what it means to a man whose salary is calculated according to his rank within a bureaucracy

The Black Economy may be seen as the expression of a species of populist conservatism Certainly the general orientation of the Labour Party — essentially the party of state employees and those in industries run on the model of state corporations — is fundamentally hostile to the Black Economy For this reason at least one would hope that the Conservative Party could be a little bit more sympathetic to the Black Economy The raising of the VAT threshold to £50,000 a year, a modification of the Factory Acts to ease the position of small employees who work alongside their employees in the same work space, an increase of the earnings permitted for those in receipt of DSS benefits would be a practical expression of friendly intent, but perhaps more useful in the long run would be some attempt simply to understand what the Black Economy means in social and political terms, and to adjust mentally to the vital role it will have — already has — in shaping our future The Black Economy is not going to go away the question is whether it is going to survive our present economic and political structures, or whether it is going to be permitted to revivify them

---

[Dr A. D. Harvey is author of *Britain in the Early Nineteenth Century* (1978), *English Poetry in a Changing Society 1780-1825* (1980)]

MILITARY ASPECTS OF 'COMMON SECURITY' IN EUROPE

by Francesco Calogero

THE message I read in the 'common security' formula is to de-emphasise the military and confrontational aspects of the European security problem, and focus instead on the non-zero-sum character of the European equation Namely, to highlight the advantages that would accrue for everybody in Europe — as well as worldwide — from a shift to more collaborative and co-operative postures The fact that such a shift is now not only desirable but indeed mandatory stems from the developments that have occurred in the military sector during the last half-century The tremendous increase in the destructive potential of modern weaponry, including conventional weapons, chemical weapons and of course nuclear weapons, underlines the absolute necessity to solve conflicts by accommodation

Both World Wars began in Europe, were largely fought in Europe and caused terrible suffering and losses in Europe as well as elsewhere Military confrontation involves vast deployment of weaponry and personnel on both sides as well as many thousands of nuclear weapons War has been avoided for over 40 years — perhaps, for some zones of Europe, the longest period of peace in history

The security arrangements in Europe are structured around two military camps, NATO (the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation) and WTO (the Warsaw Treaty Organisation) This division has had and does have unpleasant aspects; yet, it has also shown a viability of a kind, not entirely satisfactory, indeed often generating tensions, but difficult to change without causing more damage than improvement

A development in the military sphere that most people regard as desirable is a decrease of the role of nuclear weapons, especially those that might trigger an early nuclear escalation, provided a shift away from nuclear deterrence can be achieved without any erosion of security

It is essential to keep in mind that the emergence of a feeling of insecurity in Central Europe might motivate a demand for some kind of 'autonomous' nuclear deterrent, a policy that might acquire widespread support, hence political legitimacy This would constitute a dangerous and destabilising trend

The conventional wisdom in Western Europe attributes a substantial (some say overwhelming) military superiority to the conventional forces of the WTO, as compared to the NATO forces deployed in the European theatre This perception motivates reliance on nuclear deterrence which does indeed play a central role in NATO strategy

The reluctance to accept any initiative that might weaken nuclear deterrence is demonstrated by the uneasiness with which some West European leaders and experts — especially those closer to NATO thinking — view the recent prospects of a breakthrough in nuclear disarma-

ment in Europe, perhaps resulting in the elimination of intermediate and short-range nuclear missiles from the European theatre (the zero-zero option)

Several reputable Western experts and commentators challenge the assessment that attributes a military superiority in conventional forces to the WTO in the European theatre It is, however, hard to deny that the belief that such superiority exists is widely held in Western Europe, and that — within the Western system of democratic government — such a perception plays an important political role It constitutes undoubtedly an obstacle to the emergence of the 'common security' mode of thought and action

While it is, in my opinion, reasonable to doubt whether the NATO conventional wisdom that attributes a substantive superiority to the conventional forces of the WTO is actually valid, it appears justifiable to view the military deployment of the WTO vis-a-vis Western Europe as excessive — since the ethico-political framework of Western Europe excludes any prospect of a military challenge being brought against the security of the countries of Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union. In this respect I perceive — from my Western perspective — a certain asymmetry in the situation, rooted in the less transparent and more authoritarian system of government that prevails in East-European countries and especially in the Soviet Union This difference constitutes the basic hurdle that stands in the way of major progress towards the emergence of a common security policy in Europe. Its nature is more political than strictly military — yet its military component is also relevant, so that any initiative resulting in a (not merely cosmetic) decrease of the military might of the WTO would be greatly beneficial

When it comes to the fundamental roots of the confrontation that divides Europe, the political issues are of course more important than the purely military aspects In this context, the current developments within the Soviet Union that are associated with the policies subsumed under the key words *perestroika* and *glasnost* are of utmost importance. They open up the prospect of changes within the Soviet Union and in her foreign policy that are likely to improve not only the lot of the Soviet people (firstly the 'intelligentsia', and then the ordinary citizen), but to facilitate in Europe and worldwide a transition from confrontation to common security Let us hope that this trend — of historical portent — will not be blocked by the opposition of the bureaucratic and parasitic sectors of the Soviet power structure (who may well feel threatened by it).

Several positive results of these developments have already materialised, including some that are directly relevant to the military situation in Europe the new proposals for the elimination of intermediate and short-range nuclear missiles, the new tendency to accept as much verification as is needed to produce real thrust, the new proposals to rid Europe of chemical weapons The latter appears to be motivated by a genuine desire to reach an agreement which would clearly serve the best interests of

both superpowers as well as the rest of the world, particularly in view of imminent risk that chemical weapons will spread worldwide, especially in the Third World Indeed, it is now recognised that no progress in this field will be possible without a considerable measure of *glasnost*, (beginning with the admission that chemical weapons are already present in the arsenals of the WTO, and continuing with the recognition — which should of course be put to the test — that banning chemical weapons will require a major opening up to verification, including intrusive inspections)

Finally, to conclude with strictly military matters, it should be mentioned that the postures of the conventional forces on both sides are also important, inasmuch as they tend either to project a threatening message or a reassuring one. For instance, in the series of Pugwash Workshops on conventional forces in Europe that have been attended by military personnel from both sides, the dialogue and debate might open the road to agreements which could then be formalised in Vienna with agreements based on sound security motivations rather than wishful thinking

---

[Francesco Calogero is Professor of Physics, University of Rome]

IS THERE LIFE AFTER NATO?

by J. A. Bayer

IS there life after NATO? The authors of the recent White Paper on defence *(Challenge and Commitment A Defence Policy for Canada)* think not They dismiss as 'naive or self-serving the arguments of those who promote neutrality' for Canada Yet upon closer examination the arguments in favour of a non-aligned Canada appear no more naive or self-serving than those used to promote Canada's continued membership in NATO Indeed, on balance, it can be argued that Canada's security, sovereignty and international influence would be better served by a non-aligned foreign and defence policy than by continued membership in the North Atlantic Alliance

When scratched below the surface the rationale for Canada's continued participation in NATO is not as compelling, convincing or self-evident as assumed by alliance supporters One of the more suspect assumptions put forward by patrons of NATO is that through membership of the alliance Canada contributes to its own security by stabilising the sensitive military balance between NATO and Warsaw Pact countries and, more importantly, by preventing small European members from abandoning the alliance Even if one accepts the historically debatable assumption as to the aggressive nature of Soviet intentions towards Western Europe, it is doubtful whether the withdrawal of 6,000 Canadian troops from Europe would destabilise a military balance based on thousands of nuclear weapons, millions of men, and massive inventories of conventional weapons It is even more fantastic to assume that Canadian membership in NATO discourages other West European nations from quitting the alliance Those European members, such as Greece and Spain, who periodically toy with the idea of getting out of NATO, make their final decisions on the basis of domestic and regional foreign policy considerations, not on the expectation of Canada's remaining a member of the alliance

It is also questionable whether a strong and cohesive alliance indirectly enhances Canadian security through improved prospects for successful arms control negotiations with the Soviet Union The underlying assumption of NATO supporters is that the Russians will not engage the West in serious arms control negotiations unless confronted by a heavily armed and politically cohesive alliance As evidence of this it is often suggested that arms control negotiations are happening in Geneva today primarily because NATO remained resolute and united when faced by Soviet efforts to divide Europe over Cruise and Pershing missile deployment, as well as the US Strategic Defence Initiative

Yet the argument is not entirely convincing The history of arms control negotiations over the past twenty years suggests that strong military alliances are not necessarily a prerequisite for successful arms control negotiations. Instead, such alliances are a prescription for failure. Far

from leading to fruitful negotiations, they are more apt to institutionalise the barriers to East-West co-operation, generate mutual hostility and suspicion, and propel the arms race to ever more sophisticated, dangerous and uncontrollable levels That arms control negotiations are happening in Geneva today seems more a testament to Soviet and West German domestic politics than to NATO unity In any event, the united front maintained by NATO has not made the Soviets more willing today, than in 1983, to conclude arms agreements which they seriously believe to be unequal or detrimental to their security In fact, the united front posed by NATO likely has more likely had the opposite effect, reinforcing the traditional Russian paranoia regarding the hostile intentions of the world beyond its borders

Against the questionable benefits to Canada associated with membership in NATO must be weighed the possible security risks brought about by recent trends in nuclear weapons' technology and nuclear strategy Over the past ten years the development and deployment of increasingly accurate strategic nuclear delivery systems has shifted the focus of superpower strategic doctrine away from mutual assured destruction towards limited and protracted nuclear warfare with its emphasis on escalation dominance, war fighting capabilities and the destruction of the opponent's command and control facilities Membership in NATO (and also NORAD) increases the probability of Canada's becoming a nuclear battlefield in the early stages of a limited and protracted superpower conflict Targets in the remote part of Canada, such as the unmanned and isolated Northern Warning System, are likely to prove attractive to Soviet planners in the preliminary stages of a conflict. The destruction of these facilities would damage US fighting capability, demonstrate the Soviet resolve not to lose a limited war to the United States, but not inflict sufficient damage to necessitate American escalation

Another suspect assumption made by NATO advocates is that participation in the alliance allows Canada to exercise real influence on those East-West issues which ultimately affect Canadian security Membership, it is argued, gives Canada the right to be consulted on all matters related to European security, the right to 'a seat at the table' at all multilateral negotiations involving NATO and Warsaw Pact countries, and the right to be kept informed on the progress of all bilateral superpower negotiations, such as START or INF. Additionally, it is believed that because of Canada's 'special relationship' with the United States, NATO membership places Canada in a unique position to exercise a moderating influence on American East-West policies when, as happens, these policies become rigid, extreme and provocative Thus, Canada's influence in NATO is mainly an illusion What supporters interpret as Canadian influence on the conduct of East-West relations is really a confusion for something far less significant, namely the ability to influence NATO discussions on peripheral questions related to procedure, protocol or technical issues Canada has no influence over major policy questions Key decisions related to strategy, arms control and the political conduct of East-West

relations are made by the Americans in accordance with what Washington views as being in the best interest of the alliance The NATO allies may be kept informed of American decisions — which of course is not the same as being consulted — but even on this score the US record is less than perfect The United States will often take important policy decisions, as they did over Afghanistan, Poland and on SDI, without consulting or informing their alliance partners. The allies, however, are expected to support these unilateral decisions, whether it is in their interest to do so or not, so as to maintain the facade of alliance unity

Another questionable premise for NATO membership is that it helps Canada defend its sovereignty in the otherwise delicate situation where Canadians are dependent on the United States for protection against the Soviet Union Affiliation with NATO, it is argued, provides Ottawa with an effective counterweight against American influence since there is less chance of Canadian interests being dominated in an alliance involving fourteen European nations than there is in a bilateral defence relationship with the United States It is additionally claimed that membership in NATO enhances Canadian sovereignty because it allows Canada to cement its 'special relationship' with the United States, thus ensuring a sympathetic hearing in Washington for issues considered of vital importance to Canada

Once again the presumed benefits of NATO membership do not accord with reality. Participation in the Atlantic alliance has neither permitted Canadians to avoid an unequal bilateral defence relationship with the United States (NORAD), nor provided in Western Europe an effective counterweight to American influence The Europeans have repeatedly shown through their actions that they will not jeouardise their relations with the United States in order to support Canad on sovereignty issues This was evident in the 1970s during attempts to negotiate a meaningful trade agreement with the European Economic Community which would allow Canada to lessen its economic dependence on the United States It is clear today from the lack of West European support for Canada in its dispute with the Americans over Arctic sovereignty Moreover, the 'special relationship' has also proven ineffective in defending vital Canadian interests in Washington Notwithstanding Canada's enhanced commitment to NATO and NORAD in recent years, the Americans have shown increasing insensitivity to vital Canadian concerns in the areas of trade, the environment and the Arctic

Indeed, Canadian sovereignty is possibly inhibited more than it is enhanced by membership in NATO, in that participation often compels Ottawa — in the name of alliance unity — to support policies which are contrary to Canada's best interests The need for alliance unity compelled Canada to support Cruise missile testing, the Reagan programme of SDI research and the rationale for the American decision to abandon the SALT II treaty, even though these policies fuel the arms race, foster East-West tensions, and endanger key arms control treaties and objectives professed by Ottawa to be of central importance to Canadian security.

By comparison, a foreign and defence policy based on non-alignment might better enhance Canada's security, sovereignty and international influence The approach to non-alignment most appropriate for Canada, given the anarchic nature of the international system and Canada's geographic position between the two rival superpowers, would seem to be that of 'armed neutrality' as practised by Sweden and Finland Both northern countries maintain armed forces at levels adequate to defend their territorial integrity against limited foreign incursions But neither power is capable of offering sustained military resistance to a determined great power attack The position of Finland differs from that of Sweden in that the Finns have a treaty with the Soviet Union in which they promise not to allow Finland to be used for anti-Soviet purposes, undertake to defend themselves against foreign incursions and to call upon Russia for assistance should they not prove able to contain a foreign attack. This 'Finnish model' would appear the most appropriate for Canada, given the need to satisfy US anxieties regarding northern defence Guarantees similar to those embodied in the above Finno-Soviet treaty were exchanged by the United States and Canada in 1938 when President Roosevelt declared that the United States would not stand by if an outside power attacked Canada, and Prime Minister King promised that Canadian territory could not be used to attack the United States

A foreign and defence policy based on non-alignment might enhance Canadian security interests in a number of ways Admittedly, it would not allow Canada to survive a major nuclear exchange between the two superpowers, but of course no nation, irrespective of political stripe or military strength, could escape the catastrophic consequences of such an event However, it would lessen the likelihood of Canada's being a target in the event of a limited and protracted superpower nuclear conflict. Canada is a military and economic threat to the Soviet Union only to the extent that our alliance commitments have served to integrate the Canadian and US war economies and defence structure

Non-alignment might also enhance Canadian security by placing Ottawa in a position to pursue foreign and defence policies based on Canada's security requirements and not on the need to satisfy NATO Canada, in conjunction with like-minded small and middle powers, would be free to take independent initiatives in East-West relations where any move to lessen tensions and control the spiralling arms race is certain to enhance Canadian and world security Canada, for example, could work effectively with other capable powers to establish International Verification Organisations or Satellite Monitoring Agencies, under the auspices of the United Nations, to allow for the impartial monitoring of bilateral or multilateral arms control agreements The establishment of this capability would help to remove the contentious and volatile question of arms control verification from the arena of cold war politics The superpowers would find it politically more difficult to avoid effective arms control agreements (such as a CIB) on the pretext of inadequate verification methods and procedures, if an international organisation staffed by res-

pected middle powers used its capabilities to demonstrate that a verifiable agreement was possible

Canada's ability to play a more positive and constructive role in East-West relations would also increase her influence and prestige among the neutrals of Europe, the Third World nations, and those small and middle powers who remained trapped inside the restrictive diplomatic confines of the NATO and Warsaw Pact alliances Non-alignment would enable Canada to exercise greater political leadership in organising associations of like-minded nations to pressure the superpowers for more genuine efforts to resolve their cold war differences Indeed, Canada's foreign policy to date has shown its greatest flexibility, independence and effectiveness, in those regions such as Southern Africa and Central America where it has not been constrained to the same degree by the need to conform to NATO or American policies

The costs to Canada of a non-alignment policy are not likely to be anywhere near as high in political, economic and cultural terms as is often suggested by pro-NATO opinion For example, a withdrawal from NATO would not be synonymous with Canada's turning its back on its European culture, tradition and heritage Adherence to Western culture and tradition does not require membership in a military alliance, as is obvious from the examples set by Sweden, Switzerland, Austria and Finland Contrary to the claim made by the White Paper, Canada has not always sought its security in a 'larger family of like-minded nations' Until 1949 Canada avoided joining with family members in binding collective security arrangements and military alliances, precisely because Ottawa feared the consequences of such commitments in situations over which it lacked real policy control Certainly there is the risk that a number of Western European governments (as opposed to populations) might attempt to ostracise Canada as an untrustworthy and distasteful acquaintance were it to pull out of NATO, but this charge would be difficult to sustain given Canada's historical record of assistance to Europe in times of legitimate need

A policy of non-alignment is also unlikely to have as severe an impact on Canadian-American relations as is forecast by NATO supporters The Americans are not likely to celebrate Canada's departure from NATO and may even make a symbolic gesture to wind-down what in any case is a one-sided 'special relationship', but direct American economic retaliation against Canada seems doubtful for two reasons First, the high level of integration between the two economies means that economic vulnerability cuts both ways Economic sanctions may injure Canada but they would also damage important American interests Second, retaliation against Canada for getting out of NATO would be against the wider foreign policy interests of the United States

To prevent Canada from doing what the Soviets have allowed Finland and Austria to do has sobering implications for a comparative analysis of Soviet-American values and standards of international behaviour Thus, the Americans are likely to bluster and brood over a Canadian withdrawal from NATO, but in the end they would probably accept a non-aligned

Canada, provided they are reasonably assured that Canadian territory could not be used to launch a surprise attack against the United States

To attain this confidence it is unlikely that Canada would have to expand its military establishment of defence budget beyond current levels A defence policy modelled on that of Finland or Sweden would not so much necessitate the expansion of Canada's armed forces as it would entail the redistribution of existing manpower Greater emphasis would have to be accorded sea and air power, and less emphasis placed on land forces. Nor is it certain that Canadian taxpayers would have to pay more for a defence policy based on the need to protect Canada's territorial integrity against limited incursions Contrary to assertions made by those who advocate NATO membership, the percentage of GNP devoted to defence spending by the European neutrals is generally less than the percentage currently devoted to defence spending by Canada — a percentage, coincidentally, which many NATO advocates claim is not enough In 1983, the last year for which reliable comparative figures are available, Canada allotted 2 1 percent of its GNP to defence In the same year, Austria spent 1 4 percent of its GNP on defence, Finland 1 6 percent and Switzerland 2 1 percent Only Sweden, at 3 2 percent, spent a greater portion of its GNP on defence than Canada.

[J A Bayer is Associate Professor of History and Political Economy in Royal Roads Military College, Victoria, BC]

LEBANON IS NOT BULGARIA

by Antoine J. Abraham

AS soon as the first shot in the Lebanese 'civil war' was fired in April of 1975, a deluge of books and articles on the conflagration began to appear, written by both scholars and layman In reviewing that vast amount of literature, a curious malignment of one particular community, the Maronite Catholics, began to emerge

Convinced that the malignment of Lebanon's largest community was the result of a lack of familiarity with Lebanon's 'patch-work' politics, or non-intentional oversights in reporting, I looked deeper into the problem, for attitudes are extremely important in finding formulas for conflict resolution, with the following results

(1) Many scholarly studies of the conflict relied upon reports from the US embassy, which was located deep in the heart of leftist held Moslem West Beirut Very rarely did US officials venture beyond 'safe limits' to gather information from the Christian half of the capital

(2) News coverage, and journalism in general, was primarily centred and dispatched from the Commodore Hotel, also located in the leftist held, Moslem, section of Beirut When the correspondents failed to explore the dangerous city, they sent local agents to gather information which was often 'adjusted' or actually 'censored' by the local militia chiefs If unfavourable reports appeared, the agent was out of a job He could be kidnapped or dispatched to paradise

From 1975 until the Israeli invasion of 1982, the political-military Green Line, dividing Beirut, was also a demarcation line for news reports The government opposition groups in West Beirut used the western media to their best advantage, by adopting easily understandable western political terms to justify their cause They accused the pro-western Lebanese government of 'victimising' its Moslem citizens, primarily in South Lebanon The 'Christian' administration was, therefore, guilty of prejudice towards some of its citizens And, consequently, the victims were revolting against the oppressors, the Maronite political leadership

With the Israeli invasion of 1982, media coverage and studies on Lebanon began to present a new point of view No longer were the Shi'ite Moslems of South Lebanon the victims of the Maronite Christians, but now the Christian government was guilty of a lesser offence than 'victimisation' Many books and articles published after 1982 reflect the 'neglect' theory, in the absence of any evidence of victimisation; and now, the latest studies plead the Shi'ite case as an attempt to obtain a greater share in Lebanon's future, as the largest Moslem sect there

Obviously, anyone who has lived or worked in Lebanon for any prolonged period of time knows that Lebanon's decentralised administration prevents the victimisation or neglect of any sect by the government Lebanon is not Bulgaria — a socialist, East European nation — such as, for instance, the Bulgarian central government is physically involved in a

campaign to 'victimise' ethnic Turks who are Sunnite Moslem fundamentalists opposing the state. Lebanon's government, however, represents all sects and it is legally secular (only family law is based on religion) thus Lebanon has a dual culture, protected by the ever-watchful eyes of its clerics The Lebanese government serves all, represents all, and oppress no one, under the Lebanese Formula which was quite happily agreed to by all parties in order to establish a consensus government and religious freedom So, what then, is the cause of the plight of the Shi'ites of Lebanon?

Unfortunately for the Shi'ites, the major cause of their poverty and predicament is two-fold First, the Shi'ite population has increased in the last few decades, far exceeding the birthrates of the other communities Therefore, in the area of human resource development that is open to all sects and groups, the Shi'ites fell far behind. Second, southern Lebanon became the only war zone available to the Palestinians to wage their war against Israel. Thus, the Shi'ites have some legitimate grievances but they should be addressed peacefully.

After thirteen years of bloody, devastating combat, Lebanon's leaders remain deadlocked in the search for a new political formula to terminate the nation's multifarious strife In fact, the search for peace in Lebanon may be likened to a blind man searching for a burned-out light bulb to replace a burned-out light bulb in a darkened room

Perhaps one reason for this is because the best formula for Lebanon already exists, but it requires some adjustment It would auger well for Lebanon's next president to suggest the following reforms

1 Retain the office of the president in Maronite hands to guarantee freedom of religion and legal equality for all,
2 Retain the office of prime minister in the Sunnite Moslem community, but make the post responsible to parliament for a vote of confidence,
3 Divide the parliament equally between the Christians and the Moslems and keep it balanced regardless of future demographics,
4 Transfer the post of speaker of the parliament from the Shi'ite sect to the Druze community, to give the small Druze sect considerable influence in the government;
5. Grant the Shi'ite sect additional seats in the Moslem half of the parliament to accurately reflect their numbers and to give them greater political power as the controlling vote in the Moslem half of the legislature

These suggestions are only a preliminary step, a starting point or rough beginning, for meaningful conflict resolution designed to re-establish a viable consensus government in Lebanon

The alternative for Lebanon may produce dire consequences, if the Lebanese communities no longer believe that they have anything in common to bind them together as a nation, then, perhaps, like people caught in a bad marriage. they should separate, creating two micro-states, divided by the Beirut-Damascus Highway With an appropriate population

transfer and compensation, a democratic Christian state can be established in the north and an Islamic republic may be formed for the south That, of course, would constitute a tragic end to Lebanon's experience in human rights for the region

The current stalemate and no-win scenario has cast the Lebanese as 'the fools who fight in a burning house' Only the Lebanese can resolve their own problems to make outside interference null and void and foreign occupation unnecessary To continue to blame each other for their problems is a bankrupt policy that only aggravates peace initiatives. The first major step the militia leaders can take along the torturous path of conflict resolution is to end all verbal aggression directed towards one another, to reconstitute the Lebanese Formula along the lines suggested, in order to turn a new page in the history of modern Lebanon

---

[Dr Antoine J Abraham is Professor of General and Social Studies at The New York Institute of Technology]

The January number of the *Contemporary Review* includes *The Future for Yugoslavia* by Leo Muray, *The Position of Women in Pakistan* by Frances Harrison, *The Sharing Society* by Mark Cook and Judith Piggott and *The Quarterly Film Review* by David Shipman

BRITAIN'S WASTE

by Rosalind Wade

Based on information supplied by John Holmes, Independent Consultant to the National Association of Waste Disposal Contractors, government reports and other research publications

THE plastic refuse bin stands discreetly at the back door, conveniently out of sight, not thought about between weekly emptying when a dedicated team of refuse disposal workers — once known as 'dustmen' — tip the unwanted household waste into a purpose-built council lorry and drive off to unload the contents onto a nearby dump But where is that? No one seems to know and yet the question is increasingly important and not confined to kitchen rubbish Disposal of toxic waste is also on the agenda as instanced by the recent battle of Ewelme in Oxfordshire to prohibit approximately 3,000 tons each week in disused gravel pits, and even imported waste as witness the proposed resting place in Bedfordshire clay pits for Swiss 'bags'

On some aspects of the problem the European Commission is already involved and has set up an enquiry into the condition and safety of incineration plants The Environment Commissioner, Stanley Clinton Davis, and the Belgian Euro MP, Roelants du Vivier are already involved, while admitting frankly the difficulty of fixing 'safe' emission from both old and new incinerators

Soon, a European Community Directive Environmental Impact Analysis will be obligatory on some projects and discretionary on others This was due to come into force during the recent summer. It will then be obligatory to monitor all hazardous waste plants and discretionary on waste plants, including landfill, above a certain capacity This is a very important development which will compel a comprehensive analysis of all aspects of plants that compete with landfill Landfill sites, too, will come under greater scrutiny noise, traffic, smell (landfill gas, sometimes), risks of gas migration to adjoining land (if not controlled)

At present, the Department of Environment is rushing through a waste management paper on landfill gas monitoring and control. Many conferences were planned for this year to study the problem Some recent incidents including explosions, such as the Loscoe incident in Derbyshire suggest that gas is present in many sites in the country Concern centres on the developments of sites adjacent to landfill sites and it is generally admitted that a rethink is urgently required

Alternative uses for worked-out mineral sites may include development for housing and industrial parks and sometimes these alternatives to landfill will carry the day Yet whilst landfill remains the safest and most economical means of disposing of waste in this country, landfill companies should not be complacent and standards must be maintained and improved

Coming to a more practical issue, there would seem to be a genuine

place for high-temperature incineration plants for hazardous organic chemical waste Several plants exist in the UK and more are being planned The same applies to chemical and physical treatments for other chemical wastes, also, a bouyant reclamation industry for waste oils and high value solvents as well as a need for in-house treatment plants on major chemical plants

But to return to the dilemma on our doorsteps, Britain produces a staggering 438 million tons of waste of various kinds each year, of which 31 million tons is domestic and commercial waste handled by the councils More than a year after the demise of the Greater London Council, a satisfactory solution to the capital's waste disposal problems is still being sought London is apparently almost the only city of its size in the world without a co-ordinated waste strategy

The government, through the Department of the Environment, retains a mainly advisory and policy role in waste management and has decided against direct intervention, leaving the various methods of waste disposal to the local authorities and market forces

Thus, it emerges that the only safe route for the majority of waste is landfill, that is to say, dumping in unwanted pits and quarries It does not — it is hoped — create dioxins or other poisonous chemicals Yet paradoxically many authorities are still spending time and much public money on alternative, more expensive and potentially risky methods of disposal

In a fairly active year, surface mineral extraction in the United Kingdom creates about 250 million cubic metres of space All the rubbish we generate, when compacted, would fill just a fraction of these holes, leaving ample room for inert mineral wastes and construction industry debris. Although many of these voids are increasingly remote from the urban centres it is simply not true that Britain is running out of holes for landfill

Take, for example, the question of dioxin, a highly toxic substance which hit the headlines some ten years ago when a cloud of poison gas spread over Sevesco, Italy Dioxins are produced when certain materials, such as plastics, are burned inefficiently Hospital incinerators, crematoriums and refuse incinerators are just some of the culprits Research shows that incinerators must function at temperatures in excess of 1,100 degrees C for the safe combustion of waste, but many incinerators in the UK simply cannot operate at these temperatures and at present, ten years after the Sevesco disaster, Britain has no clear regulations on the emission of dioxins into the atmosphere Research on animals shows that dioxins are linked to cancer In many parts of Britain, residents living near incinerators have complained of headaches, sore throats and nausea In the Rhondda Valley and Cheshire, for instance, there have been reports of plants and vegetation dying without apparent cause Sadly, the same effects may be produced by breathing in a polluted atmosphere resulting from the pollutant exhaust gases from motor vehicles

Inevitably, the form and substance of our rubbish has changed over

the decades In the sixties we produced only half a per cent of plastics, which help to create dioxins. Today, that figure has been increased nearly 10-fold and is continuing to increase.

Behind the scenes there is considerable disquiet about dioxins in general, and the government is now undertaking research and monitoring the emissions from incinerators all over Britain In March of last year, a South Wales incinerator was closed following allegations of dioxin pollution.

Dr. Alistair Hay, of Leeds University, and one of Britain's leading experts on dioxins, is concerned not just about the inhalation of dioxins but by our consumption of animal products, such as cheese and milk, where the concentration of dioxins is much higher because cattle graze on dioxin-contaminated grasslands Government tests are confined to measuring the concentration in the atmosphere At present, Dr. Hay sees only three alternatives for the safe incineration of rubbish, burning at high temperatures which is costly, sorting our waste by hand to remove dangerous substances, which he regards as not only impractical and costly but impossible, and a new method being tested in Germany, using lime to remove the chlorine which is the toxic element of dioxins He points out that much further testing is required of the latter method but it appears, at this stage, to be a possible solution.

When considering the alternatives for waste disposal it is important to probe long and hard into what the alternatives cost to build and to operate, what residues they discharge, what pollutants escape into the air, and the dependability of the day-to-day operation. Waste has been transported out of London by road and river for many centuries. Not surprisingly, the holes nearest to London are gradually filling up but, as already mentioned, there are still many available farther away from the capital

To reach these sites transfer stations are needed. There are, at present, three major transfer stations and four riverside stations in London. More can be built as required. Transfer stations enable the refuse to reach disposal points swiftly and easily For this purpose, the rubbish is compressed into sealed, anonymous containers, each holding the equivalent of nearly three refuse carts These containers are then loaded onto trains and barges, and occasionally road vehicles, and taken to the remote landfill sites — quietly, unseen and with no fuss Rail and river transfer is reasonably cheap It is reliable and reduces road congestion. Transfer stations can be designed to be aesthetically pleasing and, more importantly, there are no pollutants discharged from them into the atmosphere.

Burying waste in landfill sites was not done too well in the earlier part of the present century, but since the 1970s the government and the private waste industry have spent enormous sums on research and field trials to improve techniques and to demonstrate how safe modern methods are now Even so, centuries of waste have been disposed into land without any material problem

Not all holes, of course, are suitable for landfill. The safest are clay holes, many of which are within easy reach of London They act like

sealed containers, but some gravel and chalk pits in the Thames Valley are not acceptable. Apart from this, there are mudflats and low lying land which would benefit from sensitive land reclamation The mineral extraction industry creates voids several times as large as is required to bury all the wastes in Britain produced in any year. In fact, landfill operations carried out to a high standard return the land to use for farming, light industrial and recreation purposes. Ugly scars become attractive landscapes In addition, landfill creates energy through landfill gas Once waste is stored in landfills, it breaks down and generates a natural methane gas Like a North Sea operation in miniature, gas can be extracted and filtered and used for a range of purposes Already, cement, bricks and electrical power are being made from this natural gas

Typically, gas from one million tons of rubbish, which is equal to that created by 600,000 people in five years, will provide, over the same period, enough gas to heat 4,000 homes cleanly and safely. Private landfill companies share the profits of this energy with the local authorities whose waste has generated it. Of all waste currently disposed of by London authorities, 90 per cent is landfilled.

True, there remains incineration as an alternative waste disposal scheme The first incinerator with energy recovery steam turbines was built in the 1890's. Coventry had an incinerator system providing electricity from rubbish as long ago as 1911 In the sixties, the plan was to ring London with a series of incinerators The plant at Edmonton is the only one that was actually built. It was designed to burn 1,400 tons a day, and at today's prices it would cost about £70 million to build Edmonton now operates efficiently and generates electricity, but in the early days there were considerable problems and major modifications had to be made to the plant.

As has already been noted, if rubbish is not burnt at the correct temperature, dangerous dioxins can be emitted into the air To prevent this and to deal with acid rain, for the existence of which this country is heavily criticised, gas scrubbers to wash out the pollutants have to be fitted Unfortunately, they add considerably to the capital cost of the plant

Energy from waste is a deficit process. The value of the reclaimed product is always less than the cost of reclaiming it No amount of creative accounting can change that fact. Although the CEGB is obliged to purchase any electricity generated from waste at an agreed minimum price, there are more efficient ways of making electricity than by burning rubbish. If money is to be spent on incinerators in London, then it should be primarily for the safe disposal of hospital waste It is no secret that the real waste crisis in London is in hospital wastes. Many of the hospital incinerators are ageing and need to be replaced. London's Waste Regulation Authority says that ideally London needs three regional clinical waste disposal plants At present it has one.

Providing community heating schemes for council homes and local industry may seem, at first sight, to be an admirable idea, but despite our

inclement weather, heating demands vary widely over the year On average, the difference between our heat requirements from winter to summer is 3 1. Where, it may be asked, is the market for the remainder of the energy which is produced all year round? And ironically, the residue from incineration, equal to about 30 per cent by weight of the incoming rubbish has, in any case, eventually to be landfilled.

Waste-derived fuel is a 'halfway house', that is to say, a means of using the energy value in fuel without spending as many of the millions of pounds required for incineration The rubbish is pulverised, separated and formed into compressed pellets with a heat value about half that of coal The pellets can be bagged, stored and transported easily

The major problems with this method are in marketing the fuels and its combustion If the companies purchasing the pellets do not burn them at the correct temperature, dioxins and other pollutants can be emitted Hold up a pellet to the light and the plastic can be seen in it Also, insurance companies are reluctant to insure firms who use Waste Disposal Fuel (WDF) pellets because of pollutants escaping into the atmosphere, boiler corrosion and other difficulties of combustion So, once again, a seemingly bold and innovative idea simply does not stand up to the harsh realities of economics and markets

Until further research has been completed the indication is that rubbish should be landfilled as the only safe option And what we must do, as a nation, is to use our waste while restoring our countryside and the derelict land in it In 1988, following the European Year of the Environment, it is to be hoped that public awareness and debate about what happens to the mountains of rubbish has helped to persuade those in authority to formulate coherent policies for waste disposal

---

Reference may be made to the following books by John Holmes *Refuse Recycling & Recovery* — John Wiley & Sons 1981, *Practical Waste Management* — John Wiley & Sons 1983, *Managing Solid Wastes in Developing Countries* — John Wiley & Sons 1984.

WILL THE VIETNAMESE STARVE?

by Nghiem Xuan Thien

SOME months ago the Vietnamese government made an appeal to the United Nations Organisation (UNO) for help as a large section of its population was on the point of starvation Substantial amounts of food are badly needed and the UNO is the only international organisation that can offer practical help for Vietnam, already exhausted by a thirty-year War of Independence and Reunification (1946-1975) The USA was the first nation to react to the Vietnamese government's request It declared that it had no sympathy for it because the Vietnamese government has mismanaged its economy! We can understand the USA's attitude America still remembers with bitterness the failure of its immense efforts to save Vietnam from communism In this laudable enterprise it lost about 56,000 soldiers and something like 121,000 million dollars

As a Vietnamese who struggled unsuccessfully for 30 years against dictatorial regimes, either catholic or communist, and who is now living as an exile, I do not forget that Vietnam is my homeland, and that the Vietnamese, communists or non-communists, are my countrymen Also I am very sensitive to what has happened to my country whatever government it may have, and I am grateful to the USA for the massive material help it gave to my country during its intervention in South Vietnam I also recognise that in the history of the world no country has given such generous aid to another country with no expectation of compensation. But, in 1954 the USA knew next to nothing of Vietnam, of its people or its society The little it knew of them came from the French, and the French wanted Ngo Dinh Diem to rule over the country when their own future in Vietnam was under threat For more than a decade they had put forth intense propaganda for a man almost unknown in Vietnam They had made him into a god, one of a family who had served them for two generations These mandarins were a privileged class, created by the French for their own purposes For this reason they have little prestige among the Vietnamese Only true revolutionaries, who risked their lives for the country's independence, inspire confidence and admiration It is also well known that bureaucrats were instrumental in prolonging French domination. It must be remembered that during the one hundred years of their rule the French dethroned three Vietnamese kings Ham Nghi, Thanh Thai and Duy Tan, and sent them into exile in the French colonies in Africa, the reason being that they had manifested some aspirations for their country's independence and so were considered 'anti-French'

Another of Diem's good marks in French eyes was that he was a catholic The French believed that Vietnamese catholics had more affinity with them than other Vietnamese groups Diem, during his career as Prime Minister of South Vietnam, had the full support of the USA Did he, during his nine year rule, pave the way for the communist seizure of South Vietnam? The government that succeeded him was composed of

men of his choice on two criteria being fervent catholics and men of Centre-Vietnam. From time immemorial, Vietnam has been a country of bureaucracy The old system of education, borrowed from China, was intended to make out of educated men mandarins to help the king govern his subjects, or petty functionaries, auxiliaries to the mandarins

The French first came to Vietnam in the 19th century. They instituted a new system of education that had a different programme and a different language, but the spirit was unchanged· men educated in the new schools had the same bureaucratic-spirit All personal efforts were directed towards obtaining a post in the administration, for there was no other field of activity As a result, there was scarcely a politician or statesman worthy of the name Thus, when the country became independent there existed no properly qualified leader Yet there were many who aspired to the highest office for material advantages, in addition to actual power

With such a state of affairs the Americans, when they intervened in South Vietnam, had no choice but to support the men whom they had brought to power. In supporting Diem unconditionally, with no regard for Vietnamese aspirants, the Americans carried a share of responsibility in the fall of South Vietnam before the communist invasion We can understand that the confidence of the USA was sufficiently strong to crush the communists, no matter who was at the head of the Saigon government This could have been true in any conventional war that did not last too long But the Vietnam wars in North and then in South Vietnam were not conventional wars They were guerrilla-wars, wars of attrition, and the American people had not the patience to lead such wars If the Americans had succeeded in preventing South Vietnam from being conquered by the communists, the population of the South, about 20 million, would never have suffered from hunger and malnutrition

When the communists took over South Vietnam and unified the country they had to build up the economy of North and South Vietnam; yet the whole of Vietnam was ruined by a 30 years war The Americans had dropped about seven million tons of bombs In the South 60% of the villages had been destroyed, millions of hectares of cultivatible lands damaged, about one million buffalo and oxen, 250,000 soldiers and more than 400,000 civilians killed, one million wounded, 360,000 maimed The communists had one million killed and an equal number mutilated. In addition, they had two-thirds of their rural agglomerations bombed and one thousand from them completely annihilated (in all there were about 6,000 such agglomerations), 1,600 hydraulic works and 1,000 dykes and bridges seriously damaged

With such widespread destruction it was not easy to return the country to a normal situation. Inevitably, such losses diminish the capacity for food production Evidently the Vietnamese government, with control of all the means of production and of distribution, does not encourage the peasants to work individually As in all communist countries, the fruit of one's labour is acquired by government agents who pay in return a miserable sum, not sufficient to feed a family Every Vietnamese living abroad

knows well that, since the end of the war, his countrymen at home simply do not have enough to eat The impoverished land cannot produce sufficient food for a population of 60 million individuals. In spite of the war, the population has doubled and in another generation it will probably double again, to reach 120 million, if no measures of family planning are enforced.

In rejecting the appeal for help can it be that the USA wishes to teach the Vietnamese a lesson as the Chinese did in 1979 by sending troops to invade North Vietnam, also to apply some conditions to the Vietnamese in return for aid? There are certain problems that the USA wants to settle with the Vietnamese; problems of American soldiers still missing in Vietnam, and about Cambodia In the latter case it should be remembered that the Vietnamese invaded that country in 1977 only after they were repeatedly attacked by the Cambodians at their common border

Perhaps it is not too late to hope that the UN, together with the USA, will eventually comply with the Vietnamese government's request merely for humanitarian reasons? It is, after all, the UN's policy to help countries in material need as has been done in Ethiopia and Bihar It would be an opportunity for the West to welcome Vietnam in its first attempt to mend bridges with the Western world

---

[Nghiem Xuan Thien is a Vietnamese journalist now living in exile in Berlin]

ANTHONY TROLLOPE AND THE BEVERLEY ELECTION

by Robert Woodall

WHEN Charles Dickens heard that Anthony Trollope intended to stand as a Liberal candidate at the general election of 1868 he told Thomas Adolphus Trollope that his brother's desire to become a Member of Parliament indicated that he was out of his mind That Dickens should have expressed himself so forthrightly was not surprising A brief but distinguished career as a Parliamentary reporter had imbued him with a contempt for the whole business of politics and an even greater contempt for politicians, most of whom he regarded as self-seekers, time-servers and charlatans, given to the striking of dubious attitudes and the exercises of false and bombastic eloquence Trollope's opinion had always been different At the age of nineteen, shortly after he entered the service of the Post Office, he confessed to an uncle that he hoped one day to sit in the House of Commons, and although upset by the jeering reaction evoked by this rejection of his youthful ambition he continued to interest himself in politics, and to cling tenaciously to the view that 'the man in Parliament has reached a higher position than the man out'

To a modern generation which is said to hold Parliament and Parliamentarians in disrepute it may seem strange that a man of substantial achievement in the public service and in literature should, at the comparatively late age of fifty-three, decide to take up a political career But even though he craved the honour of being able to write the letters 'MP' after his name, Trollope had no illusions about the amount of good that the individual member was able to do As only one out of six hundred and fifty, he wrote, he 'must be satisfied with doing a little bit of a little thing at a time must be content to be beaten six times in order that, on a seventh, his work may be found to be of assistance to someone else'. Nor had he any illusions about the integrity of a Parliamentary system whereby, after subjecting himself to the stress of an electoral contest in which violence and bribery were commonplace, the successful candidate found himself sitting in an assembly whose members were 'led further and further away from first causes, till at last a measure is opposed by one member simply because it is advocated by another'.

Despite these reservations Trollope regarded membership of the House of Commons as an important means of improving the condition of his countrymen, and in pursuance of what he called his 'almost insane desire to sit there' resolved to look for a constituency as soon as he became capable of holding one That condition was fulfilled on his resignation from the Post Office in 1867, and at the dissolution of 1868 he returned from a visit to America delighted to find that friends had secured for him an invitation to stand for the Yorkshire borough of Beverley

With 14,000 inhabitants and 2,500 electors Beverley was a two-member

constituency which since 1857 had had as its senior Conservative representative Sir Henry Edwards, chairman of the Beverley Wagon Company Sir Henry. a powerful political boss whose partner at the forthcoming election was to be Captain Edward Kennard, a rich young man in search of a seat, had over the years spent much money on local charities and, as was widely known, considerably more on bribing the electors Not that bribery was unusual in Beverley or, for that matter, in most other constituencies in mid-Victorian Britain But Beverley had a particularly bad reputation for electoral corruption There had been petitions challenging the results of the elections of 1837, 1857 and 1860: and if, as was maintained by interested parties, in 1854 there really was a pure election, it must have been, as *The Times* remarked, 'quite an accident'.

According to W S. Hind, a local solicitor who was the Liberal agent, it would also be an accident if Trollope and his running mate, Marmaduke Maxwell, the son of a Scottish peer, succeded in beating the Conservatives 'You won't get in', Hind said when Trollope acknowledged that, although not sanguine, he hoped for the best 'You will spend £1,000 and lose the election Then you will petition and spend another £1,000 You will throw out the elected members There will be a commission and the borough will be disfranchised For a beginner such as you are that will be a great success'

In the circumstances Trollope could have been excused for thinking that he had been brought to Beverley for no other reason than to cause his opponents the maximum amount of trouble, inconvenience and expense From the moment of his arrival in the town on 30th October, when he was put in the charge of a group of 'grinding vulgar tyrants who were doing what they could, or said that they were doing so, to secure me a seat in Parliament', he was made to understand that his political ideas were irrelevant, and that most of the men whose votes he solicited would not even expect him to have any What mattered to them were not arguments but bribes, as Trollope learned when on 2nd November, the day of the municipal elections, Sir Henry Edwards's agent established himself in the Golden Ball public house with a bag of coin from which he openly distributed sums of between fifteen and twenty shillings to nearly one thousand electors Trollope was dismayed to hear that the bribes were chiefly intended to influence the result of the Parliamentary election a fortnight hence, and had been paid in advance because the conduct of local elections was known to be less rigorously scrutinised Of course, the author of such novels as *Doctor Thorne, Can You Forgive Her?* and *Rachel Ray,* all of which contain descriptions of electoral irregularities, would not have expected all his own supporters to applaud his determination to run an honest campaign But if he half-humorously acknowledged 'something grand in the scorn with which a leading Liberal turned up his nose at me when I told him that there should be no bribery, no treating, not even a pot of beer on our side', he was outraged when some of his supporters, in a Watergate-like raid on the Conservative headquarters, stole money and documents

Trollope was to remember his fourteen days of electioneering in Beverley as the most wretched of his manhood. The weather was consistently bad — for most of the time he complained of canvassing up to his knees in slush, 'utterly unable to assume that air of triumphant joy with which a jolly successful candidate should be invested' He was particularly saddened by the personal antipathy which his candidature aroused among the county families, who as usual supported the Tories The local Anglican clergy, too, and those of their parishioners who were electors were strongly anti-Liberal, so much so that one incumbent referred to Trollope and the Liberals as 'the foes of the Protestant Church', and another warned that his presence in the congregation on a Sunday would cause a scandal It was no wonder that Trollope felt himself to be 'a kind of pariah in the borough', a feeling that was intensified when he and Marmaduke Maxwell announced their intention to take a day off to go hunting, and were informed by a publican working for them that if they did so all Beverley would desert them

Before he had been a week in the borough Trollope decided that the making of speeches was a waste of time. This was scarcely an unusual judgement from a man who in *Rachel Ray* had portrayed a Conservative agent telling his candidate that 'speeches were only done for the show of the thing and to fill up the day — if Gladstone were here he wouldn't take a vote out of them one way or the other, nor yet the devil himself' Yet his distaste for publicly haranguing the electors was not due to lack of confidence in his ability as a speaker, although he modestly ascribed the *Beverley Recorder's* assertion that his first speech was 'one of the ablest and most fluent addresses ever heard in Beverley' to the fact that it was made by a Liberal journal Rather, it was his conviction that however cogent his arguments they would not succeed in swaying the minds of electors who over the years had become accustomed to selling their votes for Sir Henry Edwards's money, food and drink

Moreover, as the campaign progressed Trollope found himself beset by other doubts and difficulties Despite his promise in his election address always to give 'an active, constant and unwearied support to Mr Gladstone' he had scant sympathy with some of the positions taken up by the Liberal party On the ballot he deemed it 'unworthy of a great people to free itself from the evil results of vicious conduct by unmanly restraints', and as for the Permissive Drink Bill he believed that 'the gradual effect of moral teaching and education' would be more likely to discourage drunkenness than any Act of Parliament He proceeded to cause further offence by declaring that the poor should be educated by the state, a standpoint which, only two years before the Forster Education Act became law, was condemned by almost everyone in Beverley as a mark of extreme radicalism

Nevertheless, he struggled on, canvassing assiduously by day and speaking somewhere every night, outwardly indifferent to the significance of the fact that in the municipal elections the Conservatives had captured all six seats Yet, in his heart, as he was to make plain in his autobiography,

he had known from the beginning how the affair at Beverley would turn out Unable to stomach the unprincipled conduct of the zealots of both parties, he concluded that 'it was wrong that one so innocent in such ways as I, so utterly unable to fight such a battle, should [have been] carried down into Yorkshire to spend money and to be annoyed I suffered for my obstinacy Of course, I was not elected' After a riotous polling day, during which there was drunkenness and fighting in the streets and, in the words of the *Hull and Eastern Counties Herald,* so many 'cobbles, splinters of wood and other missiles were thrown into the hustings' that all four candidates were forced to seek shelter, the two Conservatives came top of the poll Trollope, with a respectable enough total of 740 votes, finished at the bottom, not overly pleased to have obtained 155 votes fewer than his partner, Maxwell. It was, however, with relief that he paid the £400 which his agent demanded as the balance of his expenses, and returned to London.

But if Trollope then congratulated himself on the fact that he had finished with Beverley he was soon to be disabused. To his surprise, and the surprise of many who had long bewailed the apparent indifference of the burgesses to the corruption which had sullied its elections, there was a petition from the town. Sir Henry Edwards and Captain Kennard were the respondents The judge who presided over the case in March 1869 discovered that during the election under review over a hundred people had offered or taken bribes of one sort or another, indeed that the Conservatives had openly boasted that any amount of money would be used to ensure success. It was not, therefore, remarkable that the first consequence of the hearing was the voiding of the election, the second a decision to appoint a Royal Commission to investigate the history and extent of corrupt practices in Beverley.

The Commission, faced with incontrovertible evidence of long-standing electoral corruption in the town — it was shown, for example, an account book for the 1807 election which revealed that of 1,010 electors voting for one candidate only seventy-eight had taken no money for doing so — came to the conclusion, as Trollope was to write, that elections in Beverley were no more than contests 'of the parties amongst themselves as to which shall make most money' It upheld the voiding, at the same time unreservedly accepting Trollope's statement that if any of his money had been used to corrupt electors it had been without his knowledge or instruction But, not surprisingly, students of affairs found it decidedly odd that when Sir Henry Edwards was subsequently tried for bribery, he was acquitted. Finally Beverley, which had sent representatives to Parliament since 1295, was ruled by the Commission to be unfit to do so, and in 1870 was disfranchised, an outcome which did much to console Trollope for the disappointment of defeat.

'It may be', he wrote in his autobiography, 'that Beverley might have been brought to political confusion and Sir Henry Edwards relegated to private life without the expenditure of my hard earned money, and without that fortnight of misery, but . . I did flatter myself that I had

done some good It had seemed to me that nothing could be worse, nothing more unpatriotic, nothing more absolutely opposed to the system of representative government than the time-honoured practices of the borough of Beverley To have assisted in putting and end to this, even in one town, was to a certain extent a satisfaction'

Yet for Trollope that was still not enough The bitter memories of his experiences as a Parliamentary candidate did not easily leave him Such, at least, is the impression to be gained from a reading of his novel, *Ralph the Heir* Written mostly in 1869 and published serially in 1870/71, it was in this book — deemed by him to be one of the worst he had ever written — that Trollope took his revenge on Beverley In its detailed account of Sir Thomas Underwood's candidature at Percycross the book contains descriptions of electioneering which, according to *The Times* of 17th April 1871, could have been written by 'no man alive now that Charles Dickens has departed' But although it is true that Percycross and Beverley were, as Trollope affirmed, 'of course, one and the same place', Sir Thomas differed from Trollope in being a Conservative and former MP who had held office as Solicitor-General

Nevertheless, his main function in the novel was to portray all that Trollope thought and felt and did in Beverley Thus he, like Trollope, was forced to enter into close association with an agent and supporters for whom he had neither liking nor respect, to put up with the necessity of canvassing, an activity of which Trollope, in *The Duke's Children,* was to write that 'nothing more disagreeable, more squalid, more revolting to the senses, more opposed to personal dignity' could be conceived, to accept that his own supporters were as indifferent as his opponents to the standards of electoral purity; to mount the hustings on the last day of the contest in a vain attempt, amid a shower of stones and other missiles, to address a noisy and drunken crowd; and finally, the election over, to shake 'off from his feet the dust of that most iniquitous borough'

The resemblances are unmistakable For although Sir Thomas and his fellow candidate, Griffenbottom, were elected and then unseated on petition, both were cleared of electoral turpitude — in Sir Thomas's case justifiably, in Griffenbottom's not Moreover, the evidence of corruption in Percycross was such that the borough, like Beverley, was ultimately disfranchised

As for Trollope, disappointed as he was and, despite his disagreeable fortnight of campaigning. even prepared for a spell to contemplate another attempt to enter the House of Commons, he resumed his briefly interrupted career as a writer. In the fourteen years that remained to him he produced forty books He 'lived long enough to see .' as Asa Briggs has written, 'the second Reform Bill of 1867 and the Ballot Act of 1872, but not long enough to witness the clearing up of the electoral system, the emergence of a national press or the growth of powerful party organisations which redesigned political machinery and forced new issues into the open'

ANOTHER MODEST PROPOSAL (After Dean Swift)

by John Elsom

THE proposal to privatise the Armed Services did not surface in the Conservative Party Conference at Brighton last September, but this should not be taken as proof positive that it is already on Mrs Thatcher's secret agenda

The Conservative Conference only deals with matters which, according to the faithful, are beyond debate There may still be pockets of dissent within the cabinet for so radical a measure No Minister, moreover, would wish to launch the scheme at a Conference without consulting the City in advance It could damage national morale if the Royal Navy were floated on the Stock Exchange and, with inadequate marketing, sank

Furthermore, Mrs Thatcher has several kinds of secret agendas, some only known to the leaders of the opposition, some exclusive to the columns of *The Guardian,* and most of them are so secret that they have not even been divulged to Mrs Thatcher herself This particular part of Mrs Thatcher's secret agenda is exclusively known to me, and if someone objects that there is no proof that the thought has even crossed Mrs Thatcher's mind, let me proudly counter by stating that here, if nowhere else in British public life, secrecy has stayed intact It is to all intents and purposes my proposal, which is why I am entitled to be modest about it.

It is one, however, which is very much in line with the government's general thrust and reasoning, as I understand it I can claim no originality for the ideology, only for its logical extension into the Defence of the Realm That is as far as my modesty extends

The government, of course, has already taken steps in this direction The decision to privatise dockyards and other back-up services to the army, navy and air force is part of their policy to liberalise trade and reduce the burden on the taxpayer Can one, in fact, distinguish hardware and software in this industry, without degenerating to mere moralising? Are not the men who make the tanks making as notable a contribution to the public good as those who drive them? That at any rate is what we are told in times of war British manufacturers have always made a valuable contribution to the international arms trade in the past The government will not, however, want to feather-bed the makers of machine guns by offering any kind of cosy relationship between our armed services and local industrialists The weapons which our lads use must be the best available, and most cost-effective, on the international market, which is why if the United States can make Trident, then, dammit, we should have Trident.

And so our armed services are already partly privatised My proposal is that we should go the whole hog Instead of just selling arms abroad, we should sell regiments and platoons as well, and take advantage of the commercial opportunities provided by quite lucrative battles, preferably outside Europe

Neither we nor the EEC should be protectionist in this matter Saudi Arabia has been a good customer to British arms manufacturers in the past; and they have paid for Sandhurst trained officers There are many other governments around the world who would be delighted to pay for crack British regiments to quell philosophy departments in local universities and other areas of civil unrest. If the UN wants some tommies for a peace-keeping mission in the Middle East, then it should buy them at an economic rate, instead of looking to the British taxpayer for subsidies The same argument applies to NATO Some NATO countries have political difficulties in raising their military quota They should be allowed to buy from their trading partners those forces which they are unable to supply themselves It is a matter of freedom and choice

In the wake of the Falklands War, when our forces were held in such high esteem around the world, we could have entered into a period of military boom, solving our unemployment problem and our balance of payments difficulties at a stroke, and also reducing income tax to levels beyond Mr Lawson's wildest dreams Our generals could command much higher fees on the international market than they could do at home Furthermore, it would solve many of our social problems Since it is the poor who are most attracted to military service, which offers a better quality (if not quantity) of life than Toxteth or Brixton, *and* travel to exotic locations, we may assume that it would be the louts who hang around street corners who would most benefit from such an expansion of trade. Rioting British football fans demonstrate the spirit of our people to enter into the *joie d'esprit* of war

There is also the question of cost-effectiveness. In an area of human activity where competition could be regarded as a *sine qua non,* there have been in fact remarkably few occasions recently where our forces have actually competed. Northern Ireland can be discounted in this respect, for there we are not actually at war Nor have we had a good scrap in Europe for more than forty years, during which time we have had very little opportunity to test the efficiency and readiness of our troops NATO exercises with blue and red flares are simply not good enough. British taxpayers need to be assured that our soldiers are not growing fat at their expense Those with a sense of history may remember how remarkably useful the Spanish civil war was in testing the capacity of the Axis powers, and how we in Britain failed to take advantage of it, thus leading to a critical unreadiness in 1939

What we need are a lot of little wars to keep our armed services in trim, and since we cannot always rely upon the Foreign Office to supply them, we have to look to the international market where there are usually a few profitable conflicts where manpower and weapons can be tested and the dead wood cut away by being, in fact, provably dead This brings me to the nub of my argument For too long the armed services have been held back by the bureaucracy and timidity of central government

This is not a new problem, nor one confined to Britain It is a widely held view in the United States that if General MacArthur had been given

a free hand in Vietnam, when he requested it, President Nixon would not have been forced to an ignominious peace treaty More recently, if the American industrialists backing the Contra rebels in Nicaragua had been able to supply forces, bought on the open market, then the Sandinistas would not now be precariously in power The Bay of Pigs operation might have ended differently We could even extend this argument to peace-keeping in general In the United States, the failure of the state and federal forces for law-and-order actually to maintain law and order has long been recognised, which is why privately run vigilante groups provide such a valuable back-up service, *at no cost to the taxpayer.* If people want their homes to be protected, then in the United States you can pay for that protection, privately, with not too many bureaucratic restrictions on guns

Let's face it, governments have to keep their hands clean and their noses wiped, or give the appearance of doing so; and you can't run any kind of business like that, not in the real world In the real world, as we all know, attack is often the best form of defence Take out the opposition before they can take out you But governments have to pretend for diplomatic reasons that they are not the aggressors, which is why we have to label military spending 'defence' We all know the political embarrassment caused to George Bush, Colonel Oliver North and others when they tried to provide some practical support for the Contras, without alerting the troublemakers in the Congress or the Senate, or, in Britain, the kind of questions which Tam Dalyell MP keeps asking the Prime Minister about the sinking of the *General Belgrano* There is no place in war or business for constitutional niceties, which is why our armed services should be taken out of the hands of politicians altogether

My proposal is therefore simple We should, as a first stage, endeavour to sell off the armed forces intact, as perhaps British Military Services Inc., which should attract capital from all over the world If one flotation is insufficient, then we could split up the forces, and sell them in lots, dealing with specialist interests In the longer term, we can encourage smaller armies to develop, providing competition to the main force, much as Mercury provides competition for British Telecommunications

Of course, one can foresee the objections which might be raised in Britain through what are sometimes dubbed our opposition parties. What would happen if the privatised armies, navies and airforces acted in a manner detrimental to the good of the British people, such as invading Jersey on behalf of the People's Republic of China? The government has fortunately demonstrated in other spheres how it can cope with such emergencies In privatising television, it has appointed Lord Rees-Mogg, the conscience of the Tory Party, to monitor standards Lord Rees-Mogg is a man of infinite capacity I do not see any standards Lord Rees-Mogg is a man of infinite capacity I do not see any reason why if he can handle the BBC, the Arts Council, a column in *The Independent,* an antiquarian bookshop and the Broadcasting Standards Council, he should not also be able to monitor standards concerning the

armed forces as well If it is objected that he could not enforce these standards, without hiring an army of his own, then let us recognise that the same problem arises in his monitoring of the standards of satellite television as well

But there are, of course, more fundamental ways of keeping British Military Services Inc in check, namely, by knowing those who will pay for them An advanced, modern army like ours will not be cheap to hire It will only be bought by those with substantial assets, and those are, by and large, pro-West and very much pro-Mrs Thatcher There is no danger that any tinpot country or banana republic will be able to afford our soldiers If we really believe in the ability of market forces to reflect popular opinion, and to bring about an essential fairness and breadth of support in society, then this should also be reflected in military matters Why should we pretend to trust a market economy if the laws of supply and demand can be overthrown at the whim of a government, backed by a nationalised army?

My last point is almost too obvious to mention If we still believe that the armed services are there to defend something as intangible as a British Way of Life, that they are there to serve the whole community and not just parts of it, that they are there to protect freedom, justice and politicians speaking their minds, then we are straying towards the heresy that there are some social values which cannot be expressed through the market economy That would cast into doubt other areas of the government's privatisation programme, such as the privatisation of water, energy and the means of communication

In the past, liberals and left-wingers have put forward the view that there are some services of such fundamental importance to society that they cannot be allowed to fall into private hands, but must be responsible to parliament and the government of the day Mrs Thatcher has vigorously demonstrated the feebleness of that argument These services have to be paid for, like anything else, and by paying for them through taxation, the individual loses the capacity to specify whether he or she actually wants water, energy, freedom of expression and so on He might prefer gin and laziness By privatising the armed forces, Mrs Thatcher would be rolling back the frontiers of government, and the duties and responsibilities that go with government, to the point of no return

It is a challenge from which she surely cannot shrink Armed bureaucracy is the corset which keeps our appetites in check. But appetites are the motive force behind the market economy Why should we check the evolutionary drives which ensure the survival of the fittest and the weeding out of the second rate? It is against nature

Literary Supplement

THE YEARS THAT MADE A DISTINGUISHED PRIME MINISTER

Macmillan 1891-1956 Vol I of the Official Biography Alistair Horne Macmillan £16 95

If any reader wishes to understand the two World Wars as they affected a highly sensitive man who later became Prime Minister, this will be a most revealing and exciting book, well researched and written The reason is partly because I have reviewed in this Journal most of the relevant books, Martin Gilbert's Churchill, Rhodes James' Eden, Anthony Howard's Butler, John Charmley's Duff-Cooper and Lord Lloyd, and other biographies of Attlee, Baldwin, MacDonald and Morrison But partly also because I lived through this period, joined Macmillan's young parliamentary group in 1933-35, visited Birch Grove, his Sussex home with him, then went many times to the Council of Europe at Strasbourg when he was a pioneer in the Tory party, *along with Churchill* In this book Macmillan spans the whole period 1914-1956, told for the first time by a trusted biographer

Harold Macmillan was the *grandson* (not son) of a Scottish crofter on Arran (off Ayrshire) but born in Cadogan Square and for many years had a country house called Birch Grove in Sussex He also had a domineering American mother, called Nellie, whom he adored and who was very ambitious for *him*, although she had other able sons She saw that he went to all the right schools, Summerfields, Eton and Oxford, where he won a scholarship to Balliol and *A First Class in Classics* Came the 1914 war Nellie saw that he was soon in the Grenadiers as 2nd Lieutenant, and after a minimum of home drill he was in the thick of fighting and was badly wounded and won the Military Cross To any one who served in that War, as I did later in 1917 at Ypres, it is clear that Macmillan was a most courageous officer and took a deep interest in his men, not the first to learn, from censoring their letters home, how the poor lived and what they suffered in war

His own childhood had been happy and he was always a voracious reader and had finished before the War, not only Jane Austen and Trollope, but George Eliot, Thackeray, Scott and Dickens, while his firm of Macmillan was publishing Hardy and Kipling One side of him always the classical and literary Harold, the other deeply political, one almost class conscious with a superior tone, especially in speech and carriage, the other a care-free, left-wing rebel

It is to Alistair Horne's credit that he shows us the two sides of Harold Macmillan, because some actions need to be explained by these earlier years to produce the Super Mac and premier Before that his distinguished record in World War II, his conduct at Suez, his relations with Eden and Butler, from a Tory not trusted in 1930 to a successful Prime Minister in 1956 Why was he distrusted in the thirties and how and why did his fortune change in 1940?

I am now sure that the chief answer is *Winston Churchill, He* gave Macmillan his *first* job and with occasional advice Macmillan did the rest Everything else depended on Munich Eden was perfectly happy as Foreign Secretary Butler (pro-Munich) was happy with a big Education Act Macmillan was soon

sent by Churchill to Algiers as Minister Resident and reported back to *him* and not to the Foreign Office (Eden) So three potential prime ministers were given their chance I will not minimise the effect of Butler's reforms at Tory Central Office, especially on the *home front,* but I learned from this book what Algiers did for Macmillan One chapter is called *Viceroy of the Mediterranean* (July 1943-July 1944)

It would seem certain that Macmillan played a big part in bringing together two French Generals, then De Gaulle and Churchill and most important Churchill and Roosevelt, because they all had strong views and often differed with difficulty

Behind the scenes, once Macmillan had gained Eisenhower's trust and therefore the co-operation of Robert Murphy (Eisenhower's man in Algiers) he was able to report good news to his chief (Winston) None of this pleased Eden After Macmillan had attended the *Cairo Conference,* he himself gained new confidence in himself and it was recognised by Churchill and Eisenhower It is widely thought that it was Churchill, by his flying visit to Athens to embrace Archbishop Damaskinos as leader saved Greece Admittedly this courageous journey at Christmas 1944 crowned the settlement of the conflict But Macmillan played a brave and leading part, showing considerable diplomatic gifts *before Churchill's plane arrived,* his accomplices were the Ambassador Rex Leeper and General Scobie

Macmillan returned to London with an inner confidence and a considerable knowledge of foreign and world affairs He had met his old friend General Alexander, Vyshinsky from Russia and Togliatti from Italy *(both leading world communists)* Certainly at this point he looked like a future Prime Minister for the first time The *Pre-Mac* could at last become the *Super-Mac*

Of course he had to change his ways, but he learned a lot in *Opposition,* when Wilson was Prime Minister This practical experience in foreign affairs, and in the House of Commons afterwards and always with Churchill and his marvellous Private Secretary John Wyndham combined to produce a Prime Minister of great distinction (Vol 2 will follow shortly)

KENNETH LINDSAY

SHAKESPEARE THE POET AND DRAMATIST

The Life and Times of William Shakespeare Peter Levi Macmillan £16 95

Peter Levi is Oxford Professor of Poetry and a distinguished poet He is a former Jesuit priest which equips him well to assess the theology or lack of it in Shakespeare 'The views I shall express' he tells us modestly 'about history, economic history, theatrical and social history, are taken from standard works' They will serve their purpose for most of us, but on matters poetical and dramatic we listen to him with special deference

A few quotations will give us an idea of the flavour 'It is extremely important that he was a poet before he was a dramatist', 'The crown is to him a magical thing, enchanting or enchanted', Nevertheless 'Edward VI is a saint and an eloquent one but almost hysterically weak in his extraordinary monologue' This drove me back to the monologue in question whose surprising beauty is no doubt well-known to readers Levi says of courts in general 'he loathes these people and in his plays he dooms them' 'Had he died of plague in 1603 or been hanged after the Essex rebellion, he would still be the greatest poet of all times'

Shakespeare wrote Hamlet during his serious crisis in which Essex provided a real threat to the throne But, in Levi's view Hamlet himself is more like 'undecided Brutus than dithering hysterical Essex' Rather surprisingly, he is a tremendous admirer of *The Tempest*. *'The Tempest* is his last play, and most of its means are simple, but is someone called it his greatest and most memorable work, I would be tempted not to disagree What makes it so is its elements and then its conclusion, its abdication of magical powers and perfect manipulations, and the freedom of Ariel' A little to my disappointment, Peter Levi does not provide us with a series of conclusions He no doubt feels that he has enabled us to draw our own

I venture to question only one of the Professor's appreciations though it is an important one He lays much stress on Shakespeare's devotion to his family 'The view of love that he constantly expressed emphasises faithfulness in love as the greatest good My impression is that Shakespeare thought of human love with the same mystical intensity as John of the Cross thought of the love of God'. Strong language indeed He does not underestimate the profundity of his friendship with Southampton to whom the immortal Sonnets are addressed, but he seems to say that sexual intimacy did not take place If he does not take The Dark Lady very seriously 'The Dark Lady Sonnets might still contain phantasy intended only for the entertainment of Southampton, since Elizabethan poetry admits of voyeurism But Levi is all too well aware that when Shakespeare came to write his Will, he could only add between the lines 'I give unto my wife my second-best bed with the furniture' Levi seeks to discount 'the crazy speculation' that has been raised on this small foundation He explains that one of his daughters and his son-in-law would be looking after his wife 'as they were uniquely fitted to do' If one expresses the hope that if Shakespeare is to be presented as a 'good husband' towards a wife who he originally rendered pregnant when he was about seventeen, we shall be given stronger arguments in a later volume But taking the book as a whole, one can only congratulate the author on behalf of the general reader and hope that the experts, a fastidious tribe, will be equally satisfied The mystery of how this ordinary-seeming man came to write the plays of such extraordinary genius will continue to defy them

FRANK LONGFORD

CRITICAL ESSAYS ON SYLVIA PLATH

Sylvia Plath: the Critical Heritage Edited by Linda W Wagner Routledge £35 00

Linda W Wagner, the most recent of Sylvia Plath's biographers, has compiled a useful and illuminating volume of reviews and essays on the work of the poet It includes the views of major English and American critics who were Plath's contemporaries, there are two notices of her novel, *The Bell Jar*, one by Laurence Lerner who discerns in the writing of the pseudonymous Victoria Lucas 'an almost poetic delicacy of perception' Critics whose reviews are reprinted include Bernard Bergonzi, John Wain, A. Alvarez, Roy Fuller, Stephen Spender, Lorna Sage and Roger Scruton the last named of these writers exhibits a curious antagonism to images which he finds he cannot immediately classify, even whilst acknowledging Plath's technical skill The book is a well arranged succession of pieces with the date and source of each essay clearly given

The reader may, therefore, view chronologically the progress of 'the Plath legend' from the time when, after the appearance in 1960 of *The Colossus and Other Poems*, she was receiving almost sensational critical acclaim Three short years later she committed suicide A E Dyson in *Critical Quarterly*, Summer 1961, seems thus early to have recognised a disequilibrium in her tone and he sounds a warning note concerning 'the quality of menace' in the poem entitled 'Mushrooms' He speaks of its 'macabrely ironic vision' and says that the affinity which Sylvia Plath feels with the dead and the alien 'is not unlike a type of pity a conviction of kinship with everything that lives or has lived, however inaccessible or sinister' Her personal tragedy, foreshadowed in the poems, had perhaps been precipitated though not precisely caused by her estrangement from her husband, Ted Hughes

Ted Hughes published posthumously the volume *Ariel* which she had collected before her death he included a dozen of the poems written much later than those she had meant to put in These have the effect of slightly obscuring the temporal changes in her poetic technique Linda Wagner points out that her poetic development is now clear since the publication in 1981 by Harper and Row of *The Collected Poems* which gives the dating and arrangement of her work as she herself intended it That and other books published from 1965 onwards by her former husband provide the canon and make possible a full appreciation of her distinctive, though lonely, poetic voice The gathering together of so many assessments by eminent critics will be welcomed by all readers of Sylvia Plath's poetry

BETTY ABEL

THE NEUROTIC AS COMPOSER

Tchaikovsky — A Biography Alan Kendall The Bodley Head £15 00

This biography of Tchaikovsky is the first one to make use of Alexandra Orlova's discovery about the famous composer's death When she emigrated from Russia in 1979 she smuggled out a suppressed collection of his letters to relatives, *Prisma k rodnim*, which had been secretly kept for over forty years In addition Alexandra Orlova, who had worked in the Tchaikovsky Museum in Klin, wrote an article which was published in *Music and Letters* (vol LXII) in 1981 In this she described what has become accepted as the true account of Tchaikovsky's death, his suicide in accordance with the decision of a 'court of honour'

Alan Kendall has made full use of all the new information brought to the West by Mrs Orlova. He is a professional biographer and previous books include lives of Vivaldi, Britten, Beethoven, Gershwin, Paganini and Boulanger The author is also General Editor of *The Heritage of Music*, a four volume history of Western music to be published by Oxford University Press

The picture that emerges in this biography is of a highly neurotic man whose excessive sensitivity brought him considerable agony in his private life Tchaikovsky, whose music, especially his ballet scores, has made him perhaps the most popular composer in the civilised world, was torn by personal, family and musical difficulties He often longed to get out of Russia in order to visit Europe (which did not include England, a country he distinctly disliked) Yet once he was in Europe he longed for Russia with its distinctive language, literature and religion. His creative genius blossomed as part of what must be

one of the most rich cultural explosions in any country's history in fiction, music, poetry, and drama Russian artists were changing the cultural landscape A distinctively Russian style was being created (It is partly because of this that Soviet authorities have tried to keep secret the great composer's private life, especially his homosexuality)

Ironically it was Tchaikovsky's love of Russia which made his tragic end possible He could have fled in a self-imposed exile, to live in Paris with the Grand Dukes who made the French capital their second home Instead he chose what Mme Orlova and Mr Kendall see as suicide after a nobleman wrote to the Tsar to charge that Tchaikovsky had seduced his nephew The composer's emotional life — his unhappy marriage and frustrated loves — are here recounted in a fresh and direct style Tchaikovsky's genius, born amidst this unhappiness, lives in his music One wonders if it could have been otherwise

JAMES MUNSON

THE TURIN SHROUD

The Shroud Unmasked David Sox The Lamp Press £2 95

David Sox is an American Anglican Priest living in London who has previously written books on the subject of the Holy Shroud of Turin This book is a Pocket Paperback which has quickly followed the carbon dating of the material of the Shroud, and is a dramatic account of that testing by a number of laboratories simultaneously For centuries some had regarded this relic as Our Lord's Shroud and have resisted scientific testing The linen now has been shown to be of the fourteenth century It was in 1898 that photography revealed the designs on the linen as vivid and accurate anatomically Details appeared to confirm accounts in the Gospel of the crucifixion And so began ninety years of study until the present day Some of the earlier scientific tests supported the tradition that the Shroud could be as early as 30 A D Before 1350 there is no historical evidence for it and attempts were made to explain the gap between the First and Fourteenth centuries

Historically some have regarded the Shroud as a 'cunningly painted cloth' executed by one as skilled as Leonardo da Vinci It is difficult to fathom therefore why the subtitle of this book is 'Uncovering the Greatest Forgery of All Time' The word forgery suggests duplicity and an intention to deceive Some fourteenth century evidence calls it a 'likeness or representation' and this would seem to be an entirely legitimate purpose For devotional reasons the representation has been imposed on linen the size of an altar cloth

There is no doubt that the Shroud is an extraordinary object and the problem is not completely solved It is the linen that has been dated and not the representation It is argued that the stains could not have been a painting and it is now for art experts to comment

The book will keep interest alive in the subject It has some good pictures, and notes and references for further study

LAURENCE TANNER

SHORTER REVIEWS

The Experience of World War I. (Macmillan £17 95) This is a superbly produced volume in large format of over 250 pages, and containing some 300 illustrations, many in colour, together with maps and plans The main object of this study produced by Dr J M Winter is to show the vast scale and consequences of the 1914-18 conflict in which out of 70 million men in uniform about nine million were killed and countless others suffered Dr Winter's method has been to consider separately though clearly interlinked four groups involved They are politicians, generals, soldiers and civilians

These groups are considered in four phases of the war The phases dealt with quite separately are 'first the war of illusions of 1914, second, the war of stalemate and stagnation of 1915, third, the war of the great slaughter of 1916-17, and fourth, the re-emergence of social conflict and revolution in 1917-18, which precipitated the Armistice on 11 November 1918 ' Dr Winter acknowledges that 'the reality of the war was much more fluid than may appear here — the war was so vast that all attempts to contain any single or simple explanatory framework are bound to fail' On the other hand there has to be a plan encompassing the vast scope of the subject Dr Winter can fairly claim that his book has achieved its purpose 'in suggesting some of the dimensions of the catastrophe, and some of its enduring consequences' Indeed it is a work essential for any student of the subject to use It will also find a wide readership among the general public.

The Dickens Index (Oxford University Press £40) This is a remarkable volume of 5,000 entries covering a vast amount of material in alphabetical order, relating to almost everything Dickensian The editors are Michael Slater, Nina Burgis and the late Nicolas Bentley The whole project was the latter's inspiration He had collected for publication a great deal of material, but unhappily he died in 1978 Fortunately he had already in 1976 brought in Dr Slater as joint editor. The scope of the Index is indicated by the entries They cover 'all named fictional characters, plots, themes and unique features of the novels, topical and historical references, all places and institutions mentioned in his works, quotations from the Bible, literature and song, obsolete words and phrases, dialect and slang, allusions to myth, folklore and legend, other writers quoted by Dickens, his publishers and illustrators, periodicals edited and contributed by Dickens' There is also a useful Time Chart of Dickens' life and career against the background of the period The enormous scope of the volume inevitably makes some entries shorter than the reader would wish, nonetheless an invaluable work

The Making of the English Bible (Carcanet £6 95) It is good to have a paperback edition of this scholarly work by Gerald Hammond He is concerned mainly with the early editions of the English bible, from the Reformation Bible, Coverdale and

Tyndale, through the various translations to the James I Authorised Version itself, based upon earlier translations These include the Geneva Bible, the Bishops Bible, and the Catholic Bible The author lays particular stress upon the importance of the Puritan Geneva Bible and its major part in the translation of the Authorised version Apart from being the most popular version for generations from the second half of the sixteenth century, it was a work of profound scholarship 'The main achievement of the Geneva Bible lay in its translating from the original, for the first time in English, the major poetic books of the Bible' A large part of Gerald Hammond's study is devoted to comparisons between translation from the Hebrew of passages taken from the Old Testament The specialist should find this study of particular interest

Falling for a Dolphin (Jonathan Cape £4 95) Heathcote Williams has followed his widely acclaimed *Whale Nation* in verse with this short and delightful account of meeting deliberately a dolphin, about half a ton in weight Off the West coast of Ireland a hermit dolphin was reputed to be living Heathcote Williams ventured into the Atlantic to meet it. In fact it first met Heathcote Williams and there followed a very friendly and playful relationship They both seemed to understand each other and eventually the dolphin gently laid him on a rock and then swam out to sea Heathcote Williams was greatly moved and almost immediately he described in verse their meeting and the feelings which it evoked The verse is a joy to read, bringing out the physical and emotional relationship which the incident engendered

a long the riverrun (Hamish Hamilton £13 95) A selection of some of the best of Richard Ellmann's critical essays on modern British and American writers has been made posthumously by his publishers, who do not name an editor The comprehensive preface is unsigned but in it the assistance of his wife and two daughters is acknowledged, as well as the editorial help in presentation and arrangement of Catharine Carver The title echoes the first words and the last of James Joyce's *Finnegan's Wake,* appropriately enough because Ellmann's biography of Joyce (1958) is widely regarded as one of the masterpieces of literary biography The last of his three superb biographies, that of Oscar Wilde, was published to universal acclaim soon after Ellmann's death in 1987 The new volume of essays, some of them only published here, contains a rich representation of Ellmann's pieces on most of the major modern writers, notably on Henry James, D H Lawrence, George Eliot and T S Eliot (*Middlemarch* and *The Waste Land*), Auden, Pound and Freud It is a valuable collection

HALF YEAR INDEX— JULY-DECEMBER 1988

VOLUME 253

LS — Literary Supplement

ABEL, Betty LS 53, 110, 221, 331

ABRAHAM, Antoine J Lebanon is not Bulgaria, 309

ARONSFELD, C C International and Racially Pure — Japan's Theory and Practice, 252

BAYER, J A Is There Life After NATO?, 303

BEASLEY, Mary (with Rev David McGough) From Addiction to Liberation, 138

BIGGS-DAVISON, Sir John, M P LS 49, 162, 274

BLACK, Jan Knippers Panama in Crisis, 72

BOHLMANN, Joachim Two English Poets in East Europe, 154

BRAILSFORD, Guy Fundamentalism and Western Attitudes Towards Afghanistan, 113

BRUCE, Donald Williams The Reluctant Countryman Robert Herrick, 256

CALOGERO, Francesco Military Aspects of 'Common Security' in Europe, 300

CAMPBELL, Mike (with Nigel Healey) Action for Cities, 18

CORRESPONDENCE 44, 159

DYER, Emma Edinburgh Festival Fringe 1988, 270

ELSOM, John Ruffians in Robes, 100 Bulgaria, 205 Another Modest Proposal (After Dean Swift), 325

GILENSON, Boris Two English Poets in East Europe, 154

GREEN, Laurence Edinburgh Festival — 1988, 213

HARRIGAN, Anthony Imprinting on the Mind, 248

HARTOG, Dilys Summerscope on the South Bank, 266

HARVEY, A D Wordsworth the Tax Collector, 151 Into the Future with the Black Economy, 295

HEALEY, Nigel (with Mike Campbell) Action for Cities, 18 Is the International Debt Crisis Over?, 188

HOOK, Andrew Hong Kong Discourse, 63

HONAN, Park The New Sound of British Lyric Poetry Kathleen Norcross, David Hopkinson, Simon Curtis, 39

HUTCHINSON, Frances The Midas Touch, 80

JOHNSON, Peter The Future of Neutrality, 194

JULIUS, Muriel Talent to Please—The Phillips Collection, 95

LARRABEE, Stephen 'Rollback' in East Europe, 281

LINDSAY, Kenneth LS 107, 329

LONGFORD, Frank: LS 105, 273, 330

LORAINE, John A LS 161

McCAULEY, Martin Glasnost in Eastern Europe, 57

MacDONALD, P G The World of Television, 28

McGOUGH, David (with Mary Beasley) From Addiction to Liberation, 138

McLACHLAN, Hugh V The Alton Abortion Bill, 23 Official Secrets and the Ethics of Promise-Making, 200

MORRELL, Roy LS 165

MORRIS, Patricia A View of Angola, 178

MULLEN, Richard LS 109, 163, 276

MUNSON, James LS 51, 166, 332

MURAY, Leo The Soviets in Turmoil, 132 LS 222

NEEDLER, Martin The Next President of Mexico, 241

OLAJIDE, Fashola The Mandate of Francois Mitterand in Africa, 183

OLIVER, John A Ulster Tragedy Dragging on Too Long, 67

PARROTT, Alec L Grasp the Social Security Nettle, 126

POWELL, Melanie Licence Reform Less Regulation, More Individual Restraint, 243

ROSE, Paul The French Connection, 75

SALLOUM, Habeeb The Return of Islam to Andalusia, 14

SAWHNY, Karan The New Afghan Military Balance, 232

SHLAIM, Avi Britain and the Birth of Israel, 7

SHIELDS, James G France Civil Liberties on the Agenda, 1

SHIPMAN, David The Cinema, a Quarterly Review, 35, 209

SHORTER REVIEWS 56, 111, 167, 224, 279, 334

SOLIJAN, Niksa Nikola UNESCO — A Way Out of the Crisis, 237

STONE, Robert Holy War in Latin America, 287

SUTER, Keith D Australian Aborigines the Struggle Continues, 169

TANNER, Laurence LS 107, 108, 162, 333 Israel and its Territories, 120

THIEN, Nghiem Xuan Will the Vietnamese Starve?, 317

THOMAS, David Background to the Presidential Campaign 1988, 225

TIBBS, Molly LS 52, 109, 278

WADE, Rosalind Quarterly Fiction Review, 45, 217 LS 223

WHITTINGTON-EGAN, Richard LS 51, 55 The Ripper Report 84

WISEMAN, John A The Far Right in South Africa, 145

WOODALL, Robert Anthony Trollope and the Beverley Election, 320

WRIGHT, Esmond LS 50, 54, 275

The Academy of Children's Writers Ltd.

WRITE A STORY FOR CHILDREN COMPETITION

We are currently promoting our special Competition, **Write a Story for Children** which is open to all amateur writers There are cash prizes of £250 for the best story submitted, £100 for second place, £50 for third place and £20 each for the 10 runners up

The Academy of Children's Writers, Competition Entry,
3 Regal Lane, Soham, Ely, Cambs CB7 5BA

FIRST TIME

A BI-ANNUAL MAGAZINE DESIGNED TO ENCOURAGE FIRST TIME POETS

Poems are invited for the 16th issue of the twice yearly publication 'FIRST TIME' being the publication of the **H.N.N.P.S., Burdett Cottage, 4 Burdett Place, George Street, Old Town, Hastings, East Sussex. TN34 3ED.** Full particulars on request

COUNTRY HOMES

For the "feel" of living elegantly in an English Country Home a civilised, traditional way of life which you can share Mike Stone's new pocket-sized COUNTRY HOMES GUIDE lists 53 homes where you will be welcomed by the family

For a complimentary copy, *and* current issues of our other three useful Guides (Guestaccom Good Room Guide, Exec Hotels Good Hotel Guide and Top Hotels directory) send 6 International Reply Coupons (Post Office) or equivalent of £2 in your currency NOTES for postage and packing to

Ambleshire Ltd, Claremont House, Second Avenue, Hove, East Sussex, England BN3 2LL.

ORDER FORM

To **The Subscription Manager,**

Contemporary Review Co. Ltd., 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG

I enclose herewith my cheque for , for a year's subscription

[For rates, see inside front cover]

Name

Address

Literary Criticism Series

- *Children's Literature Review*
- *Classical and Medieval Literature Criticism*
- *Contemporary Literary Criticism*
- *Literature Criticism from 1400 to 1800*
- *Nineteenth-Century Literature Criticism*
- *Shakespearean Criticism*
- *Short Story Criticism*
- *Twentieth-Century Literary Criticism*

to be published during 1989-90 enquiries to

Gale Research Inc , Penobscot Building, Detroit MI 48226 USA
Telephone (313) 961-2242 Toll-free 1-800-521-0707

9 MAY 1989

THE DEPARTMENT OF BIOLOGY OF HOFSTRA UNIVERSITY and THE HOFSTRA CULTURAL CENTER

in association with

THE SOCIETY OF PROTOZOOLOGISTS

are pleased to announce

THE FIRST EASTCOAST REGIONAL MEETING OF THE SOCIETY OF PROTOZOOLOGISTS AT HOFSTRA UNIVERSITY

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY — June 1, 2, 3, 1989

For full particulars please apply to Laura J Tringone or Alexej Urgrinsky, Conference Co-ordinators, Hofstra Cultural Centre, Hempstead, New York 11550, USA Telephone (516) 560-5669

Printed by MANDEVILLE PRESS 136 Southsea Avenue, Leigh-on-Sea, Essex SS9 2BJ, and published by the CONTEMPORARY REVIEW CO LTD , 61 Carey Street, London WC2A 2JG Telephone 01-831 7791 All business matters should be addressed to the publishers